

THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT01

:) Yes It's Me, Esihle Morena. The Last Time You Heard Bout The Dark African Queen Was When She Was Still a Toddler, Asking a Lotta Questions, Bubbly And Loved Her Parents Like Noba's Business. I Still Love My Parents And Much More This Time Round, I'm Still Fond Of My Daddy Way More :) Yeah Mom And Daddy Dearest Told Me That Musa Morena Wasn't My Real Dad But Fuck That, That Hot Thang Raised Me :) Yes Dad Was Still Hot And Ohhh Mommy Too, They Were Still Taking Care Of Their Bodies And You'd Swear They Are Our Siblings. Even On Friends And Family Dinners You'd See Our Friends' Parents Drooling Over Mom Or Dad But Those Two Were a No Go Area, I Mean Literally. The Twins Were 9 Years Old (Doing Grade 4) While Vusi And I Were 16 (Doing Grade

11) .I Guess You Know That Azole The Maid Saga :v Lemme Say She Made Things Easy For Dad And Mom,She Aborted The Baby And Left I Guess She Thought Dad Was Gonna Marry Her Ass Because Of The Baby But That Bitch I Call My Mom Meant The Wedding Vows She Said To Dad And She Held Him Down Like Noba's Business.

Uncle Bonga And Aunt Amanda Finally Got Married And Were Blessed With a 5 Year Old Bubbly Baby Girl 'Ethandwa' Mom Usually Said She's The Lil Version Of Me So I Called Her Mine,She Was Just Adorable.Aunt Thando And Uncle Thabo Were Never Able To Conceive Ever Again After The Miscarriage But They Were Still Going Strong And They Were Married Too.Uncle Luvo,Aunt Soul And Uncle Danger Were Still Flying Solo And There Was No Hope That They Were Ever Gonna Find Their Special Someones.

Uncle Alex And Thabang Moved Outta Town But They Still Had a Perfect Relationship With Dad

And I Always Asked Dad What Connected Them But He Always Told Me That I'll Know When The Time Is Right.

Owky Vusi Had His Girlfriends :) Yes You Heard Me,GIRLFRIENDS.

Y'all Know He Got Dad's Looks So He Was The 'It' Thang At School And Some Girls Faked Friendships With Me Coz They Wanted Him,I On The Other Side Was Still Daddy's Single Baby Girl.I Talked Bout Anything And Everything With Dad Like Vusi Talked With Mom,That's How Flyin' Fucken Awesome Our Family Was.People Didn't Believe It When Vusi And I Tell Them That We Have Different Mothers And Even Fathers.

Okay Now Back To MY Life,As I Told You That I Was Single And I've Never Dated Before Even Though Vusi Tried To Hook Me Up With Some Of His Friends But Dating Was Just Not For Me.

So This Day Was A Saturday And Which Meant Some Family Time For Us Coz Mom And Dad

Were Not Working And It Was a Holiday So
Yeapy!

I Woke Up To My Phone Ringing And It Was a
Call From My Annoying Ass Brother

Call Convo

Me: Vusi!

Vusi: Get Your Ass Over Here Before I Eat Your
Plate For Breakfast

Dad: Swear One More Time And You'll Not Sit
On That Chair For The Whole Week Coz Your
Damn Flat Ass Will Be Hurtin' From The
Whippin' Imma Give To You

Mom: And You Swearing Too

Dad: Just Wanted To Knock Some Sense Into
Your Son's Head

Owethu: Daddy Can We Eat Now?

Vusi: You Know We Can't Eat Without 'Miss-I-
Want-The-Grand-Entrance'

Me: I Can Hear You

Vusi: That Was The Whole Point

Me: You Such A Bore You Know

Mom And Dad: GET YOUR ASS OVER HERE!

Me: I'm Coming Yho

Vusi Hung Up,I Got Up And Went To Brush My Teeth And Washed My Face Then Went To Join Everyone

Me: Morning Family

Dad: Hey Baby

Mom: And We Had To Wait For You Before We Eat

Vusi: You Love Attention You Know

Dad: Leave My Princess Alone

Me: Thanks Dad

Owethu: Ain't I The Princess?

Olwethu: Another Attention Seeker In The

Making

Mom: Hey This Is A Family Breakfast Time, Y'all
Shut Up

The Twins Prayed Then We Started Digging In

Me: So What Are We Gonna Do Today?

Owethu: We Should Go To The Movies And
Then Grab Some Ice Cream

Olwethu: B-O-R-I-N-G With Capital B

Owethu: Got Better Ideas?

Olwethu: No But Your-

Owethu: I Thought So Too

Vusi: What Ever You Gonna Do, Count Me Out

Mom: Why?

Me: Got A Date With One Of Your Thousand
Girlfriends?

Olwethu: You Gonna Have HIV I'm Tellin' You
Big Bro

Vusi: You Shut Up (Pointing At Olwethu) I'm
Just Going Out With Friends

Dad: We Were Not Gonna Go With Y'all
Anyway, Your Mom And I Are Going Somewhere

Vusi: Gonna Sleep Over?

Me: Don't Say Yes Please Please! Vusi's Just
Gonna Leave Us Alone Here

Mom: We'll Be Back First Thing In The Morning
Tomorrow

Olwethu: That's What You Always Say And Then
Arrive In The Middle Of The Night

Dad: We Are Old We Can Do What Ever We Like

Me: Can't Wait To Have That Freedom

Owethu: What Do You Two Do At These Places
You Always Go To?

Vusi: Try To Make Some Other Sisters And
Brothers For You

Me: Vusi!

Owethu: Euww

Dad: And What Do You Know Bout That Owethu?
I Hear You Saying Euww

Olwethu: We Learn A Thing Or Two At School
Dad

Mom: Can You Just Eat?

Vusi: You Gonna Die Young Ma,Chillax

Dad: And You Gonna Be That Cause Of Her
Death

Me: Can We Eat Without Talking Please,Mom's
Right

We All Went Back To Our Plates And Finished
Eating Then Mom And I Washed The Dishes
While The Others Watched T.V.We Cleaned The
House Then Mom Freshened Up And Left With
Dad,We Also Bathed And Vusi Left To Where
Ever He Was Going To.The Twins Went To Play
With Their Friends So I Was Left Alone At
Home,After An Hour Vusi Came Back

Me: Back Already? Thought You Were Gonna
Come Back With Some Cookie To Fuck Vandag

Vusi: I'm Not In The Mood For Some Bitch
Today.I'm Going To Some Hommie Of Mine
Who Just Arrived This Side For The Holidays

Me: Do I Know Him?

Vusi: Nope

Me: Ohh

Vusi: I'm Going To Pick Him At His
House,Wanna Tag Along?

Me: Is He Hot?

Vusi: Voestek!

Me: I'm For Real,Is He Hot?

Vusi: Dude I Can't Compliment Another Dude,I
Ain't Gay

Me: Did Mom Give You Her Car?

Vusi: You Know Me,Mom Can't Resist This
Pretty Face

Me: You Such a Witch.Count Me In

I Took My Leather Jacket And We Hopped In The Car And Went To Pick His Friend Up.Vusi Parked At Some Taxi Rank And Hooted,A Guy Wearing White Sneakers,Black Torn Jean With Black Printed T-shirt.He Was Hot,I Mean HOT :D Vusi Got Out And They Fist And Shoulder Bumped,The Guy Hopped At The Back

Guy: Hey Hun

Me: Hello

Guy: I See You Brought Your Mrs Witchu My Nikka

Vusi: Dude This Is My Sister

Guy: Yo Sister?

Vusi: Yes Esihle,Bbe This Is Elethu My Nikka And Dude This Is My Sis,My Twin My Munch Punch Esihle

Me: O-kay And Then Wassup Witchu?.....Nice To Know You Elethu

Elethu: Same Here,Dude Every time You Put Her On Your P.p I Thought She Was Your Mrs

Vusi: I Ain't Got Non Yet

Elethu: Don't Think You Ever Will Dude

Vusi: Nough Bout Me,How's It Going Witchu On That Side Dude?

Elethu: The Babes On Fleak,Party Life Lit And You Know I'm Up On My Game Dawg

Vusi: You Know It,Sure Thing You Gonna Do Some Shit While You Round Here

Elethu: And If I Have My Eye On Your Munch Punch?

Vusi: Then I Kill Yaw

Elethu: You So Protective Bro

Vusi: She's My Sister Nikka,I'd Chop Some Fucked Up Nikka's Balls Who'd Fuck Up Her Heart

Me: Ncoah That's So Sweet Of You Bro

Elethu: You Should Be Thankful To Have a Big Brother Like Him Hey

We Got Home And I Made Something For Us To Eat While Elethu And Vusi Did Some Catching Up,Gawd! The Dude Was So Immaculate And His Charisma Was Outta This World :) I Kept Checking Him As He Laughed And Chatted With Vusi.His Laugh Was Just Something Else

Vusi: Dude Stop Day Dreaming!

Vusi Tapped My Shoulder

Me: I Ain't Daydreaming

Vusi: I Bet Your Mom And Dad Are Getting On Ayt Now,Your Father Doesn't Waste No Time.That Nikka Hits It Every time He Gets The Chance To

Me: Like You Do Too

Vusi: He's My Father So I Have To

Me: Dad Ruined You

Vusi: Sex Is Good Sis Yho (Taking a Piece Of The Food I Was Preparing)

Me: Mxm

Vusi: But You Ain't Ready For It Yet

Me: Yeah Ayt

I Took The Plates To The Lounge And We Ate While Watching T.V.Vusi's Phone Rang And He Excused Himself,Leaving Me With That Beautifully And Hotly Made Creature

Elethu: I Didn't Know That My Nikka Had a Beautiful Sister :)

[05/17, 18:54] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT02

Me: Ohh?

Elethu: He Never Mentioned You So I Thought Maybe You Were One Of The Hoes He Fucks

Me: Ouch!

Elethu: And I Was So Jealous And Envied For Him

Me: Haha What A Waste Of Your Time And Jealousy

Elethu: I Know Hey So How Old Are You?

Me: 16 And You?

Elethu: I'm 17...Jeez You Two Are Also Agemates

Me: That's Why He Calls Me His Twin

Elethu: So Do You Have Different Mothers?

Me: We Have Different Everything

Elethu: What?? How?

Me: It's a Long Story For Another Day

Elethu: Mhm Owky Your Voice Is So Beautiful Just Like You I Wish You Could Talk All The Time

Me: Too Bad You Can't Have All Your Wishes
Coming True And Is That Compliment The Line
You Always Use To Get Girls?

Vusi: And I'm Hoping You Ain't Tryna Get Her
With Whatever Line You Were Using

Me: Me And Your Ho- Uhhhm Me And Elethu
Were Just Having a Small Conversation That
Didn't Concern You

Vusi: You And My Ho- What?

Me: Mxm,I'll Be In My Room

Elethu: Thanks For The Food

Me: Sure

Ithandile And Asithandile Got In And Looked At
Elethu

Olwethu: Didn't Know We Were Gonna Have a
Visitor

Vusi: Coz You Didn't Have To

Owethu: Is He Some Relative Or Some'ing?

Vusi: No Why?

Owethu: I See Big Sis Is Treating Him Including You Too,Is She Gonna Get Some'ing From This Or What?

Olwethu: Big Sis's In Love,Can't You See She's Blushing?

Me: I Ain't Blushing And Shutin' Your Mouthes Wouldn't Kill Anyone

Owethu: She's Really In Love,She Can't Even Swear At Us

Vusi: You Two Just Go Please Now,It Is Showing That You Ain't Done Growing Up

Owethu: And You Done?

Vusi: Don't Forget That Mom And Dad Ain't Around

Owethu: That's What Phones Were Made For

Vusi: Hehe Owethu And Your Twin Just Gerara Here

The Twins Went To Their Rooms

Elethu: Your Family's So Fuckin' Awesome Dude

Vusi: I Guess You'd Be Mind Blown If You'd See Dad In The Act Too

Elethu: Your Parents Must Adopt Me

Vusi: Trust Me You Don't Want That

I Took The Plates To The Kitchen And Rinsed Them,Vusi And Elethu Went To Vusi's Room So I Just Chilled On The Couch And Watched Movies And Kept Changing The Channels.Later On A Friend Of Mine 'Inam' Called Me

Call Convo

Me: My Bitch

Inam: Is That Thing You Call Your Brother Round?

Me: He's Even With One Hot Hella Friend Of His

Inam: Which Planet Do They Come From?

Me: Vusi Definitely Comes From Dad's Sperm

Cells And His Mother's Egg Cells But That Guy
Definitely Was Born From The Sun

Inam: Your Brother's Hot Dear Don't
Underestimate Him

Me: Mxm....The Hot Person Is The Guy He's
With

Inam: Made Any Move Yet?

Me: Am I Supposed To?

Inam: Baby Come On Guys Like That One Don't
Come Round a Lot

Me: Then He Can Pass

Inam: When Will You Ever Get Over This Guy
Phobia Of Yours?

Me: I Still Love To Love My Mended Heart You
Know

Inam: Bbe You Old Now,You Should Start Dating

Me: And Get My Heart Broken Like You Did? No
Thank You

Inam: Vusi And I Are Over That Now

Me: But You Still Love Him

Inam: That's Another Story

Me: See What I Mean? I Don't Wanna Date
Some Hot Guy Who's Gonna Leave My Ass And
My Heart Broken And I On The Other Hand Still
Love Him Like He's The Only Guy On Earth

Someone Sat Next To Me And It Was Vusi

Me: Gotta Go

Inam: I'm Gonna Come By

Me: Sure Thing

She Hung Up And I Put My Phone On The Table
And Looked At Vusi

Vusi: So Your Friend's Still Into Me?

Me: No!

Vusi: I Heard Your Conversation

Me: She Doesn't Need Another Heartbreak

Vusi: Then She Must Not Catch Feelings

Me: That's My Friend You Know

Vusi: And She's Hot,I Miss Tappin' That Ass

Me: That's Someone's Daughter And Sister

Vusi: And That's Why I'd Kill a Boy Who'd Fuck
You Up

Me: But You Fuckin' Up Other People's Sisters

Vusi: You Also Sayin' Other People's Not Mine

Me: You Crazy

Vusi: I Really Need To Have Some Talk With
Inam

Me: A Talk That Could Lead You To Your
Bedroom

Vusi: Maybe,Maybe Not

Me: Mxm

I Took The Couch Pillow And Playfully Hit
Him,He Took His And Hit Me Back

Elethu: Dude I've Been Waiting For You

Vusi: Was Just Havin A Word Or Two With Ms Morena

Elethu: So Are We Going Or What?

Vusi: Yeah We Gonna Hit The Road.Bbe (Lookin At Me) Please Make Sure That Inam Doesn't Leave Before I Arrive

Me: I Hate You For Doing This To My Friend

Vusi: You'll Understand One Day

Me: Mxm

Vusi: Leggo My Nikka

Elethu: Bye Ms Morena,It Was Great Meeting You

Me: Bye Mr Moren- Ohh Fuck Bye Mr Whatever Your Surname Is And It Was Great Meeting You Too

Vusi: Hehe She's Marryin' You Now My Nikka,Givin' You Our Last Name

Shit!

Me: Shut Up Vusi!

Elethu: I Wouldn't Mind

Vusi: O-kay That's Fucked Up,Leggo!

Elethu Smiled And Looked At Me,Jeez!

Everything Bout The Guy Seemed So
Perfect.They Walked Out

Me: Are You Ever Gonna Visit Again?! (Shoutin')

Vusi: No And Voestek!

Elethu: Don't Listen To This One,I Will

I Heard Them Getting In The Car And They Sped
Away,It Was Like Vusi Was Taking a Part Of Me
Away. Hey You Know That Feelin' You Get When
You Spend Few Hours Or Even Minutes With
Someone You Have Hots For And Then They
Leave :(I Was Feeling That Way And I Don't
Know Why I Felt Something For Elethu While I
Knew He Was Just a Fuck Boy Like Vusi.

Inam Got In Screaming

Inam: That Thang With Vusi Is Hot

Me: Told You

Inam: Why Do Hot Guys Have To Be Like That?

Me: Coz They Ain't For Us

Inam: I Know Hey

Me: Vusi Said You Should Not Leave Before He Gets Here

Inam: Told You What He Wants?

Me: No But I'm Sure He Just Wants Your Pussy Back

Inam: Why Did He Have To Be That Kinda Ass?

Me: You Still Love Him So Much Don't You?

Inam: It Doesn't Matter Coz He Doesn't

Me: I'm Sorry But I Told Y-

Inam: Yeah I Know It's Just That I Couldn't Restrain My Feelings For Him And He Seemed

So Promisin'

Me: You'll Find Your Mr Bae

Inam: I Hope He's Hotter Than Him

Me: Too Bad You Can't Find Someone Hotter Than My Bro

Inam: I Thought He Wasn't Hot In Your Eyes

Me: Of Course He Is But I Don't Like Giving Him The Satisfaction,Want Some Drink?

Inam: Yeah Where Are The Twins?

Me: In Their Room,Leggo To The Kitchen

Inam: Vusi Is Slowly Influencing You Into Becoming Him

Me: I Hope In Not Every Way There Is

Inam: Haha Of Course Not

We Went To The Kitchen And I Poured Us Some Drink And Gave Inam Her Glass While She Sat On The Kitchen Counter.Vusi Got In And Went To Stand In Front Of Inam

Vusi: My Two Favorite Ladies

Me: Mxm

Inam: Hi Vusi

Vusi: Mom's Future Daughter In Law

Inam: Mxm

Me: I'll Be In The Loung

Vusi: Sure Sure

I Finished My Drink And Rinsed The Glass Then Went To The Lounge,I Ran Outta Airtime So I Put On My Flip Flops And Walked To The Shops.It Was A Small Mall Kinda Thingy But It Had The Necessary Shops.I Took My Time When Walkin',A Car Passed Next To Me And There Were Three Guys Inside.They Looked At Me And Did Some Whistling Noise.The Car Parked In Front Of Me And One Guy Got Out With a Jacket And Hurried To Me Then Wrapped The Jacket Round My Waist

Me: And Then?

Guy: Uhhm I Couldn't Let You Walk Round Like That

I Pulled The Jacket Up And Looked At My Back And Shit! I Was On My Periods.I Felt So Embarrassed

Me: Uhhhm Yho

Guy: It's Fine,Anyway I'm Lutho

Me: Uhhhm Thanks Lutho I'm Esihle

Lutho: It's Okay,I Couldn't Let A Beautiful Lady Like You Feel Embarrassed Coz Of Something Like This I Know How Sensitive Y'all Girls Are Bout This Kinda Thing

Me: Are You Sure You're A Guy?

Lutho: Of Course I Am

His Friend: Dude We Gonna Be Late

Lutho: Okay I'm Coming

Me: Your Jacket

Lutho: Gimme Your Number So That I Can Call

You When I'm By This Side

Me: My Number?

Lutho: Yeap

Me: Can't We Leave Our Next Meeting In The Hands Of Fate?

Lutho: Haha C'mon That Bitch You Call Fate Takes Time,She Can Make Sure That We Meet 30 Years From Now

Me: At Least She'd Make Sure That We Meet

Lutho: Haha I Like You Already...Look Here Take My Number Then You Can Call Me When You've Decided That You Don't Want Us To Meet Again Coz Of Fate 076*****

Me: Haha Okay

Lutho: Bye Twas Nice Meeting You

Me: Same Here

He Ran To The Car And They Sped Away,I Went To Buy The Airtime With A Smile On My Face

And Walked Back Home.Vusi And Inam Were Not In The Kitchen Or The Lounge,I Walked To His Room

Inam: Aaaah Vus- Baby Ahh!

Oh Wow! -_-

[05/17, 18:55] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT03 

If That's What Girls In Love Do Then I Definitely Didn't Want To Fall In Love.I Mean Like Inam Knew The Goofball My Brother Was,The Kinda Sweet Talker And Heart Breaker He Was But She Went On And Fucked With Him.Vusi Called Inam 'Mom's Future Daughter In Law' Which Was Stupid Itself Coz He Was Fucking With Other Girls.I Guess That's What Melted Her,Being Called The Future Wife MXM! -_-

I Went To My Room,Bathed And Read Books

From My Laptop,Someone Knocked

Me: Come In

Vusi Got In All Smiles And Threw Himself On
My Bed

Me: Where Is She?

Vusi: Went Home.She's Scared You Might
Judge Her

Me: Ohh

Vusi: You Were Really Gonna Judge Her

Me: She's Way Too Dumb For Someone Her
Age

Vusi: Ouch!

Me: Vusi Why Are You Doing This To My Friend?

Vusi: I Like Her

Me: You Like Her?

Vusi: Yes,I Just Like Her For Now

Me: Wow

Vusi: Losen Up Sis,It's Not Like I'm Fuckin Witchu

Me: You're So Heartless

Vusi: You'll Understand One Day

Me: Understand What?

Vusi: Hey Stop Killing My Vibe,I Just Chowd The Best Cookie So I'm In a Good Mood.Don't Fuck It Up

Me: Just Get Outta My Room

Vusi: Jeez You Serious?

Me: I'm Dead Serious,Out!

Vusi: O-kay (Liftin' His Hands Up) Elethu Said I Should Give Him Your Numbers

Me: DID YOU GIVE EM TO HIM?

I Quickly Got Up And Looked At Vusi With a Smile

Vusi: And Now You Wanna Talk

Me: Vusi C'mon

Vusi: No I Didn't

Me: WHY? :(

Vusi: He's Not The Guy For You

Me: Meaning?

Vusi: Bbe You Still Young To Get Your Heart Broken

Me: You Ain't Being Fair

Vusi: I'm Just Lookin Out For My Sister

Me: But Keep Breakin' My Friend's Heart

Vusi: That's What I Don't Want For You, Elethu Ain't The Right Guy For You

Me: That's Not Fair

Vusi: For Real. You Two Should Not Date Heck You Must Not Date

Me: I Hate You For Doing This

Vusi: You'll Thank Me One Day. Look I'm Going

To Pick Up Philela At Her Crib,She's Gonna
Sleep Over

Me: I Hate That Bitch

Vusi: She Offered Herself And I Don't Say No To
These Kinda Offers

Me: You'll Go To Hell For Doing This To People's
Daughters

Vusi: You Cursing Me

Me: It's The Truth

Vusi: Mxm But Please Behave Coz If You Don't
Then It'll Be My Loss

Me: Fine

He Walked Out And Closed The Door,I Closed
My Laptop And When I Was Getting Up,My Eyes
Met With Lutho's Jacket.I Went To His Number
But Kept On Hesitating To Call,I Finally Did.He
Picked Up On The Third Ring

Call Convo

Lutho: Hello Unknown Number

Me: Hi Lutho

Lutho: Esihle?

Me: Yeap

Lutho: Guess You Ain't Relying On Fate For Our Next Meeting Anymore

Me: Haha What If Fate Made Me Call?

Lutho: Ohh?

Me: Kiddin....So When Will You Be Able To Fetch Your Jacket?

Lutho: Tonight If That's Okay Witchu.So That I Helped You,What Am I Getting In Return?

Me: I Knew It

Lutho: Knew What?

Me: That No Guy Would Help A Girl For Mahala

Lutho: Haha Okay So What Am I Getting In Return?

Me: What Do You Want?

Lutho: A Date Witchu

Me: That's Too Much

Lutho: Having a Meal At a Restaurant Then?

Me: Haha Dude That's Still a Date

Lutho: Have Ice Cream And Talk?

Me: Better But That's Also a Date

Lutho: That's My Final Choice

Me: Haha Okay Fine When?

Lutho: How Bout Tomorrow?

Me: I'll See If I Won't Be Busy Then Get Back To You

Lutho: Xup....So What Name Should I Save Your Number With?

Me: Esihle I Guess

Lutho: I'll Choose Short Base

Me: I Ain't That Short

Lutho: Then You Vertically Challenged Bbe

Me: Haha That's The Same Thing Dude

Lutho: I'm Glad I Can Make You Laugh, Gotta Bounce. I'll Call You When I'm In Your Neighborhood

Me: Okay

I Hung Up Then Went To The Kitchen To Start Preparing For Dinner, Owethu Joined Me And We Cooked Together While Olwethu Played Video Games

Owethu: Where's Big Bro?

Me: Went To Pick Up Philela

Olwethu: Is She Sleeping Over?

Me: Yeap

Olwethu: We Have To Find a Way To Kick Her Out

Owethu: I Don't Like Her

Me: Neither Do I

Olwethu: Why Did Vusi Choose Her Over Inam?

Me: Vusi Didn't Choose Anyone But Inam Broke Things Off With Him Coz He Was Cheating

Owethu: Vusi Can Be So Dumb Sometimes

Olwethu: I'm So Gonna Tell

Owethu: And I So Don't Care

Vusi Got In With Philela Who Was Wearing The Shortest Dress Ever o.O

Philela: Evening In Laws

Me:.....

Olwethu:.....

Owethu: Are You Lost Or Some'ing?

Philela: Meaning?

Owethu: Last Time I Checked You Were Just Fuckin' With My Brother Not Married

Philela: What?

Vusi: Let's Go To My Room

Philela: What Did I Do To Your Sisters And Brother Bbe?

Vusi: Let's Go

They Walked To Vusi's Room And Left Us Laughing Our Lungs Out,Vusi Came Back Alone

Vusi: And What Was That All Bout?

Me: Seems Like The Twins Don't Like Your Bitch

Vusi: Owethu?

Owethu: I Got Nothing To Say To You

Vusi: Stop It Guys Before You Ruin Things For Me

Olwethu: You Left Inam For Her?

Vusi: I Didn't Leave Inam,She Left Me

Olwethu: Whatever But You Should've Fixed Things With Her

Vusi: I'm Working On That

I Looked At Vusi And He Just Chuckled,He

Wasn't Serious Or Was He?

Vusi: So Now That I'm Gonna Fix Things With Inam Are You Gonna Behave And Love Philela?

Owethu: Love,Hell No But Behave,Yes

Vusi: Thank You

My Phone Rang,It Was Lutho

Call Convo

Me: Hey

Lutho: Your Street?

Me: You Already Here?

Lutho: Yeap

I Gave Him The Name

Lutho: I'll Be There In a Few

Me: Owky

He Hung Up And The Whole Room Was Looking At Me

Me: What?

Olwethu: Finally Got a Boyfriend?

Me: WHAT??

Vusi: Do I Know Him?

Owethu: Finally Someone Falls In Love

Me: Guys Calm The Fuck Down,He Ain't My Boyfriend

Vusi: So It's a He?

Me: Mxm....Owethu Please Look After The Pots

Owethu: When Are We Going To Meet Him?

Me: Voestek

I Threw a Napkin At Her,Went To Take Lutho's Jacket From My Bedroom And Went Out,A Car Was Parked In Front Of The Gate So I Got In And Sat On The Passenger's Seat

Me: Hey

Lutho: Hey Beautiful

Me: You Gonna Make Me Blush

Lutho: You Blushin' Already

Me: Stop It

Lutho: Okay Sorry

Me: Thanks Again For The Jacket

Lutho: My Pleasure,I Should Take You To My House Some Time To Meet My Dad

Me: Your Father ?

Lutho: Yeah He Always Says I Don't Do Anything Right But I Did Something Good And Helped You So You'll Be My Witness That I'm a Good,Sensitive And Carrying Guy

Me: Haha Okay.You Almost Had Me For a Moment There

Lutho: Haha You Thought Bout Something Else Right?!

Me: Jeap

Lutho: That Wouldn't Be a Bad Idea Either,Mom Is Getting Old So She Needs Someone Young

To Help Her Round

Me: Go And Look For Her Then

Lutho: I Think I Just Found Her

Me: You Kiddin Ayt?

Lutho: Do You Want Me To?

Me: Dude How Old Are You?

Lutho: Haha Old Enough To Take a Wife

Me: On Your 30s?

Lutho: Do I Look That Old?

Me: you Said You Old Enough To Take a Wife
And The Right Age Group For That Is The 30s

Lutho: Haha O-kay....I'm 21

Me: I See

Lutho: And You?

Me: 17

:v Don't Know Why I Lied Bout My Age

Lutho: You Ain't That Old Or Young Either

Me: Meaning?

Lutho: You'd Make The Perfect Daughter In Law
For My Mom

Me: Dude Please

Lutho: For Real

Me: Here's Your Jacket And Thank You,I'm Out
I Tried To Open The Door But He Locked Em All

Me: And Then?

Lutho: We Ain't Done

Me: I Hope You Know I Ain't Scared Of
Screaming My Lungs Out

Lutho: And Say What?

Me: That You Don't Want To Open Up For Me

Lutho: That's So Childish

Me: What Isn-

He Smashed His Lips On Mine

O-W-K-Y o.O

[05/17, 18:56] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship
And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT04

The Kiss Was Outta This World, Gosh! I Just
Had My First Kiss :) It Was My First Time And It
Felt So Damn Good! Lutho Was Taking His
Time And His Lips Were So Soft And
Awesomely Cold Against Mine. He Broke The
Kiss And Then Pecked My Lips And Looked At
Me, Smiling.

Me: Uhhhm I Sho- I Should Get Going

Lutho: Who Said We Were Done?

Me: What??

Lutho: Your Lips Are Irresistable

Me:.....

Lutho: Can I?

He Grabbed My Cheek And Brought Me Closer To His Face Again,He Pinned His Lips On Mine And We Kissed Again.This Time Round I Could Feel Butterflies Flappin In My Stomach And Dancing,I Swear Lutho Was The Best Kisser Even Though He Was The First Guy I Kissed. We Broke The Kiss And Just Looked At Each Other But I Kept Lookin Down,I Don't Know Why But I Just Couldn't Look At Him

Lutho: Am I Ugly?

Me: No! Why?

Lutho: You Ain't Lookin At Me

Me: I Just Can't

He Chuckled And Kissed My Cheek Then Unlocked The Doors

Lutho: Don't Want Your Mother To Beat Your Ass Up

Me: Haha Fortunately She Doesn't Beat Me Up And She Ain't Round

Lutho: Meaning I Can Take You To My House
Then

Me: NO!

Lutho: Just Kiddin. Good Night

Me: Night

He Pecked My Lips One More Time Then I Went
Out

Lutho: I'll Go When I See You Go Inside The
House! (Shouting)

Me: Dude You Crazy

I Walked To My House And Got In Then Lutho
Finally Drove Away. I Leaned On The Door And
Just Had Flashbacks Of The Sweet, Awesome
Kisses I Just Had

Vusi: Someone's In Love

Me: Mxm

Vusi: He's Got a Beautiful Car But I Hope He
Ain't Mom's Agemate

Me: Really??

Vusi: I Don't Wantchu Opening Your Legs For
Some Fucked Up Grandpa

Me: Wow

Vusi: Anyway How Old Is He?

Me: You Don't Want Me Asking You Questions
Bout Your Business So Don't Ask Me Bout Mine

Vusi: C'mon Lil Sis I Just Want To Know

Me: He's 21

Vusi: Not Really Good But He's Perfect.What
Does He Do For a Living?

Me: Don't Know But Probably Minding His
Business Which Is Something You Clearly Can't
Do

Vusi: This Guy Has Already Made You Think
You All Grown Up

Me: Mxm

Vusi: What's His Name

Me: Vusi!

Vusi: Just Want To Know Sis Hawu

Me: That's For Me To Know And For You Not To Find Out

Vusi: Now You Like That?

Me:

Vusi: At Least It Ain't Elethu

Me: I Don't See Why You Don't Want Him To Date With Me

Vusi: I'm Not Ready To Nurse Your Broken Heart So I'm Tryna Save You One Here

Me: Mxm

I Went To The Kitchen And Found Owethu Already Dishing Up

Me: You The Best The Best The Best

Owethu: You Owe Me

Me: What Do Ypu Want?

Owethu: All The Juicy News And You Have To Take Me Out For Some Ice Cream Tomorrow

Me: Fair Enough

Owethu: Is He Hot?

Me: You Too Young For That

Owethu: C'mon Sis

Me: Okay He's H.O.T

Owethu: Keep Him

Me: Haha What?

Owethu: When I Get A Boyfriend,I Want a Hot One Not Someone Ugly As Olwethu

Olwethu: I Hope You Know I Can Kick Your Ass And Still Have An Awesome Day

Owethu: I Hope You Know That Mom And Da-

Me: Owky Owky Stop Before You Turn This House Into Some Mad House

Owethu And Olwethu: We Were Not Talking To

You

Me: Yho Owky My Mouth Is Zipped

I Just Listened To Them Teasing And Laughing At Each Other,My Lil Bro And Sis Were Really Crazy. We Went To The Dining Table Then Olwethu Prayed.Vusi And Philela Joined Us But Guess What? Owethu Didn't Dish Up For Philela. Vusi Stood With His Arms Folded And Looked At Owethu And I,I Threw My Hands In The Air

Me: Don't Look At Me,I Didn't Dish Up

Vusi: Owethu?

Owethu: Didn't Think She Was Hungry And Besides She Just Came Here For Your D

Philela: I See I Ain't Wanted Here,Can You Please Drive Me Home Vusi?

Vusi: You Ain't Going Anywhere

Vusi Took His Plate And Gave It To Philela Then Took Owethu's

Owethu: And Then?

Vusi: Just Wanted To Remind You That I'm Still Older Than You

Owethu: This Ain't Fair

Owethu Looked At Olwethu

Olwethu: Think Again Sis, You Ain't Getting Non From Me

Owethu: Big Sis (Making a Puppy Face)

Me: Okay Fine

She Ate With Me From My Plate And There Was Total Silence. We All Finished Eating And Went To Wash The Plates While Vusi's "Wanna Be Girlfriend" Watched T.V With Vusi. After We Were Done With The Dishes, I Went To My Room And Played Games On My Phone. Lutho Called Me

Call Convo

Me: Hey

Lutho: I Arrived Safely At Home

Me: Glad To Hear That

Lutho: So What Is My Beautiful Babe Doing?

Me: Uhhhm Babe?

Lutho: Yes You My Girlfriend Now

Me: Haha Oh?

Lutho: Yes So What Is My Beautiful Girlfriend Doing?

Me: And If I Have a Boyfriend?

Lutho: You Talking Bout Me Ayt? Coz You My Girlfriend So That Makes Me Your Boyfriend

Me: Haha Okay?

Lutho: Uhhhm Okay So You Seriously Have a Boyfriend?

Me: Nhaa Was Just Pulling Your Leg

Lutho: Yeapy Then I Officially Found My Mom A Daughter In Law

Me: Haha Oh?

Lutho: Yes

Me: O-W-K-Y....Uhhm I'm Just Lying On My Bed
And You?

Lutho: Thinking Bout The Mind Blowing Kisses I
Got From You

Me: So They Were Mind Blowing?

Lutho: Yeap

Me: And They Were My First Kisses

Lutho: Then The Bold And The Beautiful Actors
Are Doing Their Job Properly

Me: Haha Dude You Crazy

Lutho: Was It Really The First Time You Kiss A
Guy?

Me: Yeap

Lutho: But You Kissed Me Like You've Done It
Before

Me: Then Definitely The Actors Of The Movies
And Dramas I've Watched Do Their Jobs
Properly

Lutho: Haha Oh?....So When Can I Pick You Up
Tomorrow?

Me: Uhhhm Maybe At 10

Lutho: 10 It Is Then...I Gotta Bounce So Good
Night Bbe

Me: Night

He Hung Up And Left Smiling To Myself :)
Guess I Was Falling In Love.My Phone Rang
And It Was a Number

Call Convo

Me: Hello

Caller: Hey It's Me Elethu

Me: Oh Where Did You Get My Number?

Elethu: Stole It From Vusi's Phone.He Didn't
Want To Give It To Me

Me: Haha I Know

Elethu: Uhhhm Look I Ain't Got Enough Airtime So It'll Run Out Any Minute Now. Since Your Mom And Dad Ain't Round Can I Take You Out Tomorrow? Just The Two Of Us Just To Know Each Other Well I'll Come By At 11

Me: I Alr-

The Line Went Dead

[05/17, 18:57] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT05 ❖ ❖

O-W-K-Y -_- I Tried To Call Elethu Back But His Phone Sent Me Straight To Voicemail. Great!

"Now What Do I Do? My Crush Wants To Go On a Date With Me Which Is Great But Then Again Vusi Doesn't Want Me To Date With Elethu Which Is So Not Great :(This Hot Guy Who Happens To Be Lutho Who Is So Heart Warmed

And Seems To Be Loving Calls Me His Babe i.e His Girlfriend.Wants Me To Go Out With Him,He Seems Like a Great Guy And Ohh Damn His Kisses Are So So.....You Fill Up Whatever Word You Think Fits.So Which One Should I Go With?"

Those Were Things Roaming Round My Mind.I Finally Put My Phone Aside,Prayed Then Slept.

The Following Day I Woke Up To Someone Knocking On My Door

Me: WHAT??

Vusi: Can You Please Open Up?

Me: The Fuck Do You Want?

Vusi: Just Open Up Eshle Jeez

I Dragged My Feet Off The Bed And Went To Open Up For Him

Vusi: Morning

Me: What Do You Want?

Vusi: I Need Something From You

Me: And That Is?

Vusi: Philela Started Being On Her Periods This Morning So Can Yo-

Me: Haha Vusi You Hard Core,You Fucked Her Till She Bled

Vusi: Haha What?

Me: You The Reason She's Bleeding

Vusi: Shut Up And Give Me Those Sanitary Towels

Me: I'd Never Come Back If I Was Her

Vusi Hit Me Playfully While I Teased And Laughed At Him.I Looked For My Pads And Gave Him Two

Vusi: Dankie Lil Sis

Me: We're Agemates

Vusi: I Was Eight Months When You Were Born So That Makes Me Older Than You

Me: Mxm

Vusi: Thanks Again

Me: You Owe Me Big

Vusi: Whatever You Want

Me: Elethu Too Ayt?

Vusi: Then The Conversation Is Over

Me: Haha Did I Say Some'ing Wrong?

Vusi: You'll Be Making Breakfast So Take a Quick Shower Or Bath

Me: I Hate You

Vusi: Love You Too Baby

He Walked Out Then I Made My Bed And Went To Take a Bath.I Went To The Kitchen And Found The Twins Eating Cereal

Me: Morning Munchies

Olwethu: Sure

Owethu: Hey Big Sis

Me: So We're Eating Cereal For Breakfast?

Owethu: We Couldn't Wait Any Longer, Bhut Vusi Said It Was Your Turn To Make Breakfast

Olwethu: And We All Know You Take Years In The Shower So We Thought We Should Save Our Stomaches The Starvation And Eat Cereal And Besides You Hate Making Breakfast So Thank Us For Saving Your Energy

Me: What a Long Speech Mr Morena Are You Done?

Olwethu: Not Yet. Vusi Said He Ain't Gonna Eat Cereal So You Have To Make Breakfast For Him

Me: WHAT?

Olwethu: Now My Speech Is Done

Owethu Laughed. Was Vusi Being For Real?? -_- I Seriously Hate My Bro

Me: So Where Is He Now?

Owethu: Drove Philela Back Home

Olwethu: She Walked Funny When She Was Walking Outta Here

Me: Haha Really?

Owethu: I'll Never Have Sex If That's What Happens After You've Done It

Olwethu: The Way You So Forward You Can Come Home Tomorrow Walking Like That

Owethu: Who You Talkin' To?

Olwethu: Who's Askin'?

Owethu: I Swear My Real Twin Brother Was Swap Witchu At The Hospital. Mom And Dad Should Go And Look For Their Real Son

Me: You Two Mara

Olwethu: I Don't Really Have To Waste My Breath On You

Vusi Got In With Inam And They Were Laughing And Giggling

Vusi: Look What I Got You Lil Sis

Me: I See

Inam: Hey Bbe

Me: Hi

Vusi: So Did You Make My Breakfast?

Me: I Ain't Your Maid Vusi

Vusi: Twins,What Did You Do To Her?

Olwethu: No'ing And I Can't Wait To Hear Why She Got This Attitude Ayt Now

Me: I'll Be In My Room

I Took My Bowl And Went To My Room,I Was Mad At Inam.I Mean Really Mad,She Knew The Kinda Playboy Vusi Was But She Went On And Fucked With Him "I Don't Care Even If I'm Overreacting Or Some'ing But I'm Just Tryna Protect Her From A Big Fat Heartbreak"

Someone Knocked On The Door

Me: It's Open

Inam Got In And Came To Sit Next To Me

Inam: Are You Mad At Me?

Me: Why Would I Be?

Inam: Hey Bbe Look I Know You Only Looking Out For Me And Errthing And I Appreciate Tha-

Me: Then Why On Earth Do You Keep Going Back To Him? Look I Know Vusi Is My Brother And He Means Errthing To Me But You My Friend Too And I Don't Want You To Get Hurt.

Inam: I Know.Vusi And I Talked And We Gonna Take Things Slowly And See Where That Takes Us

Me: Take Things Slowly How?

Inam: You'll See.Esihle I Love Your Brother And I Know He Loves Me Too But He Just Doesn't Know How To Love Someone.He's Been a Playboy For a Long Time Now So It Won't Be That Easy For Him To Love Someone Abruptly

Me: So You Willing To Take That Chance?

Inam: I Love Him So I Have To

Me: That Ass Is So Lucky To Be Loved By You

Inam: Really?

Me: Yes Really And I Hope He Realised That Before It's Too Late

Inam: Yeah....Enough Bout Me So Who's This New Guy

Me: Vusi Is So Forward

Inam: I'm The One Who Asked Him To Keep Me Updated

Me: And What Did He Say To You?

Inam: That You Bitch Finally Found Someone To Love And That He's Happy Coz He Won't Have To Worry Bout You And Elethu Doing Some'ing Behind His Back

Me: Speaking Of Elethu,He Wants Us To Go On a Date Today

Inam: Hope You Told Him You Won't Be Able To Make It

Me: And I Have A Date With Lutho Too Today

Inam: The Mistery Guy?

Me: Mistery Guy?

Inam: Vusi Said You Didn't Want To Tell Him His Name So He Named Him The Mistery Guy

Me: You Seem To Be Talkin' Bout Anything And Errrthing When You Together

Inam: Some'ing Like That

Me: I Guess You Really Gonna Be Mom's Future Daughter In Law

Inam: In Vusi's Dreams.....So When Are You Gonna Get Ready For Your Date With This Lutho Guy?

Me: And What If I Chose The One With Elethu?

Inam: Then Vusi's Gonna Toast Your Ass

Me: He's Cute

Inam: And a No Go Area

Me: Vusi Ain't Being Fair

Inam: He's Lookin' Out For You Coz He Loves You

Me: What Time Is It?

Inam: 10 To 10

Me: CRAP! Lutho Will Be Here In a Few,We Were Supposed To Go At 10

Inam: A Lady Is Allowed To Be Late,Let's Look For Your Outfit.You Already Bathed Ayt?

Me: Yeap.Help Me I Don't Want Lutho To Wait For Me Too Long,He'll Think I'm a Bad Girlfriend

Inam: Just Stop Talkin' And Help Me Outchea

We Turned My Closet Upside Down And Finally Got a Summer Dress And Sandals,I Wasn't The High Hill Shoe Type.

Inam Did My Make Up And Tied My Afro Into a Neat Bun,My Phone Rang And It Was Lutho.

Inam Took The Phone And Answered It

Call Convo

Lutho: I'm Outside Your House

Inam: Uhhhm I'm Sorry To Say This And It Hurts Me To But Esihle Left Us This Morning

Lutho: WHOA WHAT?

Me: INAM!

Inam: Kiddin,She'll Be Out In a Few

Lutho: You Almost Gave Me a Heart Attack

Inam: Sorry

Lutho Hung Up,I Threw a Pillow At Inam And She Ducked

Me: You Crazy Bitch

Inam: Just Wanted Him To Get Worked Up

Me: What If He Fainted?

Inam: Then I'd Say He's The One....You Look Ravishing

Me: Thanks Bbe

Inam: This Lutho Guy Better Take Care Of Your Big Ass Or Else Vusi Is Gonna Take Care Of Him

Me: And He'd Really Do That

Inam: Go Before Bhut Luu Cancels The Date

Me: Thanks Again Bbe

We Kissed Each Other's Cheeks Then Walked To The Lounge

Vusi: We Have a Date?

Inam: Some'ing Like That

Owethu: I Want All The Juicy News When You Back

Olwethu: Make Sure You Back Before The Rents Are Back

Inam: Take All The Time You'll Need Bbe I'm Sure Mr Morena Wants Those Cattles

Vusi: Dad Would Kill You

My Phone Rang Again And It Was Lutho,I Answered It And Told Him I Was Coming Out.

Vusi Walked Me Out And Boom! Elethu Was Entering The Gate

FUCK ME SIDE WAYS!

[05/17, 18:58] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT06

Lutho Rolled Down His Window And Whistled

Lutho: Babe You Hot

I Smiled And Looked At Him, Elethu Turned And Looked At Lutho Then At Me. He Came To Stand Next To Vusi And I

Vusi: Last Time I Checked We Weren't Meeting Up Today Or Am I Having Amnesia Or Some'ing?

Elethu: Haha Nhaa Dude I'm Takin' Your Sister Out, Anyway Who's That Dude In That Car?

Vusi: My Sister's Boyfriend

Elethu: Uhhm Boyfriend?

Vusi: Let's Go Inside Coz It's Obvious That Your Date With Her Ain't Gonna Take Place

Elethu: Uhhm So You Going Out With That Dude?

Me:.....

Vusi: Yes She's Going Out With Him,Let's Get Inside Dude

I Looked At Elethu Then Walked To Lutho's Car,I Got In And He Pecked My Lips Then Started The Car And Drove Away

Lutho: You Took Your Time Mam

Me: I'm A Girl I Had To

Lutho: I See....So Was That Your Brother?

Me: Yeap And His Friend

Lutho: I Should Meet Up With My Bro In Law Soon

Me: Seems Like You Moving Too Fast Mr

Lutho: I Have No Reason To Take Things Slowly When I've Already Met My Mrs

Me:..... :)

Lutho: Someone Is Speechless

Me: Coz Of You

Lutho: So Where Should We Go First? To The Beach Or Grab Some'ing To Eat First?

Me: You Choose

Lutho: I Love My Tummy So We'll Go And Grab Some'ing To Eat First

Me: Last Time I Checked You Were Takin' Me Out Only For Ice Cream

Lutho: I Ain't That Broke,Only Broke Guys Take Out Their Girls Only For Ice Cream

Me: Haha Oh?

Lutho: Yeap....So Tell Me Which Grade You Doing?

Me: Grade 11

Lutho: You'll Be A Doctor Soon Soon

Me: Who Said I Want To Become a Doctor?

Lutho: Then Watchu Wanna Be?

Me: I Guess I'll Just Work For Dad's Company Coz My Brother And I Own Like 20 % Each Of The Company But Dad Wants Us To Be 18 First Then He'll Sign The Shares Over To Us So Jeah

Lutho: I Should Kidnap You, You Rich At This Age

Me: My Dad Would Hunt You Down And Do God Knows What So Don't You Dare Think Bout Some'ing Like That

Lutho: So You Care Bout Me

Me: Nhaa Just Don't Want To See Your Ass Being Toasted By My Father

Lutho: I See

Me: So Watchu Doing? Studying Or Working?

Lutho: Both

Me: What Kinda Work And Studies?

Lutho: I Work For Some Family Friend's Company Since Dad Didn't Want To Give Me A Job In His Own Company So They Pay For My Studies,I'm Studying Business Related Stuff.When I'm Done With My Studies Then They'll Hire Me Permanently

Me: It Seems Like You And Your Dad Don't Have a Healthy Relationship

Lutho: Yeah Some'ing Like That

Me: What Happened?

Lutho: Uhhm So What Do You Want Us To Eat? You Choose This Time Round

O-W-K-Y Whatever Was Going On Between Lutho And His Father Must Have Been Big Since He Just Changed The Topic

Me: I Feel Like Eating Hamburger And Fries

Lutho: Won't You Be Shy To Eat That In Front Of Me?

Me: Why Would I Be Shy?Am I Supposed To Be

Shy?

Lutho: Haha Nhaa Just That Most Girls Don't Like To Eat Some'ing That Messy On a Date And They Don't Want To Seem Like They Don't Value Their Figures And Flat Bellies

Me: Then All Those Girls You've Gone To Dates With Ain't Nothing Like Me,I Love Food But I Hit The Gym To Get My Body Back On Shape.I'd Never Starve Myself Because I Want My Boyfriend To Think I'm That Kinda Lady

Lutho: I Swear You Give Me More Reasons To Love You Every time You Open Your Mouth And Talk

Me: What's There To Like Bout a Girl Of My Age Stuffing Herself With Food And Eating Something Like This On a Date?

Lutho: Coz The Meal You Chose Is Gonna Save Me a Lotta Money And It's My Favorite Too

Me: Then We Sorted

He Parked In Front Of This Fast Food
Restaurant Situated Next To The Beach.We
Both Got Out At The Same Time

Lutho: I Was Supposed To Open The Door For
You

Me: My Bad

We Both Laughed Then Went Back To The
Car,Lutho Took Off His Jacket First Exposing
His Muscled Hot Arms Then Went Out And
Came To Open The Door For Me And Took Me
By My Hand But Kissed It First Before Pulling
Me Outta The Car.He Locked It Then We
Walked Into The Restaurant,Hand In Hand.

We Sat Down Then a Waitress Came With The
Menus

Waitress: What Can I Get For You And Your Lil
Sister For Now While You Look Through Your
Menus?

W.T.F?? :v Did I Look That Young Or Was

The Bitch Tryin' Her Luck?

Lutho: Uhhm Baby What Do You Want? They Make The Best Krushers In Town

Me: Uhhhm I'll Just Have A Strawberry Krusher Thank You

Lutho: Then Make It Two,Me And My Wife We'll Both Have Those Strawberry Krushers

Waitress: Uhhhm Okay Sir

I Could See The Embarrassment Right Through Her,She Walked Away And Lutho And I Both Laughed

Me: Your Wife? You Move On Too Quick Mister

Lutho: She Just Called You My Lil Sister So Wanted Her To Know What You Are In case She Had Other Thoughts

Me: Mhmhmhm

Our Krushers Came While We Waited For Our Hamburgers And Fries.We Talked Bout

Anything And Everything,Lutho Told Me His Surname (Zizwe) And That He Had a Lil Sis (5 Years Old) And He Seemed So Fond Of Her .I Couldn't Wait To Meet Her Coz She Sounded Like a Sweet Innocent Soul.He Talked Bout His Mother But Not Bout His Father Which Got Me Wondering But I Brushed That Feeling Away.

Our Meal Finally Came Then We Started Digging In,Lutho Just Kept Glancing At Me And Smiling

Me: What?

Lutho: You Really Different From All The Girls I've Gone Out With,You Full Of Life,You Ain't Shy,You Love Food Like Me And You Don't Care Whether You On A Date Or Not You Just Eat Like I Ain't Even Here

Me:..... :)

Lutho: I'm Gonna Love Having You In My Life

Me: Dude You Makin' Me Blush

I Took a Fry And Threw It At Him,He Picked It

Up And Threw It Back At Me.I Took Two Fries And Threw Them At Him,He Took His Whole Plate And Threw It At Me.People Were Lookin' At Us But We Just Didn't Mind Them And Just Laughed.

The Waitress Came Back To Us

Waitress: Is Everything Okay?

Lutho: Errthing Is Perfect

Waitress: Uhhhm Sir Our Manager Won't Like This

Lutho: Uhhm Sorry,I'll Just Pay For The Damage We Caused

He Took Out His Wallet And Paid,We Took Our Krushers And Went Back To The Car.I Took Off My Sandals,Lutho Took Off His Sneakers Then We Went To Walk On The Sand And Just Watched The Waves.Lutho Picked Me Up And Held Me Tightly Then Ran Into The Water With Me

Me: LUUU LUU LUTHO!! MARN!

Lutho: The Water Is Great

Me: I Don't Have Clothes To Change Into Dude

Lutho: Neither Do I

Me: Dude You Insane

Lutho: Coz I'm Witchu

I Ended Up Enjoying The Water And We Just Played In The Water,A Camera Guy Came To Us And We Took Pictures Then Went Back To The Car So That Lutho Could Pay Him.We Divided The Photos Inbetween Us Then Lutho Drove Me Back Home Wet As I Was

Me: You Spent So Much Money On Me

Lutho: That Was Nothing Compared To What I've Spent On The Girls I've Gone Out With

Me: Next Time We Should Pay Half-half

Lutho: That Will Never Happen,I'm The Man,I Have To Provide.

Me: You So Ancient Minded

Lutho: That's How I Was Raised

He Took Another Route Not One That Leads To My House

Me: And Then?

Lutho: I Have Somewhere To Go First Then I'll Drive You Home

Me: I Hope You Ain't Putting Your Kidnapping Me Plan Into Action

Lutho: Haha That Wouldn't Be A Bad Idea Either

I Hit Him Playfully,I Played Music And Sang Along On Songs I Knew.He Parked In Front Of This Beautiful House

Lutho: Want To Go In With Me?

Me: Uhhhm Okay

He Got Outta The Car And Pressed Some Button On The Gate And It Opened Then Came Back To The Car.He Drove Us In And We Went

In While I Walked Behind Him,The House Was So Beautiful Yho.We Found Two Guys Playing Video Games In The Lounge (Those He Was With In The Car The Day We Met)

Guy1: My Nikka

Lutho: Hey Gents....Where's Anga?

Guy2: Went To Splash....I Didn't Know That You And This Hot Thang Had a Thing Goin' On

Lutho: You Didn't Have To Dude....Babe This Is Thabang (Guy2) And That One Is Siyamthanda But You Can Just Call Him Siya (Guy1) And Gents This Is Esihle

Siya: She's Cute

Thabang: And She's Pretty

Guy3: (Walkin' Down The Stairs) Last Time I Checked Only Girls Were Supposed To Be Wet And Not Literally

Lutho: Fuck You Anga

Guy3: So This Is The African Queen You Told Me Bout?

Lutho: Yeap,Babe This Is Anga

Me: Nice To Know You Anga

He Came To Me And Kissed My Hand

Anga: Same Here Your Majesty

Lutho: Hey Let Go Now Before You Fall For Her

Anga: She's Quiet A Catch

Siya: She's An Eye Feeder Dude

Thabang: Luu Bro Basop These Two Are Complimenting Way Too Much

Lutho: They Just Complimenting That I Know We All Sat Down

Lutho: I Need The Updates

Anga: Uhhm We Should Go To My Study

A Guy Got In Breathing Heavily

Guy: They Killed Elia And Now They Threw A

Dead Rat Into The Yard

Anga: Some People Just Call Death Upon
Themselves

Lutho: Guys! (Pointing At Me With His Head)

Guy: Ohhh Shit! Didn't Know We Had a Guest
The Fuck Is Going On?? o.O

[05/17, 19:01] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship
And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT07

#Crop_Top

Anga Got Up And Walked Up The Stairs
Followed By The Guy Who Just Walked In. Lutho
Got Up And Looked At Me

Lutho: I'll Be Back Ayt Now Bbe

Me: O-W-K-Y

He Followed Anga And The Other Dude, Leaving

Me With Siya And Thabang

Siya: Uhhhm So Would You Like Ice Cream?

Me: No Thank You

Thabang: That Day We Met You At The Mall,I
Didn't Think My Nikka Would Catch
Feelings,You Seemed Way To Young Back Then
But Now I See Young Is The Way To Go Now

Me: Oh?

Siya: I Hope You Won't Break Our Nikka's Heart

Me: Dude I'm The Girl And He's The Guy,Guys
Do The Heartbreakin' Not Us

Thabang: That's Not True And Siya Is a Living
Example Of That

Me: Haha Oh? What Happened?

Siya: You Suck (Lookin' At Thabang)

Thabang: Few Months Ago His Main Chick
Cheated On Him With Someone We Don't Really
Get Along With And It Was So Damn Hard For

Him To Move On,The Dude Even Cried

Me: Haha You Cried? (Lookin' At Siya)

Siya: I Wasn't Cryin',Something Got Into My Eyes

Thabang: Coz Your Bitch Cheated On You Then
You Cried

Siya: Fuck You Thabang Bro

Thabang: So How Old Are You?

Me: 17

Siya: Luu Now Is Tappin' The Good,Fresh Stuff

Me: Tappin'? o.O

Siya: If He Hasn't Then He Will

Just Then Lutho,Anga And The Other Guy Came
Back.

Lutho: Let's Go Bbe

Siya: You Should Bring Her 'round More Often

Lutho: So That You'd Try Your Luck? No Thank
You

They All Fist Bumped Then Anga Walked Us Out

Anga: So We Will Be Seeing Your Face Round Here More Often? (Lookin' At Me)

Me: Me?

Anga: Yeap

Me: Uhhhm Maybe

Lutho: She's Still In High School So She Won't Be Able To Come 'round

Anga: I Mean During The Holidays

Me: Uhhhm Yeah If You Want Me 'round Then I'll Definitely Come

Lutho Just Kept Quiet And Looked At Us,We Got In The Car Then Anga Went To Stand Next To The Driver's Window

Amga: How's The Taima Treatin' You Now?

Lutho: We Haven't Talked For Weeks Now,That Bitch Got Moods Like He's Pregnant Or Some'ing

Anga: And How's Mamzo?

Lutho: She Still Calls Me And We Meet Up
Maybe Once Or Twice In a Week But Dad
Doesn't Know

Anga: He'll Come 'round

Lutho: Talk Of Never

Anga: Take It Like A Man Bro (Looks At Me) Bye
Sweetie

Me: Bye

Lutho Put On His Seat Belt Then Started The
Car, We Were Both Quiet Till I Decided To Break
The Ice

Me: What Is Going On Lutho?

Lutho: I Love You And You Love Me That Is
What Is Going On

Me: I Ain't Talkin Bout That

Lutho:.....

Me: What Happened Between You And Your

Father? Who Is Elia? And Who The Hell Threw A Dead Rat Into Anga's Apartment?

Lutho: Get Outta There

Me: So You Ain't Gonna Answer Me?

Lutho:.....

Me: I See

Lutho: We Had A Good Time Today Please Don't Ruin That

Me:.....

Lutho: C'mon Babe Now You Gon Let Some'ing That Stupid Get In between Us?

Me: If It's That Stupid Then Why Don't You Want To Talk Bout It?

Lutho:.....

We Both Went Quiet, No One Talked To The Other. We Arrived At My Crib Then Lutho Parked, He Looked At Me And Smiled

Lutho: You Don't Look Pretty When You Mad

Bbe

Me:.....

Lutho: Babe C'mon

Me:.....

He Just Grabbed Me By My Cheek And Kissed The Living Daylights Outta Me,I Kissed Him Back And We Ended Up Having a Passionate Long Kiss.He Broke It And Pecked My Lips

Lutho: Now There's My Babe

Me: I'm Still Mad Atchu

Lutho: Want Another Kiss?

Me: I'll Pass

We Had A Brief Kiss Then I Got Out And Walked Into The House.I Found Elethu And Vusi Playing Video Games

Me: Hey Guys

Vusi: I Want All The Details

Elethu: I Should Get Going

Me: I Just Arrived

Vusi: Let Him Be

Elethu Got Up And Left Just Then Mom And Dad Got In

Me: Hey Parents

Vusi: You Back

Dad: And You Ain't Happy Vusi, That I Know

Mom: Hey Babies

Olwethu And Owethu Came Running And Hugged Them, They Sat Down And We Asked Them Bout Their Trip But Dad Didn't Look At Me More Often, I Knew He Was Mad Or Some'ing.

Owethu, Mom And I Went To The Kitchen And Started Preparing For Super While Mom Told Us Bout The Beautiful Place They Went To

Owethu: Your Boyfriend Should Take You There
Big Sis

Mom:.....

Me: Owethu Shush

Owethu: Sorry

We Finished Cooking Then Dished Up And Took The Plates To The Dining Table,I Prayed Then We Started Digging In.

Olwethu: We Thought You Weren't Gonna Be Back Today

Mom: So That You Can Make My House A Zoo?

Owethu: We Don't Do That Mom Except Vusi,He Brought Philela Here Then The Following Day Came With Inam

Dad Hit The Table With a Fist And We Were All Frightened

Dad: Vusi This Is My House And You Won't Do Anything You Like In My House! And You Esihle,Neighbors Have Been Calling You Mom And I Saying There Are Cars Picking You Up At Night! Is That The Way I Raised You?

Vusi: Uhhhm O-W-K-Y I'll Be In My Room

He Took His Plate And Left

Mom: I Just Lost My Appetite

Dad: Pumpkin Wait

Mom: Do You Really Have To Take Out Your Anger On The Kids?

Dad: Sorry

Mom: You Unbelievable

Dad: WHAT DO YOU WANT ME TO DO HUH?
HOW SHOULD I BEHAVE WHEN YOU GONNA
DIVORCE ME??

THE FUCK?? :'(

[05/17, 19:02] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship
And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT08

We Were All Stunned Heck We Were Shocked

And Surprised

Me: WHAT??

Olwethu: You Jokin' Right?

Owethu: THE WHAT??

Vusi: THE FUCK DID DAD JUST SAY? (walkin'
down the stairs)

Mom: I'll Be In The Bedroom

Dad:.....

Vusi: You Kiddin' Ayt?

Mom: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout This

Me: Mom You And Dad Are Getting A Divorce
And You Don't Wanna Talk Bout This?? What
Bout Us? Have You Two Thought Bout What WE
Want?? Your Marriage Ain't Bout The Two Of
You Anymore, You Have Four Kids To Think
Bout!!

Mom: DON'T YOU DARE RAISE YOUR VOICE
WHEN TALKIN' TO ME, I'M STILL OLDER THAN

YOU

Me: I Hate You,I Hate Both Of You

I Got Up And Ran To My Room,Someone
Knocked

Me: Go Away

Dad: Princess Please Open Up,It's Me Daddy

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk To You Too.I Hate Both
Of You

I Was Crying My Lungs Out On My Bed,I Really
Didn't Want My Parents To Get Divorced.I Loved
Both Of Them Equally,I Didn't Want To Choose
Between Them Because If They Divorced We'd
Have To Choose Who We Wanna Live With And
That Would Be Fucked Up Coz We Loved Both
Of Them Equally,They Raised Us With
Love,They Were Our Parents.

Dad: Can We Talk?

Me: You Both Want This Don't You? What's
There To Talk Bout?

Dad: Baby Open Up Please

Me: Just Go Away Dad!

Dad: I Hope You Know I Ain't Scared Of Kickin'
This Door Down,I Bought It After All

I Got Up And Went To Open Up For Him,He
Hugged The Livin' Hell Outta Me

Dad: I'm So Sorry Princess

Me: What Happened Dad? You And Mom
Seemed So Much In Love,You Never Fought

Dad: That's Because We Didn't Want You To
See That

Me: You Love Mom Don't You?

Dad: With All Of My Heart

Me: Then Don't Sign Those Papers

Dad: It Ain't That Easy Baby

Me: Daddy What Happened?

Dad: Me And Your Mom Don't See Eye To Eye

Anymore

Me: WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?

Dad: Calm Down Baby,It Just Means That Our Marriage Ain't Working Anymore

Me: Then Make It Work!

Dad: It Ain't That Easy

Me: PLEASE DAD PLEASE DON'T TAKE OUR HAPPINESS AWAY!

Dad: Your Mom Wants This

Me: Fuck What Mom Wants,What Bout What We Want? What Bout The Happy Family We Are?

Dad: One Day You'll Understand

Me: UNDERSTAND WHAT? THAT MY MOM AND MY DAD DIVORCED AND NEVER TOLD US WHY?? SO WHO ARE WE GOING TO LIVE WITH?

Dad: You'll Choose

Me:..... :(

Dad: I'm Sorry Baby

He Kissed My Forehead And Walked Out

Me: Daddy

Dad: Yes Princess

Me: I Love You

Dad: I Love You Too My Love

He Walked Out,Vusi Bumped Into Him On His
Way Into My Room.He Just Hit Him By The
Shoulder And Passed

Dad: Vusi Liste-

Vusi: Just Save It For Someone Who Cares Coz
I Don't

Dad: I Know You Angry Ayt Now B-

Vusi: BUT WHAT DAD? WHAT? MOM HAS BEEN
NOTHING BUT A GOOD WIFE TO YOU,SHE
LOVED ME LIKE HER OWN,RAISED
ME,WARMED UP YOUR DAMN FAMILY,MADE
SURE YOU'RE A MAN AMONGST OTHER

MAN,MADE YOU LOOK GOOD,WASHED FOR YOU,COOKED FOR YOU,GAVE YOU EVERYTHING YOU NEEDED BUT YOU STILL GO OUT THERE AND SLEEP WITH OTHER WOMEN!

Me: WHOA WHAT??

Vusi: Didn't Your Precious Daddy Tell You That He Cheated On Mom?

Me: Dad Is This True?? :(

Dad: It Was a Mistake Baby.I LOVE YOUR MOM OKAY?!

Vusi: Then You Definitely Don't Know How To Show It.

Dad: Vusi Your Mother Ain't a Saint Herself

Vusi: Wow Now You Tryna Pin All Your Sins To Mom

Dad: You'll Never Understand

With That Said,He Left.Vusi Threw Himself On My Bed And Covered His Face With His Hands

Me: What Did Mom Say To You?

Vusi: That Musa Morena Cheated On Her With Some Colleague

Me: What??

Vusi: Yes

Me: No Wonder You Like This

Vusi: I Ain't Married

Me: But Still You Fuck Round

Vusi: Dad Is Old Enough To Go Round Fuckin' Every Bitch He Meets

Me: Dad Says Mom Cheated Too

Vusi: Mom Would Never Do That

Me: I Also Thought Dad Was Done With That Life Too.Let's Go And Talk To Both Of Them

Vusi: They Just Gonna Lie To Us So What's The Use?

Me: At Least We'll Say We Tried

Vusi: Just Let Them Fix Their Marriage On Their Own

Me: VUSI!!

Vusi: Okay Fine

He Got Up From The Bed And We Walked To The Rents' Room. We Stood Before We Could Knock

Mom: That's Why I Want Us To Divorce, We're Toxic For Each Other Musa

Dad: Pumpkin The Kids Are Hurting

Mom: I Know But This Is The Best Option

Dad: Have You Thought Bout What I Want?

Mom: Musa This Ain't Workin'

Dad: I Asked You, Have You Thought Bout What I Want?

Mom:.....

Dad: I Thought So Too

Mom: What Are We Gonna Tell The Kids?

Dad: You The One Who Came Up With The Divorce Plan So You Come Up With Whatever You Gonna Tell Them.You Didn't Tell Vusi Everything And Now He Thinks I'm The Only One Who Fucked Up In This,If You Don't Tell Them The Whole Truth,I Will.

Mom: Musa You Pushed Me Into Cheating On You

Vusi Looked At Me

Me: Their Marriage Is Really Fucked Up

Vusi: I Can't Believe This

There Was Some Silence For A While

Mom: Musa I Love You With Every Inch Of Every Cell In My Body But Our Marriage Is Just Not Working.I Thought The Vacation Was Gonna Bring Us Closer Again But It Just Made Matters Worse

Dad: We've Always Worked On Our Marriage

What Is So Different This Time Around?

Mom: Because I'm The One Who Fucked Up,I Pushed You Away Into That Woman's Arms

Dad: Look What I Did Was Wrong Too,It's Not Your Fault

Mom: It Is Musa,It Is

Dad: Come Here

Mom Was Starting To Cry,There Was Some Silence For A While,The Next Thing There Were Moans And Groans Coming From Their Room.O -W-K-Y :v It Was Our Cue To Leave

Vusi: I Guess They Don't Need Our Help Anymore

Me: They Both Love Each Other,I Don't Even Know Why They Wanted a Divorce

Vusi: Your Parents Are Just Full Of Drama

Me: They Are Yours Too Duhhh!

I Went To My Room And Vusi Went To Talk

With The Twins.I Got To My Room And Called
Lutho

°Call Convo°

Lutho: My Babe

Me: Hey

Lutho: You Okay? You Sound So Down

Me: Family Issues

Lutho: Wanna Talk Bout It?

Me: Mom Wanted To Divorce Dad

Lutho: Ouch!

Me: Yeap

Lutho: Sorry Sugar Boom Boom

Me: Haha The Fuck?

Lutho: Wanted To Put a Smile On That Pretty
Face Of Yours

Me: And You Really Did Thank You My Remedy

Lutho: I'm Glad I Did,Look I Have a Report To

Write So Good Night

Me: Night Love You!

Lutho: And I Love You Way More

Me: Mxm

Lutho: Bye Bbe

He Hung Up Then I Tried To Drift Away To Sleep. The Following Day I Woke Up And Went To Wash My Face And Rinsed My Mouth, I Found Dad And Mom Making Breakfast Together In The Kitchen

Me: Morning Love Birds

Dad: Morning Princess

Vusi: I Guess This Means The Divorce Process Won't Be Continuing (Entering The Kitchen)

Mom: Unfortunately No

Me: Meaning?

Vusi: What?

Dad: Your Mom And I Decided To Be Friends For You

Vusi: Friends With Benefits I Guess

Mom: Just Kiddin' We'll Try To Work On Our Marriage For Us And For You Too Guys

We Made Breakfast Together And Then Went To The Dining Table To Eat. Uncle Bonga Got In With His Family

Mom: Our Grocery Is Way Too Small For Two Families

Uncle Bonga: Musa Owns 70% Of Our Company, He's Rich As Fuck

Aunt Amish: Morning Family

Us: Hey Aunty

They Joined Us For Breakfast And We Ate Together, Mom And Aunt Amish Washed The Dishes So I Just Went To Take a Shower And Chilled With Dad And Uncle Bonga In The Garden. Lutho Called Me

°Call Convo°

Me: Sugar Boom Boom

Lutho: Haha That's Your Name Not Mine,How Are You Today?

Me: I'm Good And You?

Lutho: I'm Good Too,Are You Free? I Have Somewhere That I Wanna Take You

Me: Uhhm Let's Meet At The Mall

Lutho: Okay Then Bbe Bye

He Hung Up,I Asked For The Cab Money From Dad And Said I Was Going To Meet Up Inam.I Took A Cab To The Mall And Lutho Picked Me Up,He Drove Us To This Beautiful House Not Too Different From Anga's.

Me: Is This Your House?

Lutho: Our House

Me: Haha Oh?

Him: Yeap

We Got Inside The House And Damn It Seemed Like It Was Owned By a Woman.Lutho Put His Keys On The Table And Turned On The T.V

Lutho: So What Do You Wanna Have?

Me: Do You Have Ice Cream?

Lutho: Heap,Follow Me

We Walked To The Kitchen,He Picked Me Up And Put Me On The Counter Then Took Out The Ice Cream From The Fridge,Took Two Spoons And Gave Me One.

We Dug In While He Stood In between My Legs.When I Had Enough,He Put It Back And Picked Me Up Then Walked Up The Stairs With Me.We Got To This Big,Beautiful Bedroom

Me: Is This Your Bedroom?

Lutho: Yeap,Like It?

Me: I Love It,It's Triple The Size Of My Bedroom

Lutho: That's Coz You're Still Too Young To

Have a Big Bed

Me: Mxm

He Pushed Me To The Bed And We Kissed,The
Kiss Went On For A While,I Could Feel Myself
Getting Wet.

Lutho Took Off My Jacket Slowly And Planted
Soft,Cold Lips On My Neck.

WHOA WAIT!! Is This What It Feels Like To Be
On? It Was Like I Was In Some Fairy Land With
All The Honey And Sweets.

He Stopped And Looked At Me

Lutho: Do You Wanna Do It?

Me:.....

Lutho: Look I Don't Wanna Rush You

Me: I Don't Think I'm Ready

Lutho: Let's Go And Play Some T.V Games Then

[05/17, 19:03] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship
And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT09

We Both Got Up From The Bed Then Lutho Helped Me With Puttin' On The Jacket. We Walked To The Lounge And Played Video Games And Guess What? I Was Good Just Like Luu, We Would Both Win In Turns

Lutho: You Good At This, I Thought I Was Gonna Beat Up Your Ass

Me: I Have Two Brothers And a Fresh Dad So I Learnt A Thing Or Two From Them

Lutho: So You Used To Playing Video Game?

Me: Kinda

Lutho: Seems Like I Have a Girlfriend And a Boyfriend In You

Me: Haha Kinda

Lutho: Want Some'ing To Eat?

Me: Yeap But Some'ing Light

He Got Up And Headed To The Kitchen

Me: Can I Help Out?

Lutho: Yeah Sure

I Followed Him,He Took Bread And Toasted It While I Unwarapped The Cheese And Cut The Polony.He Did Errthing Afterwards Then We Both Sat On The Counter And Devoured Our Food

Lutho: So What Are Your Plans After Grade 12?

Me: Go To Varsity I Guess

Lutho: And If I Say Don't?

Me: Haha You Kiddin' Ayt?

He Snort-laughed And Shrugged His Shoulders,Siya And Thabang Got In While We Were Eating.Siya Took Lutho's Plate From His Hands

Thabang: Love Birds

Lutho: I Hope You Know I Ain't Scared Of Kickin'

Your Ass

Siya: I'm Sure You Don't Wanna Look That Bad In Front Of Mrs

Lutho: Argg Just Gimme My Plate Dude

Siya Took One Sandwich From The Plate And Handed It Back To Lutho,I Gave Mine To Thabang

Lutho: What Brings You Here?

Siya: I Came For The Cold Beers,Don't Know Bout T-man

Lutho: I Knew It

Siya Went To The Fridge And Took Out Four Beers Then Handed One To Thabang,Another One To Lutho Then Came To Stand In Front Of Me

Siya: Want Some?

Me: Dude I Ain't Even 18

Siya: It's Good To Break The Law Sometimes

Lutho: Siyamthanda!

Siya: O-kay Hardie,I Guess It's My Lucky Day
Then

Thabang: So Which Grade You Doing Esihle?

Me: Grade 11

Siya: Soon You Gonna Be A Teacher

Me: I'm Way Too Old For That Ish

Siya: Haha Ohh?

My Phone Rang,It Was Inam

Call Convo

Me: Baby

Inam: Why Didn't You Tell Me That You Lied
Bout Me?

Me: Shit!

Inam: Your Dad Knows That You Weren't With
Me

Me: Make Sure That The Theme For My Funeral

Is Purple Or Pink

Inam: Haha Now You Being Crazy

Me: And Please Make The Best Best Friend
Speech

Inam: Esihle Stop It,Just Come Back Now
Before He Gets More Angry Or Some'ing

Me: He's Gonna Kill Me

Inam: Just Come Back!

She Hung Up Then The Guys Were All Lookin' At
Me

Siya: Did Your High School Boyfriend Find Out
That You Datin' Someone Else?

Thabang: Siya Just Shut Up Dude

Lutho: You Okay?

Me: Not Really,Can You Drive Me Back Home?

Lutho: Yeah Sure

He Took His Car Keys

Lutho: And You Guys, Please Don't Burn Down My House

Siya: Don't Worry We'll Just Turn It Into Ashes

Me: Haha Siya You Crazy

Lutho And I Walked To His Car And He Started It

Lutho: Wassup?

Me: I Lied To Dad And Said I Was Going To My Friend's Place

Lutho: And?

Me: Inam Went To My House, I Didn't Tell Her That I Lied Bout Her

Lutho: Damn! Sorry Bbe

Me: I Hope Dad Ain't Too Mad

Lutho: Even If He's Mad, He'd Never Kill You

Me: I Hope So

Lutho: You'll Be Fine Bbe

He Rubbed His Hand Against Mine,I Looked At Him And Smiled

Me: Thanks Bb-

The Back Window Shattered Into Pieces

Lutho: SHIT!

He Pushed Hard On The Pedals And The Car Sped Away Like It Was On Some Kinda Racing Competition Or Some'ing

Me: LUT- LUTHO!

Lutho: Stay Down Please

Me: THE FUCK IS GOIN-

Lutho: I SAID STAY THE FUCK DOWN!

I Got Down And Made a Short Prayer,I Was So So SCARED.The Car Kept Turning Corners And Lutho Kept Cursing While The Car And Windows Were Being Shot,I Prayed And Wished That We Both Get To My House Alive.If I Ever Got Hurt Dad Would Freak Out Or Even Kill Me Himself.

Lutho Finally Brought The Car To a Halt And I Was So Breathing Heavily

Lutho: Hey You Can Get Up Now

I Got Up And Wiped My Tears,Don't Look At Me Like That :v I Was Really Scared.

Lutho Hugged Me While He Moved His Hand Up And Down My Back,He Broke The Hug And Made Me Look At Him

Lutho: I'm Sorry

Me: What's Going On Lutho?

Lutho:.....

Me: Just Drive Me Home Please

He Started The Car And We Drove In Silence,He Parked Few Yards Away From Mine Then I Walked.I Got Home And Found Dad And Olwethu Playin' Video Games

Me: Uhhhm Hello

Dad: Olwethu Go To Your Room Or Some'ing

Olwethu: But Da-

Dad: Go!

Olwethu: Yho Okay

Olwethu Got Up And Went Up The Stairs To His Room

Me: Look Daddy I'm Sorry I Ju-

Dad: Why Didn't You Tell Me The Truth?

Me: I Was Scared You Wouldn't Want Me To Go

Dad: Of Course I Wouldn't. How Old Is This Boy That's Keepin' You Away From Home, Parkin' His Car In Front Of My House? Is He Some Sugar Daddy Or Some'ing?

Me: Daddy! No!

Dad: He Has a Car, How Old Is He?

Me:.....

Dad: Esihle!

Me: He's 21

Dad: 5 Year Difference??

Me: He's Not That Old

Dad: Esihle You Should Date Boys Your Age,He's Already Done With High School.He Owns a Car,Don't You Think He'll Manipulate You Into Thinkin' You Already Grown Up?

Me:.....

Dad: I Care Bout You Baby Okay?! And I Just Want What's Best For You,Think Bout What I Just Said,I Don't Want You To Throw Your Future Just Like That.Your Mom And I Expect a Lot From All You

Me:.....

Dad: Daddy Loves You Okay?!

He Kissed My Forehead And Walked To The Kitchen,There Was A Devine Smell Comin' From There So It Was Obvious Mom Was Cookin'.

I Walked To My Room And Bumped Into Elethu Comin' Outta Vusi's Room

Elethu: Hey

Me: Hi

Elethu: You Okay?

Me: Yeah

Elethu: You Not Fine,Did You Get Into Some Fight Witcho Boyfriend?

Me: Mxm

I Got Into My Room And Banged The Door

[05/17, 19:04] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT10

I Threw Myself On My Bed And Cried My Lungs Our,I Cried Coz I Almost Died In Lutho's Car And He Didn't Wanna Tell Me What Was Going On.I Cried Because My Dad Wanted Me To Break Up With My Boyfriend,Someone I Love Dearly.

While I Was Still Sobbin',Someone Knocked On

The Door

Me: What Do You Want?

Vusi: Open Up Please

I Got Up And Opened The Door For Him,He
Looked At Me And Just Chuckled.

Me: What's Funny?

Vusi: You Ugly When You Cryin'

Me: Tell Me One Person Who's Not

Vusi: Inam

Me: Mxm,What Do You Want?

Vusi: Before I Talk,What's Wrong Witchu?

Me: Dad Wants Me To Break Up With Lutho

Vusi: O-kay,Why?

Me: He Said He's Older Than Me

Vusi: And He's Tellin' The Truth

Me: Thank You So Much Brother,I Feel A Lot
Better -_- Get Outta My Room!

Vusi Laughed And Sat On My Bed,I Sat Next To Him.He Lied On His Back And Put His Hands Behind His Head,I Knew Some'ing Was Wrong With Him

Me: Out With It

Vusi: I Fucked Up

Me: Got Busted By Your Thousand Bitches?

Vusi: Really?

Me: The Only Thing That Stresses You Is That

Vusi: Not This Time 'round

He Exhaled And Looked At Me

Me: What??

Vusi: Inam Is Pregnan-

Me: THE FUCK?? ARE YOU KIDDIN' ME? YOU JOKIN' AYT??

Vusi: Calm The FUCK Down

Me: WHOA! SO YOU MEAN LIKE YOU

IMPREGNAT-

Vusi: Jeez! Lower Your Tone!

Me: Sorry.I'm Just Shocked,THIS IS SOME
FUCKED UP SHIT,ARE YOU GON KEE-

Vusi: I SAID LOWER YOUR TONE!

Me: Sorry Jeez

Vusi: I'm Still In Shock

Me: When Did She Tell You?

Vusi: Today

Me: Wow

Vusi: I'm Still Too Young To Be a Dad

Me: What Are You Gonna Say To Mom And Dad?

Vusi: They Don't Have To Know,We Ain't Keepin'
The Baby

Me: WHAT??

Vusi: If You Won't Be Able To Control Your
Voice,Just Shut Up!

Me: You Want Her To Abort The Baby?

Vusi: Do You Have a Better Plan?

Me: Vusi That's Not The Right Thing To Do

Vusi: I Know But I Don't Have Any Other Choice

Me: Keep The Baby

Vusi: You Want Dad To Kill Me?

Me: He Won't Kill You, He May Be Angry But He'd Never Kill You.

Vusi: I Don't Want No Baby, We Gonna Abort It

Me: You Sure That Is What You Both Want?

Vusi: What Else Would Inam Want? I Mean Like We Both Studying, Who Would Take Care Of The Baby?

I Looked At Him And Shrugged My Shoulders, Owethu Got In And Said Mom Called Us For Dinner. We All Ate Together But In Silence, Only Mom And The Twins Were Talkin'. Owethu And I Washed The Dishes Then I

Went To My Room,My Phone Rang And It Was a Call From Lutho

Call Convo

Me: What Do You Want?

Lutho: Hey Look Bbe I'm Sorry For The Incident That Went Down Earlier On

Me: The Fuck Is Going On Lutho?

Lutho:.....

Me: You Know What? You Wasted Your Airtime By Calling Me

Lutho: Okay Okay Please Don't Hang Up

Me: Talk

Lutho: Can We Meet Up Tomorrow?

Me: For What? Lutho You Don't Wanna Tell Me Everything,I'm Starting To Think I Don't Even Know The Real You

Lutho: Let's Meet Up Tomorrow,I'll Tell You Errthing

Me: Where?

Lutho: At My House

Me: Think Of Somewhere Else

Lutho: We'll Talk In My Car Then Few Blocks
Away From Your House

Me: Cool

I Hung Up And Tried To Drift Away To Sleep But
I Kept Having Flashbacks Of What Went Down
In Lutho's Car.I Texted Inam And Asked To
Meet Up With Her In The Afternoon,We Needed
To Talk.

I Finally Fell Asleep,I Woke Up The Following
Day And Made My Daily Routine.Dad And Mom
Left For Work,The Twins Went To Uncle
Bonga's Place For The Day So It Was Just Me
And Vusi In The House.Inam Got In While We
Were Watching T.V

Vusi: I'll Be In My Room If You'll Need Me

Inam: Hello Esihle,Hi Vusi

Vusi: Yeah

Me: I Need To Talk To Both Of You

Vusi: I'm Not Up For This Conversation

Me: I Promise It Won't Take Long

Vusi Sat Down, So Did Inam.

Me: Uhhm I Know I'm Still a Virgin And I Know No'ing Bout Sex But Guys What Did You Think Will Happen When You Had Sex Without A Condom?

Vusi: You Serious?

Me: I'm Dead Serious

Vusi: You Know What? I'm Not Up For This

He Got Up From The Couch

Me: If You Dare Leave, I'll Tell Mom And Dad Bout The Pregnancy And That You Wanna Abort The Baby

Vusi: You Wouldn't Dare

Me: Try Me

He Sat Down Again

Me: Now Will You Answer My Question?

Vusi: Just Say Whatchu Wanna Say And Stop
Beatin' By The Bushes

Me: Okay...You'll Keep The Baby An-

Vusi: That's Not Your Decision To Make

Me: And Raise It Together As The Parents

Vusi: You Should Consider Comedy As Your
Second Option

He Got Up

Me: If You Abort It,I'll Tell Mom And Dad
Everything

Vusi And Inam: WHAT??

Vusi: Is This Some Kinda Prank Or Some'ing
Coz If It Is Then It Ain't Funny

Me: I'm Serious

Vusi: Since When Do You Make Decisions For Us?

Me: Since A Lil Soul Is Involved,Vusi You Don't Even Know What That Child Might Become.You Gonna Keep It Or I'll Tell The Parents Everything

Vusi: Screw You Esihle!

He Got Up And Walked To His Room,Leaving Me With a Crying Inam.I Got Up And Went To Hug Her

Inam: I Thought He Loved Me

Me: Shhhhh Baby

Inam: How Could He Want Me To Kill His Baby? Our Baby?

Me: He'll Come Round

After Comforting Inam,She Left With a smile On Her Face Coz I Tried My Best To Make Her Smile.Lutho Called Me And Said He Was Waiting For Me,I Took My Phone And Walked

To Where He Said He Was.He Was Driving a Different Car

Lutho: Hey Beautiful

Me: Now Are You Ready To Talk? You Only Have 4 Minutes

Lutho: No Hallo Or I Missed You Kiss?

Me: The Clock Is Tickin

Lutho: Okay Cool But Please Don't Freak Out When I Tell You This

Me: 2 Minutes Left

Lutho: C'mon Bbe Don't Be Like That

Me: 1 And 40 Seconds

Lutho: Okay....Few Years Back At High School,Anga And I Got Into Trouble With Some Guy.He Said In Order For Him To Be Cool With Us ,We Had To Join His Crew

Me: Crew?

Lutho: He Sold Guns,Stolen Cars,Knives And

Had Few Enemies Round Town. Anga And I Only Had To Spy On His Enemies Back Then But As Years Went By, He Gave Us Better Jobs To Do Like Selling The Cars Or Guns

Me: WHOA WHERE IS THIS ALL GOING??

Lutho: He Took Us Under His Shoulder And Showed Us Errthing He Did, Every Deal He Made, Every Enemy He Had And Everything Bout The Crew. So When He Died, There Had To Be Someone To Take His Place So They Put Anga And I In Charge So Ever Since Then We've been Takin' Care Of His Empire

Me: LUTHO ARE YOU A CROOK??

Lutho: Hey Look I Was Doing What I Had To Do

Me: YOU'RE A DAMN GANGSTER LUTHO!

Lutho: A Gangster That Loves You

[05/18, 12:40] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT11 ❖❖

The Fuck???? :o

Me: Is That Supposed To Make Me Feel Better?

Lutho:.....

Me: I Can't Believe This,WHY DIDN'T YOU TELL ME THIS AT FIRST LUTHO? YOU DIDN'T TELL ME THE KINDA PERSON YOU REALLY ARE.I HATE,I HATE YOU

I Hit His Chest While Crying,I Hated Him For Not Opening Up To Me.He Let Me Fall In Love With Him First,Waited For Some Gangsters To Shoot His Car While He Was With Me Before He Told Me Bout The Real Him :(I Opened The Door To Leave But He Grabbed Me By My Arm And Pulled Me Back Then Locked All The Doors

Me: Lutho Let Go Of Me!

Lutho: Esihle Please Lemme Explain

Me: EXPLAIN WHAT? THAT YOU SOME THUG WHO SELL STOLEN CARS AND GUNS??

Lutho:.....

Me: I Can't Even Look At You Ayt Now

Lutho: Baby Look I Didn't-

Me: You Didn't What??

Lutho: ESIHLE JUST LISTEN FOR ONCE!

O-W-K-Y I Kept Quiet And Looked At Him With My Wet Eyes,He Got Closer To Wipe The Tears Off My Eyes But I Backed Away.

Lutho: Esihle I Love You Believe Me I Do

Me:.....

Lutho: I Won't Say I Didn't Choose This Life Myself Coz I Did But It Doesn't Have To Stand In The Way Of Our Love

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle Please Say Some'ing

Me: Lutho I Just Wanna Go Home Please

Lutho: I Can't Let You Go Like This,We Have To

Fix This Before I Let You Go

Me: And If We Don't?

Lutho: Then We'll Stay Here All Day

Me:.....

I Wiped My Tears And Sniffed

Lutho: I Hate Seeing You Like This

Me:.....

Lutho: Sugar Boom Boom

Me:.....

Lutho: Bbe C'mon For How Long Are You Gonna Stay Mad At Me?

Me:.....

Lutho: I See I'll Be The Only One Doing The Talking. Look Esihle, I Love You Kay?! And I Want Nothing More Than Being Witchu, I Know The Life That I'm Living Ain't The Best Life And It Is Too Dangerous But I'd Do Anything To Protect You Coz I Love You

-
-
-
-
-

Two Weeks Passed,I Ignored Lutho's Calls And Messages.He Called And Texted Me Errrday But I Just Ignored Him Completely .

It Was Time To Go Back To School And I Was More That Ready To,Inam Made a Blood Pregnancy Test To Be Sure Before They Tell The Parents But It Turned Out That The Home Pregnancy Test Lied So Vusi And Her Were So Happy To Find Out That They Weren't Pregnant,I Was Happy Too Coz I Wasn't Ready To Be An Aunt.

So This Morning I Woke Up And Went To Take a Bath,Mom Got Into My Room While I Was Lotioning

Mom: Morning Daddy's Princess

Me: So I Ain't Yours?

Mom: The Way I'm So Not Paid Attention To,I
Doubt You're

Me: You My Mom,I'd Never Stop Lovin' You

Mom: Ncoah I'm Glad To Hear That My
Baby,Your Sister Wants You To Do Her Hair

Me: Is She Bathed Yet?

Mom: She's Still Bathing

She Sat On My Bed And Looked At Me

Mom: Esihle

Me: Yes Mom

Mom: What's Wrong Witchu Baby?

Me: No'ing Ma Why?

Mom: You've Been Distant Lately,You Lock
Yourself In Your Room,You Don't Eat Dinner Or
Breakfast With Us

Me: I'm Okay Ma

Mom: I Know You're Too Close Witcho Father
But I'm Your Mother Too,I Need To Know
What's Going On Witcho Life

Me: I'm Really Okay Ma,I Just Wanna Be Alone

Mom: Is Some Boy Givin' You Problems?

Me: No!

Mom: Do I Know Him?

Me: Lemme Go And Check Up On Owethu

Mom: You Know Where To Find Me When You
Ready To Talk

Me: Yes Mom I Know,Thanks.

I Finished Gettin' Dressed Then Went To
Owethu's Room To Do Her Hair,When I Was
Done,We All Went To Eat Breakfast Together.

Mom Drove The Twins To School While Dad
Drove Vusi And I,We Were In Different Schools
With The Twins And Mom's Way To Work

Passed Next To Their School So That's Why She Drove Them To School.

We Arrived At The School Gate Then Dad Gave Us Money For Lunch Even Though Mom Made Lunchboxes For Us Besides For Vusi Coz He Didn't Want It.I Kissed Dad's Cheek,Vusi Fist Bumped With Him Then We Walked To School.Inam Came Runnin' To Us Screaming,She Hugged With Vusi Then They Had a Brief Kiss

Me: So Now It's Official?

Vusi: Mind Your Own Business Bitch

Me: Mxm

Inam: Hello Bbe

Me: Hey My Love

Inam: Finally We're Back To School Yeapy!

Vusi: You Happy? Damn You Girls Are Weird,I Gotta Bounce.I'll See You Two Later

Me: Bye Big Bro

Inam: Bye

She Blew Him a Kiss And Vusi Smiled And Walked Away

Me: I See Some People Worked Out Their Issues

Inam: We're Tryin Our Best To Keep It Together

Me: You Love Too Much,If I Was You I Would Have Left Vusi's Ass a Long Time Ago

Inam: I Hate Myself For Lovin' Him Too Much Too Sometimes.Enough Bout Me And Vusi,How Are Things Between You And Bhut' Luu?

I Looked Down And Didn't Say Anything

Inam: Bbe What's Wrong?

Me: Lutho Ain't The Person I Thought He Was

Inam: Meaning?

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout It

Inam: When Last Did You See Him?

Me: Two Weeks Ago

Inam: WHAT? ARE YOU FOR REAL??

Me: Lower Your Voice Marn

Inam: What Happened?

Me: Inam Please I Don't Wanna Talk Bout This

Inam: Sorry Then,I Hope You Okay Or You
Gonna Be

Me: I'm Fine

We Walked To The Assembly And After The
Prayers We Went To Register Class,A Learner
From The Grade 10 Classes Got Into Our Class
And Went To Talk To The Teacher

Teacher: Esihle Morena

Me: Yes Mam

Teacher: You Are Called At The Principal's
Office

Me: Yes Mam

I Got Up And Walked To The Office,On The Way
I Kept Thinking Bout Things I Fucked Up At
School Whether I Messed Up Or What.

I Got Into The Office

Me: Morning Sir

Principal: Morning Esihle,Your Cousin Brother Is
Here To Give You The Book You Left At Home

Me: My Cousin Brother?

Voice: I Found The Bathroom,Thank You Sir

Me: Lutho?!

Lutho: Ohh I Came To Give You The Book You
Left At Home

I Just Looked At Him And Didn't Say
Anything,He Handed Me A Geography Grade 11
Textbook

Me: Thanks

Lutho: My Pleasure (Looks At Principal) Thank

You Again Sir

Principal: You're Welcome Sir

Lutho Walked Out With Me,When We Were Outside I Threw The Book At Him

Me: THE FUCK IS WRONG WITCHU??

Lutho: Hey Look I Wanted To See You

Me: And You Thought Of Doing This??

Lutho: You Wouldn't Take My Calls Or Text Me Back

Me: COZ I DIDN'T WANNA TALK TO YOU
LUTHO!

Lutho: Okay I Wanted To Tell You This Face To Face,I'm Going

Me: What Do You Mean You Going?

Lutho: Anga And I Are Taking The Business Somewhere Else

Me: You Leaving For Good? :'(

Lutho: Yeah

[05/18, 12:41] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship
And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT12

Crop_Top

I Had A Mini Heart Attack For Few Seconds Ayt
There On The Spot

Me: You Serious?

Lutho: I'm Sorry But Yeah

Me: Ohhh

I Looked Down

Lutho: Look I Hope We Meet Again In The
Future

Me: Can't I Make You Stay?

Lutho: You Want Me To?

Me: Can I See You Before You Go?

Lutho: Yeah Sure....Look I Gotta Bounce,I'll See You When You Wanna Meet Up With Me

Me: Kay

He Kissed My Forehead Then Walked Away

Me: I Love You

He Turned And Looked At Me,He Smiled And Walked Back To Me

Lutho: And I Love You Too Sugar Boom Boom

Me: I Missed You

Lutho: But Not More Than I Did,Those Two Weeks Were Pure Torture.You Know How To Make Someone's Life a Living Hell Sweetie

Me: I Was Confused

Lutho: I Know.Hey Look You Have To Go Back To Class,Can I Pick You Up After School?

Me: Uhhhm Kay.I'll Tell Dad That I Had To Go Somewhere

Lutho: Deal Then,Go Back To Class Now.Don't

Wantchu To Lose a Lesson Coz Of Me

Me: Bye

He Kissed My Cheek Then Went To His Car While I Went To My Class. The Lesson Had Already Started In Class But I Wasn't That Behind, I Sat Down And Tried To Concentrate But Lutho's Leave Always Resurfaced In My Mind.

Inam: You Okay?

Me: Yeah Why?

Inam: What Did You Do To Be Called To The Principal's Office?

Me: Guess What? Lutho Lied And Said He's My Cousin Brother, He Brought Me A Geography Textbook That I Left At Home. He Even Had A Grade 11 Textbook On His Hand, I Wonder Where He Got It

Inam: This Guy Really Loves You

Me: He's A G-

Inam: What?

Me: He's A He's A Guy And I Don't Trust
Guys,Look At Vusi He Can't Even Keep You
Happy For a Month Without Fuckin' Up

Inam: They Are Also People,They Make
Mistakes

Me: Mistakes Everyday??

Inam: Bottom Line Is,That Guy Loves You.

Me: We'll See Bout That

We Shifted Our Attention Back To The Teacher
And Listened,The Lesson. Wasn't Bad Nor Hard
So We Easily Caught Up.The Day Went By And It
Was Finally Break Time,I Had Lunch With Inam
But Vusi Had To Invade Our Friendship Time
And Steal Inam :) But I Was Happy Hey Coz He
Finally Gave His Attention To Her And Gave Her
The Time She Needed.

So I Was Just That Lonely Girl,Philela Came To
Me With Two Of Her Side Kicks

Philela: We're Back To School Now

Me: So?

Philela: I Don't Easily Forgive And Forget,Remember That Night I Was At Your Place

Me: You Mean That Night You Went To My Place To Only Be Fucked By Vusi? If You Talkin' Bout That Night Then Yeah I Remember So What Is It Bout That Night?

I Could See Her Fuming With Anger,She Released A Slap Across My Face And I Backslapped Her.

Philela: You Think You Can Win A Fight With Me? Bitch You Fought Back To The Wrong Person

Me: And I Think You Also Picked The Wrong Person To Have a Fight With

Philela: Haha Ohh? You Just a Fly That I Can Squash In a Second Dear

Me: All You Do Is Talk Talk

She Pushed Me,I Fumbled But Got On My Feet Again And Slapped Her.She Threw Slaps At Me But I Just Threw Punches,She Fell On The Ground And I Got On Top Of Her.She Pulled Me By My Hair,I Threw A Fire Burning Slap And She Screamed Like The Bitch She Was.I Kept Slapping And Punching Her While She Screamed Under Me,Someone Pulled Me Up

Vusi: The Fuck Is Going On?

Inam: Esihle Are You Mad?

Vusi Pulled Philela Up While Inam Looked At Me With Those 'Are You Crazy Eyes' Yeah Philela Was The Head Girl Whatsoever So There Was Gonna Be Some Punishment Or Some'ing

Philela: She She She Attacked Me

THE FUCK???

I Turned And Saw Philela Cryin' While The Principal Stood Next To Her

Principal: To My Office NOW!

I Pulled Myself From Inam's Grip And Walked To The Principal's Office,Philela Was Walkin' Behind Me

Philela: I Hope You Know You Gonna Get The Most Severe Punishment For Beating Up The Head Girl

Me: I Hope You Know I Ain't Scared Of Rearranging Your Ugly Face Ayt Now

She Kept Quiet And Looked At Me

Me: Bitch I Told You To Pick Someone Your Size,You People Just Lower Your Dignities Yourselves Just Coz Of Your Attention Seekin' Tendencies

We Got To The Office And Sat Down,The Principal Got In And Sat On His Chair.

Principal: Miss Philela You're The Head Girl But You Get Involved In Fights

Philela: She Started The Fight

Principal: The Pupils Who Saw You Two Say

YOU Started The Fight

Philela: They Are Lying Sir She Just Attacked Me

Principal: Why Would She Attack You?

Philela: Coz She Hates Me Just Like Everyone In This School,Almost Every Learner Around Here Hates Me :'(

Me: Haha Shame Have You Always Wondered Why They Hate You?

Philela: Because I'm The Head Girl Duh!

Principal: And You Miss Morena What Did I Say Bout Fight Here Inside The School's Premises?

Me: She Started The Fight So Why Wouldn't I Finish It When I Could,I Have A Reputation To Maintain Sir

Principal: I Want To See Your Parents Here Tomorrow,Early In The Morning

Me: Yes Sir

Ohhh Yeapy! I Was More Than Happy To Tell Dad That I Roughed Up Some Girl At School.I Knew He Was Just Gonna Be Happy And Cheer Up For Me.The Rest Of The Day Was Okay,I Called Lutho To Pick Me Up And Told Dad That I Was Going To The Mall ALONE.

He Picked Me Up And We Drove To His House,He Poured Us Some Drink And We Sat On The Couch

Lutho: So Am I Forgiven?

Me: Maybe

Lutho: Come Here

We Kissed,One Thing Led To Another.I Took Off His Jacket Myself,He Took Off My Blazer.The Next Thing We Were Both Butt Naked

Lutho: You Sure You Want This

I Looked At Him And Nodded,He Took Out a Condom From His Wallet And Slid It On.He Pecked My Forehead Them My Lips

Lutho: It's Gonna Hurt

Me: Then I'm Changing My Mind

Lutho: I'll Be Gentle

We Kissed Again,He Slowly Got In Between My Legs,He Tried To Get In But Dololo.He Tried Again And Finally Slid In HALLELUJAH! :'(

I Literally Cried,He Went In And Out Slowly And Finally Uppered His Pace,It Was Like He Was Taking Too Much Time Before He Reached His Climax.He Finally Got Off Me And Lied Next To Me

Lutho: I Love You Bbe

[05/18, 12:43] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT13

I Was Dying Of The Pain I Was Feeling Down There

Lutho: Baby?

Me: uHm?

Lutho: I Love You Kay?! And I'm Sorry

I Just Nodded

Lutho: Let's Go And Bath

Me: Can I Rest For A Lil While?

Lutho: Baby You Know You Still Have To Go
Back Home Ayt?!

Me: What Time Is It?

He Looked For His Phone

Lutho: 14:30

Me: We'll Bath At 3

Lutho: Okay Then,Want Us To Cuddle?

Me: How Can I Cuddle When I'm a Pain Bomb

Lutho: Haha Sorry Bbe

I Just Looked At Him And Smiled,He Wrapped
His Arm 'round Me And Kept Planting Kisses On

My Cheeks, Neck And Bare Chest.

I Slowly Drifted To Sleep On The Couch, When I Woke Up It Was 15:15 And There Was A Fleece Covering Me. Lutho Wasn't 'round But There Was a Devine Smell Comin' From The Kitchen, I Took The Fleece And Covered Myself With It Coz I Was Still Nude. I Walked To The Kitchen And Found Lutho On The Pots, Hot And Shirtless

Lutho: Staring Is Rude You Know?

Me: Why Didn't You Wake Me Up At 3?

Lutho: You Were Just Sleepin' Peacefully, I Didn't Wanna Disturb You

Me: So Watchu Cookin'?

Lutho: You'll See When I'm Done. I've Already Bathed, Should I Run You Your Bath?

Me: Yes Thank You Sir

Lutho: Don't Go All Formal With Me, Come Here
He Wrapped His Arms 'round My Waist And We

Had A Not So Short Kiss Then Lutho Went To Run Me My Bath.

I Took My Clothes And Followed Him,I Took The Bath Then Got Back To My School Uniform.I Folded The Fleece And Put It On His Bed Then Found Him Dishing Up

Me: That Smells So Good For Macaroni

Lutho: I Used To Cook With My Mom So I Stole Her Recipes

Me: You Are Way Too Fond Of Your Mom

Lutho: She's The Only Person Who Understands Me But I'm Sure They'll Be Two Of Those Now

Me: Ohh? :)

Lutho: Yes And The Other One Is Lookin' At Me Ayt Now,Blushin' (Pecking My Lips)

Me: You Makin' Me Blush

He Picked Me Up And Put Me On The Counter Then Took The Plate He Dished On And One

Fork Then Stood In Between My Legs.

Me: We Both Gonna Eat From That Same Plate?

Lutho: Haha Sorry I Forgot That You Got My Appetite,I'll Dish Up Again If We Ain't Full.

Me: And I'm So Not Gonna Be Full

We Both Laughed,He Kept Feeding Me And Himself At The Same Time Or Give The Fork To Me To Feed Him.

Me: Uhhhm Are You Still Leavin'?

Lutho:.....

He Cleared His Throat And Went To Stand Next To The Pot

Lutho: Should I Dish Up For You Again?

Me: Nhaa I'm Cool

Lutho: Ohh

He Put The Plate In The Sink Then Put Me Down From The Counter.

Lutho: Let's Go To The Lounge

Me: Cool

My Heart Was Sobbin' On It's Own Coz From His Facial Expression,I Knew He Was Still Leaving :(:(We Got To The Lounge And Sat Down,He Held My Hands And Looked At Me

Lutho: You Know I Love You Ayt?!

Me: Uhhhm Yeah

Lutho: And I'd Never Stop Lovin' You

Me:..... :(

Lutho: Hey Hey Look I Know This Is Gonna Be Hard On You But I Have To Do It

Me:..... :(:(

Lutho: Come Here

He Hugged Me So Tight Then Wiped My Tears

Lutho: So You Did What You Did Today To Make Me Stay?

I Looked Away And Just Cried And Didn't Answer Him.WASN'T IT BLATANT?? :(

Lutho: What You Did Means A Lot To Me And I'd Never Forget It

Me:.....

Lutho: Baby Today You Showed Me How Much You Love Me,Not Everyone Would Do This.Some People Would Say You Easy Or Some'ing But I See Your Intentions And I'll Forever Be Grateful For What You Did But-

I Just Started Cryin' All Over Again,Lutho Wiped My Tears And Pecked My Lips

Lutho: We Don't Have To End Our Relationship Just Coz I'm Leavin',I'll Call You Everyday All The Time

Me: Lutho That's Not Enough

Lutho: I Know But That Is The Only Option I Have Ayt Now.Okay Then I'll Come And See You On Holidays

Me: That's Still Not Enough

Lutho: Baby C'mon

Me: It's Fine Leave Lutho, Leave Me Alone With No One To Love

Lutho: Baby That's Not Fair

Me: But That's Exactly Whatchu Gonna Do

Lutho: Baby C'mon Let's Spend Our Last Hours Together In Peace And Enjoy Them

Me: What Do You Mean HOURS?

Lutho: Uhhm We're Going Tomorrow

Me: Wow

Lutho: I'm Sorry

Me: Mxm Lutho Just Drive Me Home

Lutho: Can We At Least Part Ways Smiling?

Me: What's There To Smile Bout?

Lutho: Our Love And The Fact That I Love You So Much And You Love Me Back

Me:.....

He Smashed His Lips Against Mine And I Ended Up Indulging In That Heart Warming Kiss.Even Though I Was Still Mad And Hurt,Lutho's Kiss Had It's Way To My Heart.

Lutho: Let's Make Some Time Table For Our Day Calls

Me: You Crazy

Lutho: I'm Serious.Monday I'll Be The One Callin',Tuesday It's Gonna Be You,Wednesday Back To Me,Thursday You,Friday Me,Saturday You Then Sunday We'll Both Call

Me: Haha Bbe That's The Dumbest Thing I've Ever Heard

Lutho: I'm Glad You Finally Smiled

He Held My Hands

Lutho: We Gonna Make This Work Kay?!

Me: I Hope So

Lutho: We Will Trust Me

Me: Okay Okay,I Have To Go Now

Lutho: The Way I'm Enjoyin' Your Company I
Almost Forgot That You Have To Go

We Both Got Up Then He Picked My School Bag
And Held It By Himself,We Walked To The Car
And He Drove Me Home.Before I Went Out,We
Had Our Last Long Kiss Then He Pecked My
Forehead And Both Cheeks.I Wished I Could
Leave With Him :(I Got Outta The Car And
Walked To My House,The Rents Went Back So I
Went To My Room And Changed To A Simple
Dress.The Way My "Down There" Was Hurtin',I
Wouldn't Even Be Able To Wear a Jean Or
Some'ing.I Went To Start Cookin' Dinner But My
Mind Wasn't There,I Really Wished I Could
Leave With Lutho But Then Again "Grass Ain't
Always Greener On The Other Side".

I Finished Cooking Then Dished Up For Errone,I
Put Mom And Dad's Food In The Warmer Then

Went To My Room And Slept.The Following Day
I Woke Up With A Message From Lutho

"Morning Sugar Boom Boom XOX I Hope You
Slept Well Unlike Me,I Couldn't Sleep Knowing
That Imma Be Leavin' You Today :(Look Just
Always Know That I Love You And Only You No
Matter What You'll Always Have My Heart.

And Hey Don't Forget The Calling Time Table
I Love You Sugar Boom Boom"

I Couldn't Hold My Tears No More,I Just Let
Them Stream Down My Face.When I've Had
Enough Crying,I Texted Him Back Then Went To
Take A Long Soothing Bath.I Found The Family
Already Eating Breakfast

Mom: Finally Someone Joins Us For Breakfast

Me: I'm a Member Of The Family Too Mom

Dad: We Got A Message From Your Principal
Asking Us To Go To School Today For Some
Meeting,Care To Explain?

Vusi: Haha She Rearranged Some Girl's Face

Me: You Mean Your 'GIRLFRIEND'S FACE'?

Mom: INAM???

Me: By Now Mom You Should Know That Vusi Doesn't Have One Girlfriend

Mom: Last Time I Checked He Was Dating Only With Inam

Vusi: Philela Is My Ex

Owethu: So You Talkin' Bout That Ugly Chick He Brought Here The Night The Rents Were Away?

Mom: VUSI?!!

Vusi: It Was A Once Off Thingy Ma

Mom: And You Esihle, Since When Are You Allowed To Fight At School?

Dad: Since Her Father Couldn't Wait For His Daughter To Rough Up Some Faces. High Five My Princess

Dad And I High Five While Mom Shooked Her

Head In Disbelief. We Finished Eating Then Mom Gave Us Our Lunchboxes And Dad Drove Us To School, He Also Went To The Principal's Office. I Went To Inam And We Hugged And Kissed Each Other's Cheeks

Inam: So What's New Today?

Me: I'm Not Sealed Anymore

Inam: WHOA WHAT????

Me: Yeah Lutho Opened The Package

Inam: You Really Love This Guy Hey

Me: But He's Leaving Today

Inam: Leaving? What Does That Mean?

Me: That I'll Only See Him On Holidays Or Never See Him Again

Inam: Now That's Fucked Up

Me: I Know Hey :(

Inam: Come Here

She Hugged Me,A Grade 10 Learner Came To Us Holding a White Envelope With a Red Button

Me: I Didn't Know That My Brother Could Be So Romantic

Inam: Maybe It's Yours Bitch

The Kid: Some Guy Named Litha Said I Should Give You This (Lookin' At Me)

Me: Litha? You Mean The Grade 12 Litha?

The Kid: Yeah That Litha

Me: O-W-K-Y

Inam: Open It Already

I Opened It,There Was a Letter Inside And A Heart Shaped Sweet

"Hey Esihle Morena.Uhnm I Know You Prolly Shocked To Get A Letter From Me While We've Only Talked When We Both Got Late In Our Classes And Were Waiting For Our Punishment In The Principal's Office"

I Just Laughed Coz That Day Was Really Fucked
Up

Inam: So You Two Have Talked?

Me: Jeah Kinda

"Ever Since That Day I've Been Checking You
Out Everyday Day Here At School And Ohhh You
Really Roughed Up Philela Yesterday.Lemme
Not Beat By The Bushes

CAN YOU GO WITH ME TO THE MATRIC
DANCE??

Thank You In Advance,I Hope My Offer Won't Be
Turned Down"

[05/18, 12:51] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT14◆◆

I Just Smiled To Myself As I Kept Imagining
Litha Sayin' What He Wrote Right In Front Of
Me,He Had a Cute Voice And He Was A Great
Guy In Every Possible Way.He Wasn't Every
Girl's Dream Guy But He Had This "Take Me In
And I'll Rock Your World" Kinda Look

Inam: You Smiling

Me: So?

Inam: It's Only Been Hours Since Lutho Left

Me: So?

Inam: Do You Love Lutho?

Me: Of Course Inam You Know I Do

Inam: Then You Won't Go To The Matric Ball
With Litha

Me: What? Why?

Inam: Coz You Love Lutho

Me: What's That Supposed To Mean?

Inam: That You May Fall For This Guy Then
What About Lutho?

Me: It's Just Some Silly Matric Dance Inam Not
Like We're Going To His House To Be Alone

Inam: But I Sense Some Disaster Brewing

Me: You Sense Too Much

I Took The Letter And Put It In My Blazer, Inam
And I Went To Class. The Rest Of The Day Was
Just Okay, Dad Was Gonna Pick Us Up But He
Hadn't Arrived So I Just Stood By The Gate, Litha
Came To Me. He Stood In Front Of Me, He Was
Tall In An Adorable Way. He Was A Cute
Chocolate Bone, He Wasn't Handsome, He Was
Cute.

Litha: Hey Miss Morena

Me: Hello Litha

Litha: How Are You?

Me: I Seem To Be Good And Yourself?

Litha: Can't Complain.I Hope You Got My Letter

Me: Yeah I Did And Thanks For The Invite Bu-

Litha: I Hate Buts

Me: Haha You Haven't Even Heard What I Was Gonna Say

Litha: But Changes a Lot In a Statement

Me: I Know Hey,Look I Don't Know If I'll Be Free That Day

Litha: I'll Talk With Your Parents

Me: Haha Really? You Ain't Scared Of Them?

Litha: If They Are Nice Like You Then No

Me: So I'm Nice?

Litha: Yes You Are

Me: Okay Then Thanks.So Out Of The Thousand

Girls At This School,Why Me?

Litha: I'll Tell You On Another Day But What Imma Say Now Is That You Too Cute Not To Go To The Ball Wi-

My Phone Rang And It Was Lutho,I Asked For Few From Litha And Answered The Call

Call Convo

Lutho: Sugar Boom Boom

Me: [OBJ]:) Hey Bbe

Lutho: I Wonder What People Are Sayin' When You Smiling Like That

Me: I Have Every Reason To Smile When I'm Talkin' To You,Fuck What They Think

Lutho: Haha Ohhh,I Wanted To Tell You That I'm Gonna Arrive Where We Going In Few Hours

And I Missed Your Voice

Me: You Seem So Fond Of My Voice Hey

Litha Pointed To His Friends With His Head
Then I Nodded,He Left To Them.

I Continued Talkin' To Lutho,Dad's Car Parked In
Front Of Me Then I Said Goodbye To Lutho.I Got
In Then Vusi Got In After Me

Vusi: So You Have A New Boyfriend

Me: A New What??

Dad: I Saw Them Standing At The Gate Too
Boy,Your Sister Couldn't Stop Smiling

Me: Dad!

Dad: What? That Ain't a Bad Thing Though,That
Boy Is The Right Size,Age And Errthing For You

Me: Dad!

Dad: You Just Reminded Me The Time I Met
Witcho Mother

Vusi: I Guess She Was The 'Jt' Thing Atcho
School

Dad: Your Mom Was Dedicated To Her Studies
More Than Anything, You'd Find Her Talkin' Bout
School Stuff With Her Friends. She Was
Confident, Loud And Ohhh Her Body Was Always
On Fleek

Vusi: No'ing Changed Hey And Her Body Now
Seems To Be So On Fleek Like Never Before, So
Pops Make Sure She Doesn't Leave Your Sight
Or Some Wolf Might Snatch Her

Dad: Boy No One Would Take Your Mom From
My Grip That Woman Is Mine

Me: You So Sure

Dad: Coz I Know

Me: So Tell Us, How Did You Approach Her?

Dad: I Was The Throb At School So I Had This

'No Girl Could Say No To This' Thought

Me: He's Really Your Father Vusi

Vusi: I Even Take From You The Silliest Things Ever

Dad: You My Son You Had To

Me: You Were Still Tellin' Us Bout You And Mom

Dad: So I Went To Her And Tried To Do My Magic,Eish! She Turned Me Down So Hard That My Friends Laughed At Me For The Whole Week

Vusi: So How Did You Finally Got Her?

Dad: I Went To Practice My Magic And Boom She Couldn't Resist It The Second Time I Went To Her.I Took Her Out For Some Chips

Vusi And I: Haha Chips Dad??

Dad: Hey We Lived In An Era Different From Yours

Vusi: Yho

Dad: One Thing Led To Another Then Your Mom

And I Were Officially Dating

Vusi: But That Didn't Stop You From Lookin' For Other Skirts

Dad: I Was Still Young Back Then Son And I Was Still Confused And Didn't Know What I Wanted

Me: Mom Said You Cheated On Her Several Times

Dad: And I Almost Lost Her Coz Of That But That Woman Held Me Down No Matter What

Vusi: You One Lucky Dude

Dad: You Can Say That Again.....So Princess What's His Name?

Me: Who?

Vusi: His Name Is Litha,He's Doing Grade 12,He's Some Smart Ass So When Did You Two Started Dating?

Me: We Not Dating

Dad: But?

Me: He Asked Me To Go To The Ball With Him

Dad: And I Hope You Said Yes

Me: Dad!

Dad: He's Son In Law Material

Vusi: The Old Man Is Now Moving Too Fast

Dad: You've Been Dating For Years Now,It's Time For Your Sister To Fall In Love Too

Vusi: So Is That A Go Ahead To Her?

Dad: Maybe

Me: Mom Would Kill You If She'd Hear This

Dad: It's Not Like She Wasn't Young When I Made Her Mine

Talking And Talking With Dad Was Just Great [OBJ]:v [OBJ]:) We Found The Twins And Mom Watching T.V

Dad: My Wife

Mom: My Baby

She Got Up And They Pecked Each Other's Lips

Owethu And Olwethu: Euuuuw!

Dad: Don't Act Like You Won't Do This

Owethu: I As Owethu Morena Won't Shame
Daddy

Olwethu: The Way You So Forward,I'm Sure
You'll Be The First To Do It

Vusi: Mom I'm Hungry,What Are We Eating? And
Ohh Esihle Got a Boyfriend At School

Me: Vusi!

Mom: Ohh?

Dad: He'll Be Takin' Her To The Matric Dance

Mom: We Should Start Lookin' For Your Outfit
Soon

Me: Not You Two Mom!

Dad: You Should Invite Him Over For Dinner
Tomorrow

GREAT! [OBJ]-_-

[05/18, 12:52] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT15

I Just Looked At Them And Shooked My
Head, They Were Not Being For Real Ayt There
Or Were They? [OBJ]:/ I Got To My Room And
Changed To My Sweater, Long Sleeved T-shirt

And Sneakers.I Took Out My Books And Threw Them On My Study Table,Vusi Got In And Threw Himself On My Bed

Me: You Should Have Asked Mom And Dad To Not Separate Us And Let Us Sleep In The Same Bedroom

Vusi: There Are Big Things You Don't Have To See

Me: You Treat My Bedroom Like It's Your Own

Vusi: It's Your Bedroom,What's There To Hide?

Me: How Bout Errrthing?

Vusi: Mxm....(Sits Up Straight) So Are You And Litha Dating?

Me: No!

Vusi: Then What's up Witchu Two?

Me: Like I Told You Before,He Just Wants Me To Be His Date

Vusi: And?

Me: And What?

Vusi: Are You Gonna Go With Him Or What?

Me: I Don't Know

Vusi: He's Not a Bad Guy And Dad Sees Him As His Future Son In Law

Me: Dad Is Too Forward

I Threw Myself Next To Vusi And Took My Phone And Texted Lutho

Vusi: Mom Wants To See Him Too

Me: The Fuck?

Vusi: Seems Like Lutho's Gonna Lose A Girlfriend

Me: Mxm

I Took a Pillow And Threw It At Him But He Ducked

Vusi: I Got Six Invites To The Matric Dance

Me: The Fuck?? Six??

Vusi: Yeah And Damn All Those Chicks Are Hot

Me: Vusi!

Vusi: What?

Me: Don't Forget That This Is The Last Chance Inam Gave You

Vusi: Arg Don't Remind Me

Me: You Gonna Lose Her Forever

Vusi: I'm Just Gonna Go With One Chick Lil Sis, Tap And Leave

Me: Someone Wants To Lose A Real Girl Over Some Fling

Vusi: I Hate You

Me: You'll Thank Me One Day

Owethu Got In

Vusi: Don't You Know How To Knock?

Me: As If You Knock

Vusi: What Is It Lil Sis?

Owethu: Mxm I Didn't Come Here For You Vusi

Vusi: I Hope You Know I Can Whip Your Ass
And Still Enjoy My Evening

Owethu: The Way You And Olwethu Use That
Line All The Time,It's Starting To Bore The Hell
Outta Me

Vusi: I'm Sure You Have Hell In You,The Way
You Don't Love Going To Church I Wouldn't
Blame You

Owethu: Mxm

Vusi: Haa I Murdered You So Now Are You Ready To Answer Me?

Owethu: Big Sis Dad Said I Should Tell You That We're Eating Out So Wear Something Decent Coz We'll Be Going In A Few

Vusi: And What Bout Me?

Owethu: Mxm

Owethu Just Looked At Him And Left,I Couldn't Stop Laughing,My Siblings Were Really Crazy.I Changed To A Not That Short Dress,Sandals And A Jacket Then Took My Phone.Vusi And I Walked To The Lounge And Found Errone Already Gettin' Their Stuff So We Could Go.

We Were Gonna Use The Family Car So Dad Looked For The Keys,We Locked The House And Turned On The Alarms And Left.

We Went To Some Restaurant And Found a Family Table

Mom: So Vusi Got Any Invites To The Matric Ball Too?

Me: Can You Believe It Ma? He Got Six Already

Vusi: Hey I Didn't Ask To Be More Good Lookin' Than You

Me: Mxm

Dad: So Found That One Girl You Gonna Go With?

Vusi: Not Yet,Dad They Are All Hot

Mom: Make Sure You Don't Hurt Inam In The Process

Me: That's What I Told Him Too

Dad: Let's Order Already,I'm Hungry

We Looked Through Our Menus To Look For What We Gonna Eat,We Finally Made Our Offers.While Waiting For Our Food,Some Guy

Got In Talking On His Phone.He Had His Pants
Down His Butt,Half Black Military Boot And A
Sleeveless T-shirt.He Had Tattoos,He Was
Some Kinda Eye Candy.

He Went To Sit On a Single Table Then a
Waitress Went To Him,He Handed Her a Paper
Then The Waitress Left

Vusi: Hello! (Waving His Hand In Front Of Me)
He's Older Than You

Me: Who?

Vusi: You've Been Checkin' Him Since He Got In
Here

Me: Mxm

Vusi: I Smell Some Hoe In The Making

Me: Just Leave Me Alone Vusi

Vusi: O-kay

Our Food Came Then We Dug In,I Kept Checkin'
Out That Guy.He Was Making Endless Calls,The
Waitress Gave Him A Take Away Then He
Came Our Way

Dad: Menzi!

The Guy: Wow Mr Morena Hey,And Mrs Morena

Ohhhh Okay! So Dad Knows The Guy OBJo.O And
The Guy Knows Mom Too

Mom: Hello Menzi

Menzi: I See You On Some Family Dinner

Dad: Yeah You Can Join Us

Menzi: Ohh No Thank You I Have Some Work
To Get Done But Thanks For The Offer

Mom: Working Even Late At Night,You Love
Your Job Don't You?

Menzi: It's What Keeps Me Going Mam,Lemme Not Take Up Your Time.Bye

Dad: See You Round Son

Menzi: Sure Thang Taima

He Left,Okay I Was In a Relationship And I Loved Lutho But Menzi Was Those Typa Guys You Wouldn't Mind Staring At.He Wasn't That Wow But He Smiled In a Beautiful Way And He Was An Eye Catcher.

Vusi: So Who Is He?

Dad: Didn't You Hear Me Calling His Name?

Vusi: I Mean What's Your Relationship With Him?

Mom: You Don't Have To Know Errthing,Eat Your Food So We Could Go Back Home

Vusi: Yho

We All Dug In Then When We Were Done,Dad Settled The Bill And We Left.We Got Home And The Front Door Was Opened

Dad: THE FUCK??

Mom: WHAT IS GOING ON??

Vusi: Seems Like Someone Managed To Get Inside Without Even Triggering The Alarms

We All Got Off The Car And Went In The House,The T.V Was Gone,The Radio,The DVD Player Dololo.Mom Ran To The Garage And Both Of Her Cars Were Gone,I Ran To My Room And Thankfully No'ing Was Missing.Dad Went To His Study Room And No'ing Was Touched Except Some Papers

Dad: Dammit! Dammit!

Mom: WHAT NOW??

Dad: This Wasn't A Burglary,Who Ever Took Your Cars Is Someone Who Wanted Those Paper Works.The Car,T.V And Radio Stealing Thing Was Just To Cover Up What They Really Wanted

Owethu: Dad What If They Come Back? OBJ:'(

Dad: They Won't

Mom: Dammit!

Dad: Some People Just Wake Up Some Domant Beast In Someone Unnecessarily

Mom: Baby Come Down

Dad: Those Damn Papers Have Errthing That Could Destroy Me! I Have To Get Them ASAP or I Lose Err Fucken Thing I Worked For

Mom: So What Now?

Dad: I'll Call The Guys,We're Working Tonight.

Mom: Musa!

Dad: I Have No Other Choice Sisanda Dammit!

O-W-K-Y THE FUCK IS GOING ON?? Mom Took The Twins To Their Room,She Told Me And Vusi To Sleep With Them.We Were All Confused But Mom And Dad Just Didn't Wanna Talk,Vusi And I Just Kept Lookin' At Each Other As We Heard Them Shouting At Each Other Downstairs.Aunt Amanda And Her Daughter Slept Over But In The Spare Room Next To The Twins' Where We All Slept.In The Middle Of The Night,I Got Up And Walked To The Kitchen To Drink Some Water.

Mom,Dad And Uncle Bonga Got In

Uncle Bonga: It's Been A While Since I've Toasted Some Butts

Mom: We Have Children Now,We Pledged That We Won't Go Back To This Life

Dad: Those Idiots Gave Me No Choice,I Just Wonder Who Sent Them

Mom: I'm Sure It's Someone We Know....Even Though I Hate To Admit It But It Felt So Good To Feel The Weight Of a Gun Against My Hand

THE FUCK???? [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o [OBJ]o.O

Uncle Bonga: Once A Gangster,Always a Gangster.You Thought Settling Down And Takin' Care Of Your Family Would Take Away The Love You Had For That Kinda Life? Never!

Dad: I'm Just Glad I Got These Papers Back

Mom: What's In There That Is So Confidential?

Dad: Everything No One Needs To Know

Mom: Ohhhh....Lemme Go And Ckeck Up On The Kids

I Didn't Hear Mom Walking Up The Stairs,Damn!
She Got In The Kitchen.She Was So Shocked To
See Me

Mom: Esihle! You Awake

[05/18, 12:54] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT16

I Just Looked At Mom And Walked Out,She
Pulled Me Back By My Arm

Mom: Bbe Lemme Explain

Me:.....

Mom: There's A Lot You Don't Know

Me: I Wanna Sleep Ma

Mom: Please Don't Look At Me Like That Bbe

Me: I Need To Go Back To Sleep Please

I Pulled My Arm And Walked Past Dad And
Uncle Bonga Without Sayin' a Word

Dad: Princess

Me:.....

Uncle B: What's Up With Her?

Mom: Musa We Need To Talk

I Just Walked To My Room And Didn't Go Back
To The Twins' Room

"Jeez Just Imagine Finding Out That Your
Parents Are Thugs,Even Hearing Your Mom,I

Mean Like Your Own 34 Year Old Mom Saying
She Loves To Feel The Weight Of a Gun Against
Her Hand.How Fucked Up Is That??" :o :(

Dad Got In Without Knockin'

Dad: Baby

Me:.....

Dad: Princess

Me: Just Get Outta My Room! Dad

He Just Laughed And Came To Sit On The Bed
Next To Me,I Looked At Him Coz I Was
Confused Why He Was Laughing While I Was
Mad At Them

Dad: No Matter How Much You Hate Your Mom
And I Now But We'll Forever Be Your Parents

Me:.....

Dad: You Weren't Supposed To Hear What You

Heard

Me: You Gangsters Dad??

Dad: No We Just Kill To Protect What Is Ours

Me: What Difference Does That Make?

Dad: Whole Lotta Difference

Me: So Is What You Doing Written In Those Files You Were So Frustrated To Lose?

Dad: Kinda

Me: I Can't Believe This,Is The Company Even Legally Yours??

Dad: C'mon Princess How Can I Run A Business That Big Illegally?

Me: How Can You Live With Your Kids For 10 Years But Hide Something Like This From Them??

Dad:.....

Me: Exactly

Dad: Don't Worry The Business Is Legal

Me: It's Just Some Facade To Hide The Thugs
You And Mom Are

Dad: Okay Now You Crossing The Line A Lil

Me: Do You Rob Banks And Big Stores?

Dad: Go To Sleep Esihle I See You Drowsy

With That Said,He Got Up And Left.I Took My
Phone And Texted Lutho

"Guess What I Just Found Out Tonight? You
Won't Fuckin' Believe This.My Parents Are
Gangsters Too,Is This Gangster Thing In Trend
Or What? Coz It's Starting To Confuse Me,I Was
Shocked To Find Out That You're A Crook But
Babe Just Imagine Finding Out That Your
Parents Are Thugs,How Fucked Up Is Tha-"

I Just Erased All Of The Text And Threw My Phone Under My Pillow Then Tried To Drift Away To Sleep But I Couldn't.I Took My Phone And Put On My Earphones,It Rang And It Was Lutho

Call Convo

Me: Baby

Lutho: Someone's In a Good Mood

Me: If Only You Knew How Fucked Up My Mood Is Ayt Now,I'm Just Glad You Called

Lutho: You Really Missed Me Didn't You?

Me: You Don't Know How Much I Miss You Ayt Now

Lutho: What Is My Baby Doing?

Me: Just Lying On My Bed And Thinking Bout My Life And You?

Lutho: I Hope You Thinkin' Bout The Good Stuff
And Hopefully I'm Part Of Those Good Thingies

Me: Haha Jeah Ayt....Whatchu Doing?

Lutho: Was Typing Some Report But Now I'm
Taking a Break And Talkin' To My Baby

Me: Hope You Finish That Report,I Don't Want
You To Be Fired At Work Because Of Me

Lutho: At Least It Would Be You

Me: Haha Ohh?

Lutho: Go To Sleep Now,You Going To School
Tomorrow

Me: Arg Don't Remind Me

Lutho: Hey You Have To Study And Get That
Bachelor

Me: Jeah Ayt

Lutho: Good Night Sugar Boom Boom

Me: Good Night Bbe,Love You

Lutho: And I Love You Mor-

Me: Did You Really Have To Say More?

Lutho: Yes Coz I Love You More

Me: Mxm

Lutho: I Love You Too Baby

Me: But I Didn't Sa-

Lutho: We Both Know You Do

Me: You So Full Of Yourself

Lutho: Good Night Bbe

Me: Night Night

I Tried To Drift Away To Sleep And Finally Fell Asleep.I Woke Up The Following Day And Went To Take My Bath,I Wore My School Uniform And Went To The Kitchen.I Found Mom Making Breakfast,I Went To Open The Fridge And Took Out Three Fruits

Mom: Good Morning To You Too Esihle
Morena,I Slept Well Thanks For Asking Baby
Me:.....

I Took My Lunch Box And Tucked It In My
Bag,When I Was Walking Out,Dad Got In

Dad: What's The Rush?

Me: I Won't Be Eating Breakfast With You And
I'll Take A Walk To School

Mom: She's Been All Moody This Morning

Dad: Are You Still On That Last Night Issue?

Vusi: What Last Night Issue? (Gettin' In)

Dad: It's Non Your Business,Esihle Sit Down.You
Gonna Eat Breakfast With Us And I'm Gonna
Drive You And Vusi To School Like
Everyday.Don't Forget That Your Mother And I

Are Still Older Than You And We're Still Your Parents.

Me:.....

I Threw My Bag To The Floor And Sat On The Dining Table

Vusi: Yho What Did The Floor Do To You?

Me: Mxm

Olwethu: What's Up With The Sour Mood? Did Litha Say The Invitation Letter Wasn't Meant For You? (Sittin' Next To Me)

Mom: Haha I'm Sure Litha Said That

I Just Looked At Mom With The Most Diabolic Face Ever

Dad: Esihle Don't Look At Your Mom Like That

Me:.....

Vusi: It's Like She's Gonna Feast On Us For
Breakfast, Esihle Just Smile Hawu You Adding
More Ugliness To Your Face

Me: Vusi Just Leave Me Alone!

Owethu: Someone's In a Bad Mood

Dad: She'll Be Fine

Mom Gave Us Our Plates

Me: I'm Not Hungry

Vusi: I Got My Christmas Early This Year, Gimme
That Damn Plate

He Pulled The Plate And Ate From Both
Plates, When They Were Done We Went To

Dad's Car And He Drove Us To School.I Didn't Even Wait For Him To Give Us Lunch Money,I Got Outta The Car First And Besides I Didn't Want No Stolen Money [OBJ]- - [OBJ]:/ (Don't Look At Me Like That)

We Went To The Assembly Then Walked To Our Classes,I Met Up With Inam

Inam: Are You Okay?

Me: Yeah Why?

Inam: We've Been Friends For Years Now,What's Up?

Me: I Don't Know If I Wanna Go To The Ball With Litha

Inam: He Seems Like A Nice Guy

Me: Excellent! YOU Go With Him

Inam: Whoa Whoa What??

Me: I'm Sure He Wouldn't Mind Going Withchu

Inam: Whoa Whoa

Me: You Just Said It Yourself That He's A Nice Guy,Look Take This As An Opportunity To Make Sure That Vusi Doesn't Fuck Up

Inam: I Don't Like Where This Is All Going

Me: Vusi Got Six Invites Already,I'm Sure He's Gonna Take Only One.You Gonna Let Him Go Ayt?

Inam: Yeah Why Not?

Me: Good.Now You'll Go With Litha And Keep An Eye On Vusi And Besides This Will Also Be Your Chance To Spend Time Together

Inam: You Such a Witch

Me: It's a Good Idea Isn't It?

Inam: It Is But I'll Have To Think Bout It

Me: Thanks

We Went To Our Register Class,The Rest Of The

Day Was Just Fucked Up Coz I Kept Thinking Bout Mom And Dad Being Gangsters.After School Dad Said He Wasn't Gonna Pick Us Up So I Took a Taxi Home,I Still Had To Walk Coz The Rank Was A Lil Bit Far From My House So I Walked.On The Way A Car Drove Slowly Next To Me And The Window Rolled Down

Me: Hello,Menzi Ayt?

Menzi: Yeap,How Can A Beautiful Lady Like You Walk?

Me: Ohh I Took a Taxi From School So It Dropped Us At The Rank

Menzi: Hop In

Me: My House Is Two Houses Away But Thank You

Menzi: Can I Also Know You Coz You Know Me

Me: Esihle

Menzi: Nice To Know You Esihle,I Guess I'll See You 'round And Ohh Can I Have Your Number So We Can Go Out For Drinks Sometimes

Me: Dude We Don't Even Know Each Other

Menzi: You're Mr And Mrs Morena's Daughter And Your Name Is Esihle,What Else Is There To Know? And Ohhh You're Still In High School,I Think I Know All I Need To Know

Me: And The Only Thing I Know Bout You Is That You're Menzi

Menzi: What Else Do You Wanna Know?

Me: Your Surname,Whatchu Do For a Living,Your Age,Where You Stay Anything

Menzi: I'm Sure You Even Wanna Know How Many Dogs I Have,The Color Of The Underwear I'm Wearing And How Much I Make

Me: You Exaggerating Things

Menzi: Your Number

Me: Your Phone

He Handed Me His Phone And I Dialed My Number,I Gave Him His Phone Back And Walked While He Drove Next To Me.My Phone Rang

Menzi: That's My Number

Me: Calling Already?

Menzi: Wanted To Make Sure It's Your Real Number

Me: Haha Oh?

Menzi: So What Name Should I Write On Your Number?

Me: Esihle I Guess

Menzi: Beautiful Will Do

Me: Haha Ohh?

Menzi: So When Can I See You Again?

Me: I Don't Know When Do You Wanna See Me?

Menzi: Even Tonight Is Perfect For Me

Me: Tonight?

Menzi: Yeah

Me: Sorry It's Impossible To See Me Tonight

Menzi: Look I Have Work To Get To,I'll See You
'round Ayt

Me: O-kay

He Drove Away With High Speed Like He
Wanted To Kill Someone,I Saved His Number
And Walked Home.I Found The Twins Already
Back From School,I Made Something To Eat For
All Of Us Then Started With My
Homeworks.Vusi Got In My Room Lookin' Like
He'd Seen a Ghost

Me: What's Up?

Vusi: Inam Is Also Going To The Ball

Me: So?

Vusi: She Can't Go

Me: Why?

Vusi: Some Fucked Up Nikka Will Be Touching My Territory Lil Sis

Me: As If You Don't Touch Other People's Territory

Vusi: And Now I Won't Be Able To Get Some One Night Stand Chick

Me: You're Unbelievable

Vusi: Can You Do Me A Favor?

Me: What?

Vusi: Ask Her Not To Go?

The Fuck?

[05/18, 12:55] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT17 [OBJ] [OBJ]

I Just Looked At Him, Vusi Was Mad For Real

Me: You Sick

Vusi: C'mon Sis Help Your Brother Out

Me: Forget It, I Ain't Gonna Do That Ish

Vusi: Please Esihle Hawu

Me: First Of All Inam Is My Friend, Secondly I'm
The One Who Asked Her To Go, Third-

Vusi: Whoa The Fuck Did You Just Say??

Me: I'm The One Who Asked Her To Go

Vusi: Thank You So Much For Squashing My Plans Esihle

Me: My Pleasure, I Won't Let You Play With My Friend's Heart While I Watch Just Coz You My Brother, Forget That.

Vusi: Mxm

Dad And Mom Got In Then Locked The Door Behind

Vusi: I Guess This Is A Visit For Esihle, I Should Get Going

Mom: You Ain't Going Anywhere, We Want To Talk To Both Of You

Dad: Esihle Sit Down

I Looked At Him

Dad: I Said Sit The Fuck Down!

I Slowly Sat On The Bed,Okay It Was Clearly
That The Visit Wasn't Friendly.

Mom: First Of All We're Fed Up Of Your Attitude
Young Lady

I Just Looked At Her And Rolled My Eyes

Mom: Musa Can I Wake Esihle Up a Lil And
Remind Her Who's Older Than Who Between
The Two Of Us?

Dad: That Won't Be Necessary Pumpkin.ESIHLE
MORENA!

Me: Dad OBJ::(

Dad: This Attitude Of Yours Won't Get You
Anywhere,Like I Told You Last Night,What You

Heard Wasn't Meant For You.I Don't Even Know
What Upsets You With What You Heard

Me: You're Thugs Dad!

Vusi: Whoa WHAT??

Dad: Esihle!

Me: What Dad?? For How Long Were You Gonna
Keep This A Secret From Us?? Huh?? I Can't
Believe This,You Know What? I Don't Want
Money From The Two Of You Anymore


Dad: That's Funny Coz The Money You Don't
Want Is The Same Money That Raised You,Fed
You,Clothed You,Sheltered You,Made Sure That
You Have A Different Decent Life

Vusi: Okay We Hear That Part Dad But What Is
This Thug Thing Esihle Is Talkin' Bout?

Mom: Vusi Just Wait

Dad: Vusi I Was In A Gang Witcho Uncles From
a Young Age,I Met Witcho Mom Again And We
Got Married.When She Married Me,She Already

Knew What I Was,She Joined Too.

Vusi: So Dad Do You Sell Drugs And Steal Cars And Guns Like In Movies? :)

Me: This Is All Making You Happy,Are You Mad Vusi?

Dad: We Don't Do Any Of The Above,We Used To Steal Cars But When Your Mom Arrived,She Didn't Want That So We Stopped.We're Now LEGAL (Lookin' At Me) Business Men

Vusi: So This Means We've Been Raised By a Gangster King And a Gangster Queen,You The Boss Of The Gang Right Dad??

Dad: Something Like That

Me: Vusi You're Unbelievable!

Vusi: Hey You Think Your Frowning Will Change The Situation,It Won't Sister Just Live With The Fact That You're A Gangster Princess

Mom: Someone Is Thrilled By All Of This

Vusi: Mom I've Seen Gangsters Out There And I Thought I Knew Everything Bout Them But I Never Suspected That My Own Parents Were Gangsters.Y'all Know How To Keep Things On The Low,Live Life Like Everyone Else,Raise Kids For 10 Fuckin' Years But Never Give Them Even One Clue To What You Do.DAD,MOM THAT'S DOPE PARENTS

Me: I Give Up

Dad: Vusi Don't Get Too Excited,You And Your Siblings Won't Join This Life.We Want A Normal Life For You

Vusi: Weren't We Gonna Reign When You Two Die?

Mom: Haha Ohh So You Want Us To Die Already?

Vusi: Okay Then Ma Let's Say When You Two Retire?

Dad: You Would But Your Mom And I Want a Normal Life For You Coz This Life Ain't Easy

Vusi: You'll Teach Us To Survive,Look At You Dad You're 36 And Mom Is 34 But You're Still Alive And Fresh I'm Sure They Gave You Your Titles Coz You Deserved Them

Dad: You're Right But Still Vusi,We Won't Let You Risk Your Lives Coz That Ain't An Easy Life

Vusi: C'mon Dad You'll Teach Us How To Survive,We Cam Start Now On Searching Who Broke In Here Last Night

Mom: Whoa Whoa Lil Birdie,You Moving Too Fast

Vusi: Please

Dad: Don't Worry We Took Care Of That

Vusi: Next Time Tag Me Along,Just To Watch

I Clapped Once And Threw My Hands In The Air

Me: I Can't Believe This

Dad: Esihle Whether You Like It Or Not,We're Your Parents And That Will Never Change.Let's Go Pumpkin

With That Said Mom And Dad Walked Out,Leaving Me With The Exhilarated Vusi Morena.

Vusi: I Can't Believe This,Our Own Parents Are Gangsters But Not Just Gangsters But They Reign

Me: Mxm

Vusi: C'mon Lil Sis Isn't That Great?

Me: What's Great Bout That? Have You Wondered How Many People They Killed? How Many Kids Lost Their Parents? How Many Families Lost Their Cars?

Vusi: The People They Killed Surely Killed People On Their Side Too,Bout The Cars I'm

Sure They Stole Good Quality Cars From Rich People Who Bought Another Cars ASAP

Me: I Can't Believe You, All Of This Is Elating To You

Vusi: Stop Being a Pooper

Me: Mxm

OBJ Sisanda's POV OBJ

Hello Lovies OBJ:)

After Coming From Esihle's Room, Musa And I Went To The Kitchen Coz I Was Preparing Something To Eat For Us

Me: Your Daughter Is So Stone Headed

Musa: At Least We'll Only Have To Deal With

Her,Vusi Got No Problem With Anything

Me: Babe You Promised Me That You Won't Let Our Kids Get Into This

Musa: I Know But You Know Maybe Some Enemy Of Ours Might Be Cooking Some Storm For Us,They Have To Be Fit In Every way For That Storm.No Enemy Leaves Without Planting His Seed For Future Purposes

Me: You Think Another Aviwe Might Be Growing Out There Or Something?

Musa: How Can You Explain The Sudden Break In Yesterday? It's Been Years Since We've Been Challenged,It's Clear That There's Someone Out There And They Are Ready For War

Me: I Guess We Should Get The Kids Ready ASAP

Musa: I Should Talk To Esihle,She Needs To Be With Us On This Or Time Will Be Against Us

Me: Yeah You Right

Musa: But Don't Worry We've Always Been
Winners, That Won't Change Now. Our Kids Are
The Younger Us, I'm Sure They'll Kick Butts

Me: No Stretch That, They'll Roast Them

Musa: Come Here

He Smashed His Lips Against Mine, The Kiss
Went On For A While, He Picked Me Up

Me: My Pots

Musa: I'm Sure The Food Is Already Good, Let's
Switch Em Off

He Switched Off The Stoves Then Walked To
Our Room With Me. Our Sex Life Was Still Great
Even With The Four Kids We Had And Our Busy
Work Life OBJ:) We Still Rocked In The Bedroom.

OBJ Back To Esihle OBJ

"Being Mad At Mom And Dad Was Clearly Not Gonna Work And I Forgave Lutho But Now It Was Hard To Forgive My Own Parents"

I Decided I'll Make Them Breakfast In Bed Since It Was Gonna Be Saturday The Following Day,We Ate Supper Together But I Just Kept Quiet And No One Gave Me Their Attention.

The Following Day I Woke Up Early And Went To Make Breakfast,I Took It To The Parents' Room.I Knocked

Mom: Come In

Me: Good Morning

They Both Looked At Each Other In Confusion

Me: I Brought You Breakfast

Dad: Ohh?

Me: I Just Wanna Say I'm Sorry For The Way I Acted,I Know I'm Young And I Shouldn't Have Handled Things The Way I Did

Dad: Come Here Princess

I Went To Dad And He Hugged Me

Dad: Your Apology Is Accepted

Mom: Give Mommy A Hug Too

Me: I Love You Guys

Dad: We Love You Too....You And Vusi Are Gonna Start Training Today

WHOA THE FUCK??

[05/18, 12:56] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT18 OBJ<3

WHOA WHOA!! THE FUCK DID DAD JUST SAY??

Me: What??

Mom: It's For Your Safety Baby

Me: What Safety Now?

Dad: We'll Explain Everything To You And Vusi
When We Wake Up

Me: Last Time I Checked You Two Didn't Want
Us To Join Your Life

Mom: If You Don't, Your Lives Will Be In Danger

Me: That's What You Here For Ayt?

Dad: Your Mom And I Won't Be 'round All The Time So You Also Have To Know How To Protect Yourself

Me:.....

Dad: Don't Worry Be Everything Will Be Okay

Me: Can't You Just Send Me To Grandma? I Don't Wanna Live This Life

Dad: You Really Want That?

Me: Not Really But Do I Have a Choice?

Mom: Baby You Don't Have To Leave,You'll Be Able To Take Care Of Yourselves Trust Me.

Dad: I'll Teach You How To Kick Butts And Maybe When We're Done You'll Even Kick Mine

We All Laughed

Me: You've Been In This For Too Long To Get Your Butt Kicked By Your Own Daughter

Dad: I'll Train You So Hard That You'll Be Able To Win a Battle Against Your Mom And I

Mom: But Lets Give Them To Soul,Amish And Thando First.I'll Take Care Of The Gun Session With Thabo,Danger And Bonga

Me: Yho

Dad: You'll Be Taking Over From Your Mom And I Soon So We Have To Make Sure You Fit Enough

Me: Yeah Ayt So When Is Dad Gonna Train Us?

Dad: When Everyone Has Played Their Part,I Think I Might Need Some Help From Alex

Me: Whoa Uncle Alex Is Still Alive?

Dad: Have You Ever Heard Us Saying We're Going To His Funeral?

Me: Just That It's Been A While Since He Came To See Us

Dad: You'll See Him Then

Me: Lemme Go And Finish Making
Breakfast,Enjoy Yours Rents

Mom: Thanks Baby

I Got Off The Bed And Went Back To The
Kitchen,I Found Vusi Drinking Water And
Shirtless

Me: No Wonder Every Girl At School Wants A
Taste Of You

Vusi: Do You Want It Too?

Me: Eeuw That Would Be Disgusting

Vusi: We Don't Share The Same Blood,It
Wouldn't

Me: Dad And Mom So Would Kill Us

Vusi: You Seem Like You In a Good Mood
Today,Wassup?

Me: I Talked Things Through With The Rents

And We Resolved Things

Vusi: That's Great,I Was Starting To Hate The Tension In The House

Me: We'll Go For Training Today

Vusi: FOR REAL?? :)

Me: And Our Asses Are Gonna Get Busted,The Way Dad Talks,They Ain't Gonna Show Mercy Just Coz We're Their Kids

Vusi: It Doesn't Matter As Long As I'll Be Able To Defend Myself And Know How To Use A Gun

Me: And Mom Is Gonna Be The One To Teach Us How To Use a Gun

Vusi: Haha What??

Me: Yeap

Vusi: I'm Sure She Can Kick Butts Too

Me: Dude Have You Seen Her Six Pack And Muscles? That Woman Surely Can Kick Butts

Vusi: And Mom Is Hot For Her Age

Me: I'll Tell Dad That You Eyeing On His Wife

Vusi: That Man Would Kill Me

Vusi Helped Me With Finishing Making Breakfast, The Twins Joined Us And We Ate Together.

Mom And Dad Finally Came Outta Their Room And Mom Helped Me With Washing The Dishes, Someone Knocked. Dad Went To Open Up

Mom: Menzi

He Looked All Hot And Cute In His Sleeveless T-shirt And Tinted Jean And Sneakers. He Had Tattoos [OBJ]:P [OBJ]:D

Menzi: Morning Mrs Morena

Dad: Menzi Came To Pick Up Some Work Files

Me: You Work Together?

Dad: Jeap....Lemme Go And Get Those Files

Menzi: Hello Esihle

Mom: You Know Her?

Menzi: Yeah I Met Her Yesterday On Her Way From School,She Refused a Lift From Me

Me: I Was Only Two Houses Away From Here
Ma

Mom: Next Time Don't Take No For An Answer
Menzi

Menzi: You Heard Your Mother Then Miss
Morena

Me: Yeah Yeah Whatever

Mom: Esihle Needs Friends Like You Who Are Determined And Who Are Already Successful In Life To Push Her To Do Her Best In Her Studies

Vusi: Ncincinci I Wonder Where This Is All Going

(Typin' Something On His Phone)

Mom: I Just Want What's Best For Your Sister

Menzi: Speakin' Of That,Why Don't I Take Her Out For Dinner Tonight?

Me: Uhhhm Tonight I'-

Mom: Sure Thing,I'll Make Sure She's Ready In Time

Dad: Here Are The Files You Wanted (Walkin' Down The Stairs)

Vusi: Mr Morena Seems Like Your Wife Is Selling Your Daughter Here

Dad: Huh?

Mom: Menzi Is Just Takin' Esihle Out On Dinner Tonight,What's Wrong With That? We Both Know Menzi Is a Good Young Man

Dad Just Shrugged His Shoulders And Handed The Files To Menzi

Menzi: Thank You Sir

Mom: Esihle Why Don't You Walk M-

Vusi: I'll Walk Mr Menzi Out...Let's Go Young Sir

Mom: O-W-K-Y

Vusi And Menzi Walked Out

Dad: Menzi Is Older Than Esihle Pumpkin

Mom: He's a Good Young

Successful,Respectful Guy Who Will Take Care
Of Our Daughter

Dad: Esihle Is 16,Menzi Is 23

Mom: He'd Make a Good Son In Law Baby
C'mon

Dad: Okay Okay I See Your Point But We Should
Let Esihle Decide For Herself Who She Wanna

Date With

Me: Thank You Dad (Even Though You Didn't Approve My Relationship With Lutho)....Menzi Doesn't Look Like a Bad Guy

Mom: My Point Exactly

Me: But I Should Know Him First Mom

Mom: Take Your Time Sweetheart

Dad: Enough Bout Esihle's Dating Life,You And Vusi Should Go And Change

Me: Yes Boss

Dad Chuckled And Poured Himself a Glass Of Water,I Went To My Room And Changed To A Tracksuit.I Found Vusi Already Dressed For Some Training,Dad Drove Us To This Big House Which Was Almost Isolated From The Town Or Any House.

Vusi: So This Is Where We Will Be Trained?

Dad: Yeap,I'll Leave You Behind And Pick You Up Later.Esihle Make Sure Your Face Doesn't Get Beaten Up,You Still Have a Date

Vusi: I Don't Like That Menzi Guy It's Like He's Only Showing Us His Facade,Dad Have You Seen His Tattoo? They Scary Bro

Dad: You Also Have Tattoos Remember?

Vusi: Mine Ain't That Much Or Big

Dad: That's How It All Started With Me Too But You See Now Almost All My Upper Body Is Covered With Ink

Vusi: Jeah Jeah

We Got Outta The Car And Went In The House,We Found Aunt Soul,Aunt Thando,Aunt Amish And Uncle Danger Outside

Dad: Eita

Uncle D: My Main Man

Aunt A: Hey Bbe

Aunt S: Thee King And The Descendants

Dad: You Never Run Out Of Something To Say
Soul

Aunt T: Brought The Rats To Be Trained?

Dad: Sure Thing

Uncle D: Some Small Tiny Bones Are Gonna Get
Broken

Me: Dad o.O

Dad: Don't Worry, I'm Sure They Won't Break All
Of Them

Me: DAD!

Dad: I'm Out

We Went To Some Room And Did Some Warm

Ups First Then Got Our Asses Kicked [OBJ]:'([OBJ):

Later On Dad Picked Us Up,My Body Was So Sore,I Got Home And Had a Warm,Long Soothing Bath.Menzi Picked Me Up But Before I Went To Him To The Lounge I Called Lutho First But His Phone Sent Me Straight To Voicemail.

I Found Menzi Chatting With Mom And Dad

Mom: She's Done

Menzi: You Look Beautiful

Me: Thanks

Vusi: Don't Bring Her Back Late (Walkin' Down The Stairs)

Dad: That Should Be My Line

Vusi: Then I Said It For You

Menzi: We Should Get Going

Me: Bye Family

Mom: Have a Good Time

We Walked To Menzi's Car And He Started It
And Drove Away

Me: You Never Told Me Your Surname

Menzi: You Don't Have To Know It

Me: O-W-K-Y

He Parked In Front Of This Restaurant And We
Went In, No Holding Hands [OBJ] - - [OBJ]:v

We Sat Down Then A Waitress Came To Us

Waitress: Evening Guys, What Are You Gonna
Have Tonight?

Menzi: Your Expensive Meal For The Night

Waitress: O-kay Don't You Have Anything Else

You Want Miss?

Menzi: No Thank You

Yho....The Lady Left

Me: You Didn't Even Look At The Menu

Menzi: I Don't Have Time For That,So Tell Me
How Old Are You?

Me: Uhhm 16

Menzi: Whoa

Me: Yeah I'm That Young

Menzi: But Not Too Young For Me

Me: So How Old Are You?

Menzi: Uhhm 23,I'm That Old

Me: Haha Yeah Ayt

Our Food Came, Yho It Was So Lil Yet Too Expensive. We Both Dug In With No One Talkin' To The Other One, Menzi's Phone Rang

Menzi: Excuse Me

He Got Up And Stood Few Feet Away From Our Table While I Just Ate My Food, He Kept Kickin' The Air And Forming Fists With His Left Hand. Just From Lookin' At Him, Something Was Wrong But It Was Non My Business. He Came Back And Sat Down

Menzi: Uhhhm Sorry Bout That

Me: No Sweat, Is Everything Okay?

Menzi: Yeah Everything Is Fine

Me: Cool

We Both Finished Eating And The Dessert Came
Then Menzi Settled The Bill.He Drove Us Back
Home [OBJ]-_- That Was How Boring The Date
Was,I Just Missed Lutho For Real [OBJ]:' (

We Both Came Outta The Car Then Menzi Came
To Stand In Front Of Me,Put His Arms On My
Curves And Pulled Me In

Menzi: I Had a Great Time

[OBJ]-_- I Wish I Could Say The Same

Me: Uhhhm Me Too (LIAR)

Menzi: We Should Do This More Often

Me: Uhhm Cool

He Came Closer For a Kiss But I Backed Away

Menzi: You Okay?

Me: Yeah Uhhhm I'm Fine,Fine

He Came Closer Again,The Second Time I Didn't Back Away.I Let His Lips Meet With Mine And Damn! Dude Was A Good Kisser.Lutho Was a Good Kisser But Hey! Menzi Was On a Whole New Level.The Kiss Went On For A While Then Menzi Finally Broke It And Pecked My Lips,He Let Go Of My Waist And Looked At Me

Me: Uhhm That Was Uhhhm Breath Taking I Guess

Menzi: I Know I'm a Good Kisser Sweetheart,Lemme Not Keep You Here Outside In The Cold.I Guess I'll See You Some Other Time

Me: Bye

He Watched Me As I Walked Into My House
Then He Drove Away,I Found Vusi In The
Lounge

Vusi: Bhut' Luu Is So Gonna Kill You

Me: Mxm

Vusi: For Real.I Told You That I Smell Some Hoe
In The Making,You See Now You One Big Hoe
Lil Sis

Me: Mxm

I Walked To My Room And Changed To My
PJs,I Took My Phone And Called Lutho

Call Convo

Me: Hey Babe

Voice: uhhm Hello

It Was A Girl's Voice OBJ: (

Me: Uhhm Can I Talk To Lutho?

Girl: Uhhm He's Still In The Shower But I'll Call Him For You....BABY! SOMEONE ON THE PHONE WANTS TO TALK TO YOU!

Lutho: I'm Coming

Girl: He's Coming

I Heard Some Shuffling And Foot Steps

Girl: Here

Lutho: Who Is It?

Girl: Some Girl, I Didn't Get Her Name. Lemme Go

And Make Us Something To Eat While You Talk
On The Phone

Lutho: You The Best You Know

Girl: I Am Aren't I?

I Heard Some Foot Steps

Lutho: Hey

Me: Hello Lutho Zizwe

Lutho: Shit! Look I Can Explain Sugar Boom
Boom

[05/18, 12:57] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT19  <3

I Just Felt Tears Threatening My Eyes

Lutho: Baby

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle

Me: Bye Lutho

I Hung Up And Switched Off My Phone,I Didn't Know Whether To Cry Or Just Be a Big Girl And Brush It Off.

"You Also Kissed That Menzi Guy But Then Again,For Sure Lutho Is Sleeping With That Girl"

Someone Knocked On My Door,I Went To Open Up

Me: Hey Bbe

Inam: Wassup?

Me: It's A Long Story

Inam: We Have All The Night

Me: Vusi's Gonna Need You

Inam: He'll Be Strong,So What's Wrong?

Me: Lemme Put Your Bag In The Closet

I Took Her Over Night Bag And Put It In The Closet,We Lied On Our Backs On The Bed

Me: I Went Out For Dinner With A Guy Named Menzi Tonight

Inam: Do I Know Him?

Me: He Works With Dad

Inam: HE WORKS WITCHO DAD?? HOW OLD IS THIS GUY?

Me: Lower Your Voice Jeez

Inam: Uhhm Sorry But How Old Is He?

Me: 23

Inam: Yho

Me: Mom And Dad Like Him

Inam: Do You?

Me: a Lil

Inam: And Lutho?

Me: He's Cheating On Me

Inam: Whoa What? How Do You Know?

Me: I Called Him Few Minutes Ago,A Girl
Answered His Cell And They Were Both Calling
Each Other Baby

Inam: I'm So Sorry Bbe

Me: I Now Even Regret Unlockin' To Him

Inam: You Didn't Know He Was Gonna Do This
To You

Me: He Knows How Much I Love Him [OBJ:]' (

Inam: Everything's Gonna Be Okay Bbe

Me: No It Won't Inam, Lutho Is That Far From Me, He's Busy Moving On With His Life, Fucking And Loving Other Girls While I'm Here Loving Him With All Of My Heart

Inam: But You Also Went Out With This Menzi Guy

Me: That Doesn't Mean I Love Him Like I Love Lutho, I Love Lutho With My All Inam

Inam: I Know, I'm Sorry Baby

She Wiped My Tears And Fixed The Bed And We Got In, She Laid My Head On Her Chest While She Played With My Hair [OBJ:] :) Inam Was An Angel Sent From Above [OBJ:] :)

Me: You're The Best Bitch I've Ever Met

Inam: Don't You Ever Forget That

Me: I Swear I'll Make Sure Vusi Marries You Not
Some Fucked Up Bitch

Inam: That Will Be Up To Him Not You Or Me

Me: I Just Hope He Does

I Fell Asleep While Talkin' With Inam,When I
Woke Up In The Middle Of The Night,She Wasn't
Next To Me OBJ:) It Was Patent That She Tip
Toed To Vusi's Room.I Switched My Phone On
And Had 30 Missed Calls From Lutho,20
Voicemails And Two Messages.I Just Deleted
Everything Without Paying Attention To It,I Tried
To Go Back To Sleep.Inam Joined Me Early,She
Was So Cold

Me: Hey Hey You Cold Marn

Inam: Sorry Hawu

Me: I Hope You Bathed,I Don't Want My Bed Smelling You And Vusi

Inam: Stop Being Jealous

Me: Me? Jealous? C'mon

Inam: Yeah You Jealous,It's Been A While Since You Got Some

Me: Mxm

I Took a Pillow And Threw It At Her,She Took Hers And Threw It At Me.For A Moment,I Forgot Bout Everything And Just Became Crazy With My Friend.

We Woke Up,Did The Bed And Went To Bath.We Made Breakfast Together,Vusi Got In While We Were At It And Went To Inam.They Kept Kissing And Giggling

Me: You Makin' Me Jealous

Vusi: You Have Three Boyfriends,Why Would You Be Jealous?

Inam: Three??

Vusi: Didn't She Tell You? She's Dating With Litha,Lutho And This New Guy Menzi

Inam: You Love Makin' Things a Big Deal,Esihle Ain't Dating With Litha And She's Not Dating With Menzi

Vusi: I'm Sure They Will

Inam: I Give Up

We Dished Up And Called The Parents And Twins,We All Ate Then Mom And Dad Took Themselves Out With The Twins While I Stayed In The House With The Love Birds.Lutho Tried To Call Me Again Countless Times But I Ignored His Calls,Menzi Called Me

Call Convo

Me: Hey

Menzi: Hey Beautiful,How Are You Today?

Me: Not Really Good You?

Menzi: Can I Make You Feel Good?

Me: I'd Love That

Menzi: Give Me a Few I'll Be Ayt There

Me: Cool

I Went To My Room And Wore Something
Descent,I Told Vusi And His Girlfriend That I'm
Going Out With Menzi.In Few Minutes,My Phone
Rang And I Went Out To Him.I Got In The Car
And We Had a Brief Kiss

Me: Hey

Menzi: Hello,So Where Do You Wanna Go?

Me: Anywhere You Can Take Me

Menzi: Okay Then...So You Said You Were Not Okay,Wassup?

Me: Nothing I Can't Take Care Of

Menzi: I See

He Drove Us To This Place,Looking Like a Club.There Were Bouncers At The Entrance

Menzi: She's With Me

Guy1: Welcome Man,Hope You Enjoy

Menzi: Sure

He Held My Hand And We Walked In,We Sat On a Table At a Far Corner But Menzi Got Up

Menzi: Wait For Me Here,I'll Be Back

Me: O-kay

He Got Up And Walked Into Some Room,I Just Sat There And Watched Drunk People Getting More Wasted.Some Guys Got In Dragging A Guy And They Took Him To The Room That Menzi Was In o.O

After Some Time Looking At Me,Some Guy Finally Came To Sit With Me

Guy: I've Been Lookin' At You For A While Now,Are You Waiting For Someone?

Me: Something Like That

Menzi Came Back

Me: And Here He Is

Menzi: Do You Have a Problem Bro?

Guy: No No Not At All Bro,I Didn't Know She Was With You

Menzi: No Sweat,Now Dash

Guy: Hardie Boss,I'm Gone

The Guy Walked Away

Menzi: We Can Go Now

Me: Owky

I Got Up And We Walked To His Car

Me: So Where Are You Takin' Me?

Menzi: To My Aunt And Uncle

Me: WHAT??

Menzi: Don't Worry They Are Nice People,I'm Sure They Will Like You

Me: Ain't We a Bit Moving Too Fast?

Menzi: Don't You Love Me?

Me: I Do Bu-

Menzi: Then You Don't Have To Worry Bout Anything

He Parked In Front Of This Big House,It Was So Beautiful.

Menzi: We're Here Now,Relax They Don't Bite

Me: Menzi I Ain't Even Dressed In a Proper Way

Menzi: Jeez Woman Relax

Me: Okay Owky

Menzi: Come Here

He Pecked My Lips And Held My Hand,We Went
In And We Were Welcomed By a Smiling Old
Lady And An Old Man

Menzi: Hey Family

Lady: Hey Son

Man: Hey Young Man

Lady: So This Is Our Daughter In Law?

Menzi: Something Like That

Man: I've Always Known That You Gonna Make
Us Proud,Good Afternoon My Girl

Me: Afternoon Sir

Lady: She's Pretty

Menzi: She Had To,You Want Beautiful
Grandchildren Don't You?

Man: Are You Already Expecting?

Menzi: No Uncle I Was Just Saying

We Went To Sit Down Then The Lady Gave Us
Something To Drink With Cookies

Menzi: So When Is Cousin Bro Coming Back

Man: I Don't Know And I Don't Care,I Don't Give
My Attention To People Who Don't Value Their
Lives

Lady: Hawu Tata

Man: It's True,It's Like That Boy Is Not My
Son,Like He's Possessed Or Something.He
Does What He Wants,I Didn't Give Birth To a Boy
Like That,You See Menzi Is A Good Example To
Every Young Growing Boy Out There

Lady: We Not Here To Discuss Our Family
Issues,So What Is Your Name Young Lady?

o.o :/ It Was Clear That That Family Had

Lotta Issues [OBJ]o.O [OBJ]:/

[05/18, 12:58] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT20 [OBJ] [OBJ]

M's Uncle: So What Is Our Daughter In Law
Doing?

Menzi: She's Still In High School

M's Aunt What??

M's Uncle: You Were Also In High School When I
Met You

M's Aunt: Isn't Menzi A Little Bit Older Than
Her, How Old Are You?

Me: Uhhm I'm 16

M's Uncle: That's A Little Bit Too Young Hey

M's Aunt: See What I Mean?

Menzi: Uncle,Aunt,Love Doesn't Have Age

M's Uncle: True But Don't You Think You're Way Too Older Than Her? She Should Be Dating Kids Her Age

Menzi: I Love Her And She Loves Me Too

He Held My Hand And Squeezed It,For Once There Was a Lil Connection Even If Menzi Was Faking It Only For His Aunt And Uncle.He Looked At Me And Smiled,I Smiled Back

M's Uncle: I See This Girl Really Caught Your Eye And Heart

Menzi: She's Beautiful Uncle

M's Aunt: But Menzi,She's Young.Don't You Think She Has To Party,Go Out With Friends

And Enjoy Her Teenage Life? Don't You Think This Is a Little Bit Too Much For Her, More Like Trapping Her?

Menzi: Aunt C'mon Love Is Always Enough, I'm Not Gonna Stand In The Way Of Her Time With Her Friends, I'm Just Gonna Love Her.

M's Aunt: I See

She Got Up And Took The Plate And Glasses

Me: Can I Help You With Those?

Lady: I'll Manage Thank You

She Left To The Kitchen

M's Uncle: So When Are We Gonna Sing Wagiya Giya Makoti?

Menzi: Haha Uncle Isn't That A Bit Too Quick?

M's Uncle: My Son,When You've Found The One,There's No Need To Take Things Slowly Or Others Are Gonna Snatch Her Right Under Your Nose

Menzi: Esihle Wouldn't Be Snatched Under My Nose,That,I'm Sure Of

M's Uncle: You So Confident,I Like That

Menzi: Uhhm And Uncle,I Think We Have To Go Now

M's Uncle: Okay Okay My Son,Thank You For Passing By And Bringing Our Daughter In Law With You.Esihle My Girl,Feel Free To Come And See Us When You Feel Like It

Me: Thank You Sir

M's Uncle: Bye My Children

Menzi: I'll See You Some Other Time,Tell Aunt That We Had To Go

M's Uncle: I Will Son

We Both Went Out To His Car

Me: You Were Right, They Are Nice People

Menzi: I Told You

Me: You Caught Me Off Guard Dude

Menzi: I Was Gonna Come Here Anyway So
Why Not Tag You Along?

Me: We Just Met Few Days Ago But You
Already Introduced Me To Your Aunt And Uncle

Menzi: Lemme Just Say This Relationship
Means A Lot To Me And Besides Your Parents
Know Bout Us So Why Not Tell Mine Bout Us

Me: You Just Called Them Your Parents

Menzi: They Raised Me

Me: Mind If I Ask Where Your Real Parents Are?

Menzi: It's a Long Story And I Don't Like Talkin'
Bout Me

Me: Uhhm Sorry I Didn't Know

Menzi: So Want Us To Grab Something To Eat?

Me: Yeah I'm Starving

He Drove Us To The Nearest Fast Food
Restaurant,A Waiter Came To Us

Waiter: Hey Sir,Hallo My Sister

Me: Hi

Menzi: Yeah

Waiter: Here Are Your Menus,What Can I Get
For You Now

Menzi: Just Water For Me

I Looked At Him

Menzi: Baby What Do You Want?

THE FUCK??

Me: Uhhm Nothing For Me Thanks

Menzi: Uhhm I'll Take The Water Then While We
Look Through Our Menus

Waiter: Okay Sir

The Waiter Walked Away

Menzi: I Feel Like a Hamburger And Fries,What
Bout You Bbe?

Me: Last Time You Made The Order For Me

I Wore The Saddest Face To Show Him That I

Didn't Like What He Did

Menzi: I Was Just In a Bad Mood That Day,Sorry
Okay?!

Me: Mhm

Menzi: C'mon Babe,I'm Really Sorry

Me: Fine I Forgive You

Menzi: Okay So Whatchu Gonna Have?

Me: I Guess I'll Take The Burger Too

The Waiter Came Back With Menzi's Water
Then Took Our Orders,I Also Ordered Myself A
Juice Since Menzi Was In a Good Mood [OBJ]:)

Menzi: So Tomorrow You Going Back To School?


Me: Don't Remind Me,I Wish I Was You

Menzi: The Job I Do Ain't Easy

Sweetheart, There Are Days When I Wish I Could
Just Take a Day Off

Me: At Least You Being Paid, School Sucks Dude

Menzi: I've Been There Dear

Our Food Came Then We Started To Dug In
While Having Senseless Small Talks In Between
Then Menzi Settled The Bill. My Phone
Rang, LUTHO  - I Decided To Answer It

* Call Convo *

Me: WHA- What Do You Want?

Lutho: Sugar Boom Boom C'mon We Can't Go
On Like This

Me: What Do You Want?

Lutho: Can We Talk?

Me: I Have Nothing To Talk Bout Witchu

Lutho: Bbe C'mon

Me: Bye

I Hung Up,Menzi Was Looking At Me

Menzi: Is Everything Kay?

Me: Uhhm Yeah Can We Go Now?

Menzi: Yeah Sure

We Both Got Up And Walked Back To His Car
Then He Drove Me Home,He Parked In Front Of
My House Then We Both Got Out

Menzi: I Hope Today Was Different From The
First Day We Went Out,I Know It Wasn't a Good
Date

Me: I'm Glad You Noticed

Menzi: I Just Had a Bad Day At Work Hey

Me: Understandable

Menzi: Lemme Not Keep You Here...I Guess I'll See You Tomorrow If Possible

Me: Make It Possible

Menzi: Haha Okay I'll Try To Then

We Had A Brief Kiss Then Menzi Left,I Went In The House And Found Vusi Watching T.V

Me: Ain't The Rents Back Yet?

Vusi: Nope

Me: Where Is Inam?

Vusi: You Left Her Here What Dis You Expect?

Me: You Were With Her Mos?

Vusi: She Came To Spend Time With You But

What Do You Do? You Go Almost For The Whole Day And Spend Time With New Boyfriend

Me: That's Not Fair Vusi

Vusi: I'm Just Sayin....But Be Careful Lil Sis, Something Doesn't Add Up With That Menzi Guy. What Happened Between You And Lutho?

Me: Lutho Cheated On Me

Vusi: But That Doesn't Mean You Must Jump Into Another Guy's Pants, That's Not How Things Work



Me: Another Guy's Pants?

Vusi: You Slept With Lutho, What Will Stop You From Sleeping With This Menzi Dude? Esihle You're a Girl, You Can't Do Things Our Way. You Should Take A Break And Introspect Yourself, You're My Lil Sis And I Care Bout You. Now You Carrying Yourself Like You're a Bitch

Ouch!

[05/18, 19:01] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT21  

O-W-K-Y So Vusi Was Playing The Caring
Brother With Me

Me: Wow

Vusi: For Real

Me: A Bitch Vusi? A Bitch?

Vusi: Take It Whatever Way You Wanna Take It
But Whatchu Doing Must Stop Before It Gets

Outta Hand

Me: Thanks For Caring But I'm Old Enough To
Take Care Of Myself

Vusi: Ohh?

Me: I Don't Nee-

Mom,Dad And The Twins Got In With
Plastics.Dad Went Upstairs

Mom: Hey Kids

Vusi: Hey Mom,What Did You Get For Me?

Mom: Nothing

Vusi: But Ma I Asked You To Get Me Thos-

Ithandile: We Bought Them Jeez

Vusi: As If You Bought Them By Yourself
Witcho Own Money

Ithandile: Ohh You Sayin' That? Nikka I

Reminded Mom Bout Your Shoes,You Have To Be Grateful To Me

Vusi: Mxm Whatever

Mom: You Okay Bbe? (Lookin' At Me)

Me: Yeah I'm Fine,Just Have a Slight Headache

Mom: Did You Take Any Pills?

Me: A Nap Will Do

Mom: Okay Then

Vusi Looked At Me And Shooked His Head,I Just Walked To My Room And Lied On My Bed While Vusi's Words Kept Playin' In My Head,I Just Started Crying [OBJ]:'("If Lutho Didn't Leave Nona This Would Have Happened,Maybe I Wouldn't Have Met With Menzi And Fell For Him,Maybe Lutho Wouldn't Have Cheated And Pushed Me Into Another Guy's Arms [OBJ]:'("

My Phone Rang 'LUTHO'

* Call Convo *

I Sniffed

Lutho: Bbe

Me:.....

Lutho: Bbe Are You Cryin?

Me: THIS IS ALL YOUR FAULT LUTHO! YOU LEFT ME HERE ALL ALONE! YOU LEFT ME TO BE WITH OTHER GIRLS LUTHO I HATE YOU!

Lutho: Sugar I'm Sorry Kay?!

Me: Why Are You Doing This To Me Lutho? Why? You Know That I Love You

Lutho: And I Love You Too

Me: No You Don't Lutho, You Don't

Lutho: Esihle I Love You And You Know

That.What I Did Was Wrong I Know And I Won't Lie To You,I Did It And I'm Not Proud Of That And I'm Deeply Sorry

Me: Why Did You Do It Lutho?

Lutho: Can We Talk Bout That When I'm Back?

Me: And When Will That Be Lutho?

Lutho: Look Esihle I Don't Know Kay?! But I'll Make Time For You

Me: That's Not Enough Lutho

Lutho: I Know You Miss Me And I Miss You Too But I Can't Just Come Back

Me: I Met Someone Else

Lutho: Look I Promise I'll Mak- Whoa What??

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle What Did You Just Say??

Me: You Not Here Lutho

Lutho: So?

Me: Lutho You Cheated On Me!

Lutho: Esihle Are You Even Listening To Yourself?

Me: This Won't Work Lutho,Just Move On Witcho Life

Lutho: Heeee Esihle You Know What Imma Call You Some Other Time,I See You Not In Your Right Mind

With That Said,He Dropped The Call.I Just Lied On The Bed And Cried.When I Had Enough I Went To Wash My Face In The Bathroom Then Went Back To My Room And Slept.I Woke Up At 8 pm And Found The Family Watching T.V

Dad: I Heard You Had a Headache,How You Feeling Now?

Me: Better

Dad: You Don't Look Okay To Me

Me: I'm Fine Dad

Mom: Your Food Is In The Warmer

Me: Thanks Mom But I Don't Feel Like Eating Anything Ayt Now

Mom: Vusi What Did You Do To Your Sister While We Were In Town?

Vusi: And What Did You Want Me To Do To Her?

Dad: Pumpkin!

Mom: Bbe I Was Just Kiddin' Vusi Is The One With A Strange Mind

Dad: Princess You Have To Eat Something,An Apple Or a Banna.Just Eat Something

Me: I'll Take The Banana

I Went To The Kitchen And Took Two Bananas,I Sat Next To Dad And Placed My Head On His Thighs While He Played With My Hair.

Asithandile: Dad

Dad: I Don't Have The Money To Buy Whatever You Want

Ithandile: You Haven't Even Heard What He Wants

Asithandile: What We Want

Mom: No Wonder Owethu Wants Your Dad To Hear You Out, You In This Together

Asithandile: Mom And Dad We Really Want This

Dad: What Is It?

Olwethu & Owethu: We Want Separate Bedrooms

Mom: Whoa

Dad: Mxm You Both Still Young For That

Owethu: But Vusi And Esihle Have Their Own Rooms

Vusi: Didn't You Forget Something When Sayin' Our Names Lil Sis?

Owethu: Okay Bhut' Vusi And Sis Esihle

Vusi: Mom And Dad? Your Reproduction Is Very Productive

Mom: There Are Still Things You Can't Say In Our Presence Vusi

Vusi: Was Just Complimenting Mom

Dad: So Twins Why Do You Want Separate Rooms?

Owethu: Olwethu's Side Of The Room Is So Untidy

Olwethu: And She Snores

Dad: Those Are Not Good Reasons For Me To Give You Your Separate Rooms,What Am I Gonna Get In Return?

Owethu: What??

Dad: What Is Your Mom And I Gonna Get From

This?

Olwethu: Breakfast In Bed For The Whole Week?

Me: Breakfast Made By The Two Of You,Not Me Right?!

Owethu: Okay We'll Buy You a Fifth Car?

Dad: Range Rover

Olwethu: Ford Ranger

Owethu: Another Ford

Mom: We Already Have It

Vusi: A Lamborghini Would Do

Dad: It Would Be Perfect

Owethu: Then Keep Your Room To Yourself

Dad: Just Kiddin' Tomorrow You'll Have The Room To Yourself,Who's Moving Out?

Olwethu And Owethu: Me!

Dad: O-kay

Spending Time With My Family Was The Therapy I Needed,We Went To Sleep At 22:30.I Slept Better Than The Few Previous Days.

I Was So Not In The Mood For School The Following Day But I Had No Choice But To Go,I Bathed And Got Dressed For School.We Had Breakfast And Dad Drove Us To School,I Spent My Break Time With Inam But I Was Just Not In The Mood For Anyone.Litha Came To Us

Litha: Hey Girls

Me: Hi

Inam: Hello,Bye

She Winked At Me And Left

Litha: Hope I Wasn't Disturbing

Me: No Not At All

Litha: Ohh So How Are You?

Me: I'm Good And You?

Litha: I'm Good Too So Bout My Request,So
When Are We Gonna Go For Shopping?

Me: Uhhm Change Of Plans,I Think You Should
Go With Inam

Litha: Inam Your Friend?

Me: Yeap

Litha: Can I Ask Why?

Me: I'm Gonna Be Busy During That Week,She's
Gonna Be Free So I Thought You Wouldn't Have
a Problem Going With Her

Litha: Eish I Wanted To Go With You But It's
Fine I Can Go With Inam

Me: Thank You

I Hugged Him And Kissed His Cheek

Litha: Can We Go For Ice Cream After School?
Just To Make Up For Changing The Plans?

Me: Uhhhm Okay,Why Not?

I Went To Class,The Day Went By Quickly.Litha
Went To Take Me From My Class,He Took My
Bag And We Walked To The Shop Where They
Sold Ice Cream

Litha: You Know I Was Scared Of You

Me: What??

Litha: You Intimidating

Me: Yho I'm Short And Small Dude

Litha: But That Didn't Stop You From Kicking
Philela's Ass

Me: Haha Okay But Still I'm Too Short To Be
Intimidating

Litha: I've Never Heard That You Dated Any Of
The Guys At School,Wassup?

Me: Uhhm It's Ju-

Voice: Your Time With Her Is Over Now School
Boy,Esihle Get In The Car

THE FUCK?? [OBJ]o.O

I'm Busy And I'm Really Extremely
Busy,Seriously Busy.I'm In The Process Of
Getting Ready For My Final Exams So This Is
My Apology Insert.

I Promise To Post Everyday When I'm Done
With Errrthing

[05/18, 19:02] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT22 [OBJ] [OBJ]

Menzi! Great! He Just Wore A Side Smack On
While He Rolled Down The Whole Driver's
Window

Me: Menzi! Whatchu Doing Here?

Menzi: Hop In

Me: But I'm Sti-

Menzi: Just Get In The Fucken Car Esihle

Me: O-W-K-Y

I Hugged Litha And Took My Bag From Him
Then Got In The Passenger's Seat. Menzi Drove
Away Like He Was Some Crazy Maniac, The Car
Left a Cloud Of Dust, ON LITHA'S FACE. I Saw a
Smile On Menzi's Lips Forming

Me: Hello To You Too Menzi Whatever Your Surname Is

Menzi: Hi Esihle Morena

Me: You'll Never Tell Me Your Surname I See

Menzi: You Don't Have To Know It, That, I Told You.

Me: O-kay

Menzi: What Is That Lil Boy To You?

Me: My Friend

Menzi: You Two Looked So Cosy And Having The Time Of Your Lives

Me: Haha Dude You Jealous?

Menzi: Do I Have To Be?

Me: I Dunno

Menzi: I Wouldn't Be Intimidated By Small School Boys

Me: Says The Business Man

Menzi: That's Me Sweetheart

He Parked In Front Of This Beautiful House

Me: Is This Your House?

Menzi: Something Like That

Me: I Thought People Who Worked For Dad Had Similar Houses Your Ain't Like Other Houses

Menzi: This Ain't The Business House,I Bought It By Myself.I Have To Look Decent

Me: I See

Menzi: You Always See

I Hit Playfully On His Shoulder While We Both Chuckled [OBJ:] "WHOA Wait,Menzi And I Just Laughed Together,Specifically He Made Me

Laugh Even If It's Something Stupid But That's
What Lovers Do,Make You Laugh At The
Stupidest Things"

Menzi: Did You Win Lotto Or What?

Me: Are You The Lotto?

Menzi: I Might Be

Me: Then I Won It

Menzi: I'm Flattered,Thank You

He Opened The Door And We Got In,He Threw
His Key On The Table In The Lounge.He
Showed Me The House

Menzi: I'm Gonna Go And Shower,Make
Yourself At Home

Me: Home? Ohh Wow Thank You

He Pecked My Lips Then Vanished In The Hall
Way,I Went To Open The Fridge And There Was
Nothing That Could Be Devoured By Me So I
Just Took An Apple And A Banana Then Sat On
The Kitchen Counter.

I Played Music On The T.V And Listened To It
From The Kitchen Not That His Lounge Was
Bad To Be In But I Just Loved The Kitchen More.

Menzi Got In With Only a Towel On "Vusi Was
Right,His Tattoos Were Scary Especially Those
On His Chest"

Menzi: Staring Is Rude And You Know That

Me: I'm Just Checkin' Your Tattoos Out

Menzi: Want Me To Do You?

Me: No Thanks I'll Pass

Menzi: Someone's a Coward

Me: Ain't It Painful To Do These Things?

Menzi: Your Dad Has Em As Well As Your Brother

Me: But Not My Mom

Menzi: I See

Me: Haha You Also Love Seeing

Menzi Just Smiled And Got Closer To Me,He Got In Between My Legs And Placed His Hand On My Cheek Then Pulled Me In For A Kiss.I Didn't Protest Against It Coz Menzi Was a Good Kisser,That,I Could Give Him.

The Kiss Went On For A While,He Picked Up From The Counter And Made An Attempt Of Walkin' To The Bedroom With Me

Me: Uhhhm I Don't Think I'm Ready For That Kinda Step

He Stopped And Sighed Then Put Me Down,He Walked To The Bedroom And Left Me Standing There. "O-W-K-Y"

I Went To The Lounge And Perused For A Movie,There Was Nothing Interesting So I Just Watched Music Videos And Lied On The Couch.I Fell Asleep O.O I Woke Up At 4 pm "YHOO I'M DEAD" My Phone Was Batteryless

I Woke Up To Someone Opening The Door,Menzi Got In With Two Takeaways

Menzi: Someone Is Finally Awake,Thought You Died On That Couch

Me: Haha Funny,Why Didn't You Wake Me Up? My Parents Are Gonna Kill Me

Menzi: Disturbing Someone On The Sleep Is Rude

Me: What Is Not Rude To You?

Menzi: Watching You Sleeping

Me: Mxm

Menzi: You Should Sleep Round Here a Lot

Me: Yeah Ayt,What Do You Have In There?

Menzi: I Don't Know Your Favorite Meal So I
Just Bought Chips And Fish

Me: As Long As I'm Gonna Be Full,I'm Up For
Whatever

Menzi: A Girl Shouldn't Eat That Much Or
Everything

Me: Maybe I'm Not a Girl Then

He Gave Me My Takeaway But I First Went To
The Bathroom To Wash My Face And Rinse My
Mouth.I Found Menzi With Two Guys In The
Lounge

Menzi: WHAT?? ARE Y'ALL CRAZY?? WHAT DID

YOU EXPECT? JEEZ Y'ALL KNOW I DON'T TRUST ANYONE WHY WOULD YOU- DAMMIT!

Guy1: We Didn't Know He Would Betray Us

Menzi: WHY WOULD I BELIEVE THAT YOU TWO WEREN'T PART OF THIS STEALING FROM ME?

Guy2: Dude We've Been Working Witchu For Years Now?

Menzi: That's Not Enough Time For Me To Trust Any Of Your Asses,Go And Get My Money Back Then Maybe,MAYBE We Might Talk Bout Trust And LOYALTY

The Two Guys Looked At Each Other,At Me Then And Menzi.

Guy1: Sure Boss

Menzi: I Swear If You Don't Find That Money,Some Souls Will Have To Skip The

Country

Guy2: I'm Sure It Won't Get To That

Menzi: You Should Be On Your Way To Look For My MONEY My Damn! Money Ayt Now

The Guys Went Out

Me: You Kay?!

Menzi: I'll Be Fine

I Sat Down And We Both Ate In Silence,But I Kept Glancing At Menzi Who Was So Not There With Me.His Mind Was Just Somewhere Else.

After We Were Both Done,I Threw The Paper Plates In The Dustbin Then Took My Bag

Me: I Have To Go Now

Menzi: Can't You Stay For The Night?

Me: That's Taking Disrespect To A Whole New Level

He Just Looked At Me And Took His Keys The Walked Out,I Followed Him.He Drove Me Home Then Parked In Front Of My House

Me: Bye

Menzi: Sure

He Pecked My Lips Then I Collected Some Valour And Walked In The House,All The Cars Were In The Garage So The Rents Were Back OBJ:(

I Slowly Opened The Door And Got In,Dad Was Playing Video Games With Vusi And Olwethu

Me: Hello Family

They Just Looked At Me And Went Back To
What They Were Doing,When I Was Bout To
Take My First Step On The Stairs

Mom: Young Lady Get Over Here

Shit! I Turned And Went To Mom In The
Kitchen,I Found Owethu Peeling Potatoes

Me: Hello Ma

Mom: Don't Hello Ma Me,Where The Hell Do
You Come From?

Me: Uhhm Menzi Menzi Picked Me Up From
School

Mom: So Why Was Your Phone Off?

Me: My Battery Died And I Forgot To Charge It

Mom: Even If I'm The One Who Cheered For This Relationship, You Still Young And You'll Have To Do Things The Right Way, CALLING US

Me: I'm Sorry Ma

Mom: Your Dad Need Some Explanation

Me: I'll Explain Everything To Him

Mom: Go And Change So You Can Help Me With Supper

Me: Yes Mom

I Went To My Room And Changed, I Went To Help Mom With Dinner. We All Sat Down To Eat, I Prayed Then We All Started Digging In

Dad: Esihle Ain't There Something You Have. To Tell Me?

Ohh Damn!

Me: Uhhm I'm Sorry For Disappearing And Not Telling You Bout It, Menzi Picked Me Up At School

Vusi: Menzi? Great!

Dad: And Why Was Your Phone On Voicemail?

Me: My Battery Died

Vusi: And Then Training?

Me: What Training?

Oohhhh Shit!!

Vusi: Is This Menzi Guy Feeding You Something We Don't Know Off?

Me: Ohh That Training

Dad: Yes THAT TRAINING

Me: Dad I'm Sorry I Totally Forgot

Dad: Do You Want Your Ass Killed?

Owethu: Why Would Her Ass Get Killed?

Voice: Coz Your Father Couldn't Help But Make Enemies When Growing Up

Dad: Really Dude?

Uncle B: Hope You Dished Up For Me Too

Mom: And Why Would We When You Have Your Own House And Wife?

Uncle B: Coz I Told You That Imma Pop Outta Nowhere Anytime I Want To Just To Eat Here

Mom: I Hate You

Uncle B: I Love You Too Lil Sis

Dad: So Wassup My Nikka?

Uncle B: I Hear That There Are Some Movements Happening And Soon There Might Be Trouble In Paradise

Dad: Heard Something Concerning Us?

Uncle B: Nikka You Run This City So If There's Some Suspicious Movement,It Concerns You....The Police Arrested Some Fucked Up Nikka With 5 Million In The Back Of His Car.They Say He's A Gangster Or Something

Dad: Nona Our Guys Got Arrested

Uncle B: Exactly It Might Be One Of Those Dumb Asses That Sniffed Round Your Palace

Mom: Meaning There Is Someone Playing Their Own Game In Our Territory

Uncle B: Nikka You Married a Smart Bitch

Olwethu: Is Mom A Bitch?

Uncle B: A Big One

Olwethu: Who Else Is She Sleeping With Besides Dad? Uncle B Told Me That A Bitch Is A Female Who Sleep With Many Men

Dad: BONGA!!

Uncle B: I Was Just Doing My Job As An Uncle

Mom: Then You Can't Do Your Job Properly

Dad: I Hope Vusi And Esihle You Listening, No
Skipping Training Now And Change Of
Plans, Tomorrow I'm The One Who Gonna Break
Your Bones

Great!! Just Great! [OBJ]:([OBJ]- - [OBJ]:(

[05/18, 19:03] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT22  

The Following Day I Woke Up And Got Ready
For School, Mom Was Making Breakfast With
The Twins In The Kitchen

Me: Morning Family

Mom: Morning Sweetie

Twins: Yeah

Me: Last Time I Checked The Twins Were Gonna Bring You And Dad Breakfast In Bed The Whole Week

Mom: I Don't Wanna Eat Egg Shells For Breakfast Thank You

Owethu: Mom I Can Cook, Making Eggs Ain't a Big Deal

Mom: If You Can Cook Then You'll Be The One Making Dinner Tonight

Vusi: I See Mom You Wanna Kill All Of Us, I Should Call Uncle B And Tell Him Not To Come Tonight

Owethu: You Can't Even Make Porridge So I Wouldn't Say Anything If I Were You

Vusi: I Can Cook Honey But I Hide My Skills So That Mom Won't Make Me Cook While I'm A Guy

Olwethu: Yeah Right, Now Can We Eat?

Mom Dished Up And We All Sat Down

Me: Where's Dad?

Mom: He Had To Leave Early Today For Some Business Thingy

Vusi: Is He Still Gonna Break Our Bones?

Mom: Yeap

Olwethu: What's Up With This Breaking Each Other's Bones Talk?

Vusi: You Still Young For It But Don't Worry You'll Find Out When You're Old Enough For It

Me: So If Dad Ain't Round, Who's Gonna Drive Us To School?

Vusi: I Will

Me: Mom?

Mom: Yeah I Have No Choice But To Let Vusi Take The Ford Coz If I Drive You To School Together With The Twins,I'll Be Late For Work

Me: But Mo-

Vusi: Didn't You Hear Mom? She'll Be Late For Work If She Drives Us To School

Me: You Enjoying This,Ain't You?

Mom: You Two Eat Up Please Before You Become Late For School

We All Finished Up Eating Then Mom Gave Vusi The Keys And We Got In The Car

Vusi: When Last Did You Talk To Lutho?

Me: How Is That Any Of Your Business?

Vusi: I Care Bout You Kay?! You My Lil Sis

Me: We Agemates

Vusi: Mxm Whatever, Elethu Said Hi

Me: Whoa WHO? So He's Still Alive

Vusi: Did You Want Him To Die?

Me: I Would Not Lose Anything Even If He'd Die

Vusi: Unfortunately He's So Much Alive

Me: Wow

Vusi: He's Coming Back Today For His Brother's Funeral

Me: Good For Him

Vusi: And He Said He Won't Rest Till He Gets You

Me: Let Him Dream On

Vusi: Haha So It's Just A Dream?

Me: Elethu Is A Player And Secondly He's Younger Than Me

Vusi: Haha Whoa What??

Me: He's My Agemate


Vusi: So?

Me: I Can't Date Someone My Age

Vusi: These Two Old Guys You Dated Already
Made You Think You All Grown Up

Me: Aren't I?

Vusi: I Ain't Gonna Say Anything

We Got To School Then Vusi Parked The Car
And We Both Got Up, Almost All The Eyes Were
On Us. Girls Were Drooling Over Vusi  - Not
That I Was Surprised, He Knew That Was Gonna
Happen.

I Looked For Inam And Found Her Studying In
Class

Me: My Future Sister In Law

Inam: That's If Your Brother Doesn't Get
Something New To Tap And Leaves My Flat Ass

Me: That Brother Of Mine Loves That Flat Ass
Of Yours

Inam: How You Bitch?

Me: I'm Good Babe Yew?

Inam: Good Too...Litha Came To Me And We
Talked Bout That Matric Ball Thing And We
Gonna Go For Shopping Saturday

Me: So He Got No Problem With It?

Inam: Nope And He's A Good Guy

Me: Mhmhm

Inam: What?

Me: Nhaa Nothing Babe So What Are You Tryna
Get Into Your Skull Here?

She Showed Me What She Was Doing And We
Studied Together,We Went To The Parade Lines

For Prayers Then Went Back To Class.The Day Wasn't Bad,Vusi Drove Us Home And We Got Changed And Drove To The Warehouse.We Found Five Cars Outside

Vusi: Our Bones Are Really Gonna Get Broken Here,Uncle Alex Is Here Too

Me: WHAT??

Vusi: Yeap

Me: Dad Really Wants Us To Die

We Went In And Found Dad With Uncle Bonga,Uncle Alex,Uncle Thabo,Uncle Lethu,Uncle Thabang And Uncle Danger

Vusi: Our Asses Are Gonna Get Kicked Here

Uncle B: They Gonna Be Toasted Boy

Dad: Okay We Gonna Start Witcho

Driving.Danger,Bonga,Thabang And Lethu Are Gonna Help You With That

Me: I Choose Uncle B And T

Dad: Hope You Won't Regret Choosing These Two.You'll Also Have To Drive Witcho Brother Then You'll Both Do This On Your Own

Me: Dad Do You Really Love Us? It Seems Like You Wanna Kill Us Ayt Now

Uncle B: Let's Get Down To Business

They Gave Us Both Two Guns And We Had To Load Them Ourselves,When We Were Trained How To Use The Guns,They Were Already Loaded When They Were Given To Us And Now We Had To Load Them Ourselves.

After Loading The Guns We Went To The Cars

Uncle B: Esihle You Gonna Drive While We Do

The Men's Work

Uncle T: She Has To Do The Shooting Coz She's
The One Being Trained Here

Uncle B: Dude If We Wanna Win Against Those
Dickheads We Have To Do The Shooting

Uncle T: No!

Uncle B: I Hate You Thabang

Uncle T: I Love You Too My Nikka

Uncle B: Don't Make Me Look Gay In Front Of
My Niece Dude

We Heard a Gun Shot,Vusi Was Sitting On The
Door With His Upper Body Outta The
Window.He Shot In The Air Two Times

Uncle L: Are You Chickening Out Or What?

Uncle B: Don't Flatter Yourself Lil Bro,I Can Beat
You At This Using Only One Hand

Uncle L: Then Prove It

We All Got In The Car,Uncle B Drove While Uncle T And I Sat On The Doors Waiting For The Car To Drive Away,The Minute Uncle B Drove Away,The Shooting Started.Vusi Shot At Me But I Pulled Myself Back Into The Car And He Shot The Right Mirror,Leaving It Glassless.

Me: Am I Supposed To Shoot Back?

Uncle B: Jeez Princess Are You Really That Dumb? In This You Have No Brother Or Uncle You Shoot Every Ass You See

Me: Haha Every As-

Uncle T Pulled Me By My Leg And We Both Fell On The Back Seat While Both Our Windows Shattered

Vusi: Someone's Ass Almost Got Toasted

Their Car Passed And Drove In Front Of Us

Uncle B: See What Happens When You Put Me Behind The Wheel Not The Gun? You Both Almost Went To Hell

Uncle T: Shut Up Bonga And Drive!

Dad Was Right OBJ:v I Was Starting To Regret Choosing Those Two.

Uncle B Drove The Car Like He Wanted To Kill Us Before Vusi,Uncle L And Uncle D Do.

Uncle T And I Went Back To The Shooting,I Shot The Back Window Of The Car While Uncle T Shot Both Of The Mirrors

Uncle B: Take The Wheel,I'll Show The Princess How This Is Done

Uncle T: No Yo-

Uncle B Pulled Him By The Leg To The Passengers Seat And He Let Go Of The Wheel While The Car Was On High Speed,I Had A Short Prayer Inside Yho!

Uncle T: BONGA ARE YOU MAD??

Uncle B: Just Drive The Damn Car And Lemme Show You How This Is Done

Uncle T Jumped For The Wheel Coz The Car Was On Its Way Outta The Road,He Got Hold Of It And Drove.Uncle B Started Shooting And He Shot Uncle Lethu's Arm

Me: You Shot Uncle Lethu!

Uncle B: Now That's How It's Done Now It's Your Turn

Me: WHOA MY WHAT?

Uncle B: I Said It's Your Turn,SHOOT!

I Swallowed Hard And Pushed My Upper Body Outta The Window And Shot At The Car,I Couldn't Shoot My Brother Like He Shot His....HELL TO THE NO! While I Was Shooting In Deep Thoughts,I Heard a Blasting Sound Then The Car In Front Flew Of The Road

Me: NOOOOOOOO! NO NO

Uncle B: See,That Wasn't Hard

Me: What If They Get Hurt Or Even Die?

Uncle B: Funeral Food Is Delicious And It's Been A While Since We've Been To a Funeral So If

They Die Then Thanks To You Coz We Gonna Eat Three Times

Me: ARE YOU FOR REAL?

Uncle T: Haha Don't Mind Bonga,I'm Sure They Are Fine

Uncle T Stopped The Car Then I Ran Out To Where The Car Landed,There Was Smoke Coming From It But Luckily They Were All Out Even Though They Were Coughing.Vusi Had a Bleeding Stretch On His Cheek,Uncle Danger Was Only Coughing,Uncle Lethu's Arm Was Bleeding Like He Was Gonna Die

Uncle B: So Y'all Are Still Alive? Mxaaa Now There Won't Be No Funeral

Uncle L: You Must Be Thrilled That You Won Yet Again

Uncle B: You'd Never Win Against Me Lil Bro

Just Accept That


Vusi: What If We Died?

Uncle B: Then We'd Bury You Then Move On
With Our Lives

Vusi: Wow

Uncle B: Don't Worry We Don't Shoot To Kill
Each Other But I'm Sure Aviwe's Puppies Would
Do That With Pleasure

Me: You Scaring Me

We All Got In The Car We Were Driving And
Drove Back To The Warehouse, We Found Dad
And Uncle Alex Dressed In Track Pants And
Vests Damn They Were Built Up And Hot :)

Dad: So How Did It Go?

Uncle Alex: I See Lethu Decided To Get Shot

Uncle B: Next Time We Should Do This, Miss

And I Against You And Thabang

Uncle Alex: I'll Consider That When I Wanna Die

We All Laughed

Dad: Kids Follow Me


We Walked To This Room And There Were Guns On The Table,Dad And Uncle Alex Took Theirs And Told Vusi And I To Take Those We Thought We Were Gonna Need.So It Was Gonna Be Me And Dad Against Uncle Alex And Vusi But First We Went Out And They Made Us Shoot Human Figured Boards,They Kept Putting Them Far And Far And Made Us Shoot Them From Different Angles.That Was Soooooo Tiring But Hey We Had To Do All That Ish.Finally It Was Time For The Do Or Die Battle,I Was So Scared Coz The Shooting Was Real.

Dad Shot Up Then Vusi And I Ran To Hide While Dad Exchanged Gun Shots With Uncle Alex,They Were Able To Duck And Do All That Ish,That's What Scared Me More.I Also Got Up And Shot Where Vusi Was Hiding,I'd Shoot Then Hide Again But He Didn't Come Out.I Got Up And Bam! He Kicked Me On My Chest And I Fell On The Floor While I Coughed For My Life

Vusi: Gotcha

Me: C'mon Dude I'm a Girl You Can't Kick Me This Hard

Vusi: This Is a Do Or Die Remember

I Threw My Gun At His Right Hand,It Hit Him So Hard That He Lost Control Of His Gun.I Got Up And Kicked Him But He Ducked,He Pulled Me By My Leg And I Fell On The Floor.OUCH! :(He Got On Top Of Me And Kept Slapping Me

While He Laughed,I Held His Neck With My Legs And Strangled Him,He Let Go Of My Arms Then I Pushed Him Off Me.We Could Hear Dad And Uncle Alex Exchanging Punches.

When I Tried To Run To My Gun,Vusi Pulled Me By My Leg And I Hit My Head On The Floor.OOUCH!! [OBJ]:'(

Vusi: Not So Fast Lil Sis

He Got Hold Of His Gun And Pointed It At Me,I Lifted My Hands Up

Vusi: Someone Is Giving Up Already

I Walked Slowly,Getting Closer To Him.I Kicked His Hand And The Gun Fell Away Then I Kicked Him On The Stomach,The Chest Then He Fell

On The Floor.I Got On Top Of Him And Slapped Him Too

Me: Who's The Boss Now?

He Pushed Me Off Him And I Fell And Hit My Head On The Wall.OUCH!!! [OBJ]:'(

Dad: That's Enough Now For Today

Vusi: Just When I Was Gonna Finish Her Off

Dad: Let's Go Home

Vusi: So Who Wins?

Dad: You're a Team,You Both Win

Vusi: But I Tho-

Dad: You Think Too Much,Princess Get Up And Go And Shower So We Could Go

I Got Up And We Both Walked To The Bathroom While Vusi Kept Hitting Me On The Back Of My Head Saying He Won.

We Both Showered Then Drove Home,Mom Was Already Setting Up The Table.It Was Dark Outside

Dad: Hey Pumpkin

Mom: Hey Bbe,So How Did The Training Go?

Dad: It Went Very Well,Your Brothers Shot Each Other

Mom: You Mean Bonga Shot Lethu

Me: He Wanted To Show Him That He'll Always Win Against Him

Mom: I Still Can't Believe Bonga Is My Brother

Vusi: And I Almost Sent Your Daughter To Her Ancestors

Mom: Vusi! You Okay My Love?

Me: Yeah But My Head Hurts

Mom: I'll Give You Some Pills Kay?!

Me: Thanks Mom

Olwethu: And Then Wassup Witcho Cheek Big Brother?

Vusi: Your Big Sis Decided To Make Us Fly With a Car

Mom: Haha Someone Also Got His Ass Toasted

Vusi: It Was Just a One Time Thing,She'd Never Win Against Me

Dad: Seems Like We Got Ourselves Another Bonga Who'd Even Kill His Own Sister Just To Show That He's The Strongest

Vusi: I Ain't That Mindless

Owethu: I'm So Gonna Tell Uncle Bonga That You Said He's Mindless

Vusi: And I'm So Gonna Whip You-

Mom: Okay Okay Let's Have Dinner In Peace

Please

We Finished Eating Then I Took Some Headache Pills And Went To My Room.I Took My Phone From Under The Pillow And I Had Few Missed Calls From Lutho And A Message From Menzi And Also Missed Calls.I Started With The Message

" I Called You Countless Times And You Never Picked Up Your Phone,Wassup? Are You With That School Boy Of Yours?"

Wow,Just Wow!

I Dialed Lutho's Number And He Picked Up On The First Ring

Call Convo

Lutho: Hey Bbe

Me: I Don't Have Enough Airtime,What Do You Want?

Lutho: So You Still Mad At Me?

Me: Lutho What Do You Want?

Lutho: I'll Pick You Up After School Tomorrow ,We Need To Talk Bout This

Me: Whoa What Do You Mean You Gonna Pick Me Up After School Tomorrow?

Lutho: I'm Back In Town And I Don't Think I'll Be Going Anywhere Anytime Soon

'(FUCK ME SIDEWAYS

[05/18, 19:04] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT23  

UH-OH o.O

Me: WHOA WHAT??

Lutho: You Wanted Me To Come Back,I'm Back

Me: We Both Know You Ain't Back Because Of Me

Lutho: What Matters Is That I'm Back For You

Me: Lutho I Told You I'm With Someone Else

Lutho: I Can't Wait To Meet Witcho Friend Coz He's Just A Friend From Now Onwards

Me: Hehe What Are You? My Life Owner?

Lutho: I'm Your Boyfriend,Good Night Sugar Boom Boom.I'll See You Tomorrow

Me: Mxm

Lutho: I Still Love You Too Bbe

With That Said He Hung Up

"Damn Him! He Leaves And Fucks Other Girls
Where He Was And Comes Back When He Feels
Like It And Think I'll Just Dance To His
Tune [OBJ:] (But I Still Love Him With Every Cell In
My Body"

I Lied In My Bed While I Thought Of The Good
Times I Had With Him,I Loved That Ass Even
Though He Hurt Me.I Fell Asleep In My
Thoughts.

My Alarm Woke Me Up Then I Bathed,My Head
Wasn't Hurting Anymore [OBJ:]

I Went To Have Breakfast With My Family

Dad: Eat Quickly Coz I Have An Early Meeting

Today

Vusi: Don't Worry We'll Drive Ourselves To School

Dad: Huh?

Vusi: Mom Gave Us The Ford Yesterday

Dad: Sisanda!

Mom: I Was Gonna Be Late If I Drove Them Myself Bbe

Me: Was She Supposed Not To Give Us The Car?

Dad: Not If You Going To School,I Can't Have My Children Lookin' All Spoilt And Everything

Vusi: You Too Late,Every Girl At School Wants Me Now

Owethu: I'm Sure You Said The Car Is Yours

Vusi: Isn't It Blatant?

Dad: Too Bad They Won't Be Seeing You Driving That Car Anymore,Sisanda Stop Spoiling These Kids.They'll Have To Work Their Butts Off For

Their Own Cars

Vusi: Dad You For Real?

Dad: I'm So Fucken For Real,When We Were Your Age We Walked Our Asses To School

Vusi: We Ain't You Dad C'mon

Dad: Then I'll Make You,Finish Up So We Can Go

We Finished Eating Then Dad Drove Us To School,Dad Gave Us Lunch Money.I Left Talking To Vusi While I Walked To My Class

Vusi: Tell Inam That I'm Coming (Shouting)

Me: Kay

I Got To My Class And Opened The Door,I Found Inam And Litha Laughing And Looking All Cozy

Me: Uhhhm Hi

Inam: Hey Bbe

Litha: Hey Esihle

Me: Am I Disturbing Something?

Inam: No Silly,Litha Was Just Bout to Leave

Me: Ohh?

Litha: Uhhm Yeah,Bye Girls

Me: Uhhm Bye

Inam: Bye Litha

Just When Litha Was Bout To Open The
Door,Vusi Opened It Before Him

Vusi: Eita

Litha: Yeah

Vusi Looked At Him Confused But He Just Brushed Whatever Thought He Had And Walked To Inam,They Hugged And Had a Peck

Inam: What Happened To Your Cheek?

Vusi: Was Having a Fight Witcho Friend And She Bit My Cheek

Me: Dude You Too Tall For Me To Bite Your Cheek

Vusi: Just Kiddin',I Hit My Head On My Closet

Inam: But This Looks Like Something Cut You

Vusi: Enough Bout My Cheek,Whatchu Doing Saturday? I Want Us To Go To The Beach And Just Relax

Inam: Uhhhm I'm Sorry I Already Have Plans,I'm Going Out For Some Shopping With a Friend

Vusi: I'm Sure Esihle Won't Have a Problem

Postponing

Inam: The Thing Is,I Ain't Going With Her

Vusi: I Didn't Know You Had Other Friends

Inam: I'm Sorry Bbe

The Bell Rang For Us To Go For The Morning
Prayer

Vusi: We'll Talk Some Other Time,I Gotta
Bounce

Vusi Left,I Looked At Inam

Inam: What?

Me: Nothing

We Went For The Prayers Then Went To Our

Classes,A Car Parked Outside The Gate.It Was Just Like Menzi's Car,Philela Got Outta The Car And Guess What? Menzi Too (((Almost All The Pupils Were Lookin' At Them ((

Inam: You Okay?

Me: I Guess Dating Ain't For Me

Inam: Why You Saying That?

Me: Just Look At That

I Pointed At Menzi Who Was Busy Smooching And Grabbing Philela's Ass

Inam: Who's That?

Me: It's Menzi

Inam: Ouch!

Me: Guys Are All Just The Same

Menzi Took Out His Wallet And Gave Few Notes To Philela Then She Bribed The Guy On The Gate To Open Up For Her Then She Got In.I Walked To Her

Me: You Love Taking People's Men,Don't You?

Philela: Excuse Me?

Me: You Sleeping With Him,Ain't You?

Philela: What Is Your Friend Talkin Bout?

Inam: She's Not Worth It Bbe,Just Let This Go

Philela: Haha Whoa Are You Talkin' Bout Menzi? Coz I Saw How You Looked At Us,So You Know Him? Or Should I Say You Fuckin With Him?

Me:.....

Philela: It's Clear You Didn't Give It To Him Like I Do

Inam: Let's Just Go Bbe

Philela: Haha Wow So Miss Morena The Virgin Of The School There's Nothing Pure Bout You After All

Me: Philela Don't Fuck With Me!

Inam: Bbe Just Leave It

Philela: Or What??

Me: PHILELA I'M GONNA REARRANGE YOUR FACE SO HARD THAT EVEN YOUR MENZI WON'T RECOGNISE YOU

Philela: Haha Ohh?

Inam: ESIHLE!

Me: What??

Inam: Save Your Energy And Breath Please,She Ain't Worth It

Inam Pulled Me To Our Class

Inam: Are You Mad?

Me: She's Fuckin' With My Boyfriend

Inam: You Makin Yourself Look Desperate
Bbe,If This Menzi Guy Really Loved You,He
Wouldn't Be Driving Another Bitch To The Same
School You Go To And Making Out With Her In
Front Of The Whole School

Vusi Came To Us And He Looked At Me

Me: Spare Me The I Told You So

Vusi: Just Wanted To See If You Okay

Me: I'm Fine!

Vusi: I Told Yo-

Me: I SAID SPARE ME THE I TOLD YOU SO!

I Walked To My Class And Buried My Head In

My Hands, Inam Sat Next To Me And Brushed My Back. I Felt Like Crying But Menzi Wasn't Worth My Tears So I Kept My Tears For A Droughtic Day. I Wasn't Really Concentrating In Class, I Kept Thinking Bout Lutho's Come Back.

I Wished School Wouldn't Be Out OBJ:(The Bell Rang And I Took My Time Taking My Bag And Walking Outta The Class, I Prayed That Dad Arrives Before Lutho Does And Guess What?? He Was Already Waiting Outside His Car For Me

Me: Hi

Lutho: You Don't Look Happy To See Me

Me:.....

Lutho: Okay Let's Start Over And Do This The Right Way

Me: Lutho I Don't Have Time For That

He Got In His Car Then Came Out

Lutho: My Sugar Boom Boom,I've Missed You
So Much

Me:.....

Lutho: You Were Supposed To Say 'Ohhhh I
Missed You Too Baby'

Me: Are You Done?

Lutho: Wassup With The Stinking Attitude?

Me: Mxm

Lutho: Get In The Car Esihle

Me: Lutho I Wanna Go Home And Lie Down,Are
You Done?

Lutho: I Also Have a Bed In My House In Case
You Forgot

Me:.....

He Pulled Me By My Arm And Threw Me In The Car Then Got In Too And Drove Away.

Lutho: So You Didn't Miss Me?

Me:.....

Lutho: How Long Are You Gonna Keep This Up?

Me:.....

Lutho: Mxm

He Parked In Front Of His House And Got Out While I Sat Still And Looked Outside The Window,He Came To My Side And Opened The Door And Pulled Me Out

Lutho: Esihle You Too Old For This Shit! Get Your Attitude Together And Give Me The Respect I Deserve From You

Me: Respect Lutho? Respect? What Do You

Know Bout Respect?

Lutho: Mxm

He Walked In And Stood Looking At Me Coz I
Kept Still On The Spot I Was On

Lutho: Esihle Why The Fuck You Acting Like A
Child?

Me:.....

Lutho: Is This New Boyfriend Of Yours Makin
You Act Like This?

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle Get Your Ass In Here Before I Drag
It Myself

I Slowly Walked In

Lutho: What Was So Hard In That?

Me: Lutho I Want To Go Home

Lutho: You'll Go Home When We've Talked And Worked Things Out

Me:.....

Lutho: What Do You Wanna Eat?

Me: I'm Not Hungry

Lutho: We Both Know You Love Your Stomach More Than You Love Me,Let's Go To The Kitchen And Make Something To Eat

He Was Right,I Was Really Hungry.We Got To The Kitchen And Made Some Sandwiches,Lutho Put Me On The Counter And Looked At Me

Me: What?

Lutho: I Missed This Pretty Face

Me: Please Don't

Lutho: So Who Did You Decide To Give My Position To?

Me:.....

Lutho: Is He Hot Like Me? Does He Love Like I Do?

Me: I Don't Think That Relationship Will Work Out, You Guys Are All The Same! He's Fuckin Round Too

Lutho: Nhaa Don't Get This All Wrong Sugar, Guys Ain't The Same And Besides No Other Guy Would Love You Like I Do

Me: Mxm

Lutho: So Did You Sleep With Him?

Me: I Ain't That Loose

Lutho: That's My Wife

Me: I Don't Sleep 'round Like You Lutho, You Left Me To Fuck With Other Bitches While I-

He Picked Me Up And Kissed Me,The Kissing Got Hot Then He Walked To The Room With Me.He Threw Me On The Bed And Got On Top Of Me,We Kissed And He Took My Clothes Off And I Took Off His Too.He Opened My Legs Wide And Thrusted Himself In [OBJ:]'(It Felt Like The First Time,It Hurt As Hell And My Cookie Was On Fire,Literally On Fire [OBJ:]'(Lutho Lied Next To Me As We Both Tried To Catch Our Breaths.

Lutho: I Missed You

Me:.....

Lutho: I Love You Miss Morena One Day Gonna Be Mrs Zizwe

Me: Mxm Stop Making Promises You Won't Fulfill Lutho

Lutho: Making You My Wife One Day Is On Top

Of My List

Me:.....

Someone Knocked

Lutho: Just When I'm Still Enjoying Some Time
With My Wife,Some Dickhead Has To Disturb
Me

Me: It Might Be Important

He Got Up And Wore His Pants

Me: I'll Bath While You Attend Who Ever That Is

Lutho: I'll Join You In a Few

Me: Wear a Vest Or T-shirt,You'll Scare People
Away With Those Tattoos

Lutho: You Just Afraid I Might Charm Em With

My Hot Body

Me: Don't Flatter Yourself Dude

He Pecked My Lips Then Walked Out,I Went To Bath Then Wrapped a Towel 'round My Body And Walked To The Lounge.Lutho Got In

Me: Where You From?

Lutho: Just Walked My Cousin Bro Out

Me: Wish I Saw Him

Lutho: One Day You Will So Where Were We?

Me: You Were Bout To Bath

Lutho: But I Still Want To Take A Bite

Me: No Lutho I Have To Go Home Before My Parents Kill Me

Lutho: They Won't When They Find Out That They Gonna Be Grandparents

Me: Huh?

Lutho: We Might Be Parents Soon sugar.

[05/18, 19:06] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

♠Crop_Top♠

#INSERT24 ♡

"THE FUCK DID LUTHO JUST SAY?? HE BETTER
SAY HE'S KIDDIN OR SOME'ING"

Me: Whoa Whoa WHAT??

Lutho: Lemme Go And Shower So That I Can
Drive You Home

Me: Lutho You Can't Drop This Kinda Bomb On Me And Tell Me You Have To Go And Shower!

Lutho: Sugar Don't You Wanna Go Home?

Me: I Want To But You Can-

He Smashed His Lips On Mine,I Tried To Push Him Away But He Was Too Strong For Me To Succeed In Pushing Him.I Ended Up Kissin' Him Back,He Picked Me Up

Me: No No Hell To The No

He Chuckled And Put Me Down

Me: My Cookie Still Hurts,I Can't Have You Demolishing It Again

Lutho: You Make Me Sound Too Much Bbe

Me: For Me You're

Lutho: But Destroying It Bbe? C'mon

Me: You Were Kiddin' Bout That Being Parents
Soon Thingy Right?

Lutho: Bbe We Didn't Use a Condom

My Heart Started To Beat Fast [OBJ]:'("NO IT
CAN'T BE,LUTHO DID THIS ON PURPOSE BUT
WHY??"

Me: Lutho No No No! I'm Still In Grade 11 I Can't
Be a Mother! I Still Need a Mother's Love
Myself,How Can I Take Care Of a
Baby???!! [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

Lutho: I'll Be Witchu Every Step Of The Way

Me: LUTHO ARE YOU CRAZY????

Lutho: For You,I Am

Me: I'M STILL YOUNG FOR A BABY LUTHO!

Lutho: Lemme Go And Shower Sugar

Me: We'll Drive To The Pharmacy First,You'll Buy a Morning After Pill For Me

Lutho: Hehe You Crazy

Me: LUTHO I DON'T WANT NO BABY

Lutho: Go And Get Dressed While I Shower

He Left To The Bathroom And I Walked To The Bedroom,Sat On The Bed And Cried.

"Lutho Can't Be For Real,He Just Comes Back And Tries To Impregnate Me! Is This Guy Mad Or What?"

Lutho: Sugar C'mon You Crying?

Me: Lutho I'm Not Ready To Be A Mother,I'm Not Ready To Be a Parent .I'm Still 16 For Goodness' Sake

Lutho: Whoa Whoa Did You Just Say 16?

Me: Yeah I Lied To You And Said I'm 17,I'm Still
16 Lutho

Lutho: Wow,I Thought You Were Gonna Turn 18
Next Year

Me:.....

Lutho: But You'll Be Our Child's Hot Teen Mom

Me: Lutho Stop It!

He Came To Me And Wiped My Tears,He
Hugged Me And Brushed My Back.I Felt At Ease
A Lil

Lutho: Bbe I Really Wanna Start A Family Witchu

Me: But Lutho I'm Still Young For That

Lutho:.....

He Went To Lotion Then I Got Dressed,We Went

To The Car In Silence.I Looked Outside The Window And Sobbed

Lutho: Baby?

Me:.....

Lutho: Sugar You Know I Love You Right?!

Me:.....

Lutho: Right?!

I Just Nodded And Wiped Off My Tears

Me: Can You Please Drive To The Pharmacy?

Lutho: So You Serious Bout This Morning After Pill?

Me: Lutho We Ain't Ready For A Baby

Lutho: You Not

Me: What Are We Gonna Do With a Baby?

Lutho:.....

Me: Don't Tell Me You Mad Coz I'm Doing Us A Favor Here,We Too Young To Start A Family

Lutho:.....

Me: Wow

He Really Drove To The Pharmacy And He Went Out The Car And Went In The Pharmacy Then Came Back With The Box Of The Pill.He Got In,Sat On His Chair Them Threw The Box To Me

Me: Thanks

Lutho: Go Ahead And Kill My Child

Me: Lutho You Ain't Being Fair

Lutho:.....

Me: Bbe C'mon You Know We Ain't Ready For A Baby

Lutho:.....

Me: O-kay Then I'll Just Keep Quiet Too

He Parked Few Houses Away From My House
Then We Both Sat In Silence,I Finally Opened
The Door

Lutho: So You Gonna Leave Without Giving Me
My Goodbye Kiss?

Me: I Thought You Were Mad At Me

Lutho:.....

I Got Closer To Him And Kissed Him,He Kissed
Me Back And We Had A Not That Long Kiss.The
Ford Passed Next To His Car

Me: That's My Mom,I Gotta Go...Love You

Lutho: Love You Too Sugar

I Kissed His Cheek And Then Took My Bag And Got Out.I Walked To My House And Found Mom And The Twins Getting In The House

Me: Hey Yous

Mom: So They Really Left You For Training Today

Me: Vusi And Dad Left For Training?

Mom: Yeap,Your Dad Said He Wanted Some Private Time With Vusi Since He's The Future Of This Family

Me: I See

Mom: We Gonna Eat Out So Go And Get Changed

Me: Okay Ma

I Went To My Room And Changed To A Simple Outfit,We Took Dad's Car Then Mom Drove Us To Town.

I Excused Myself To Go And Pee,When I Came Back Menzi Was With The Family OBJ - - Great!

Me: Menzi

Menzi: My Princess

Me: Whatchu Doing Here?

Menzi: Didn't You Miss Me?

Me:.....

Mom: Menzi Is Gonna Join Us For Dinner

Me: Wow

Menzi: That's Great Isn't It Bbe?

Me: Yeah Right

Olwethu: Wassup Big Sis?

Me: What?

Olwethu: You Don't Look Happy To See Bhut'
Menzi?

Me: Just That I Wasn't Expecting Him

Owethu: You Not Good At Lying Sis

Me: Can We Please Make Our Orders? I'm
Starving

Mom: Uhhm Yeah

We Made Our Orders Then Our Food Arrived In
a Few,I Didn't Make Any Eye Contact With Menzi
I Was Just Disgusted By The Thought Of Him
And Philela In Bed,Doing It OBJ - -

Menzi: Uhhm I'm Sorry I Won't Be Able To Stay
For Dessert,I Have Somewhere To Go To

Mom: Ohh Thanks For Coming

Menzi: Uhhm Good Night Then Family

Mom: Baby Walk Menzi Out

Me: But I'm Still Eati-

Menzi: Please

Me: Fine!

I Got Up And We Both Walked To His Car
Outside, Menzi Grabbed Me Painfully By My Arm
And Pulled Me Closer To Him

Me: Ouch! Menzi You Hurtin' Me

Menzi: What's Wrong Witchu?

Me: What's Wrong With Me?

Menzi: I Saw How You Looked At Me Back In
There And How You Acted, The Fuck Is Wrong
Witchu? And Don't You Dare Tell Me It's Nothing!

Every Word He Said, His Grip Got Stronger And
My Arm Was Getting More Painful And Painful.

Me: MENZI YOU HURTIN' ME

Menzi: Hey Hey Don't You Dare Raise Your Voice When Talking To Me

Me: Let Go Off Me Menzi Please!

He Let Go Off Me

Menzi: So Are You Ready To Tell Me The Fuck Is Wrong Witchu?

Me: Are You Dating With Philela?

Menzi: The Fuck Is That?

Me: That Girl You Dropped At School Today,Are You Dating With Her?

Menzi: Ohh You Mean That Thing,I Was Just Slanking It

Me: You Were Just Slanking It Menzi? Is That

Supposed To Make Me Feel Better?

Menzi: What Else Do You Want Me To Say? I Was Just Having Some Fun With That Girl And That's It

Me: You Know What? I'm Not Up For This, We're Done. I Can't Do This Anymore

Menzi: You Should Be a Comedian

Me: I'm For Real

His Smack Turned Into The Most Evil Frown I've Ever Seen, He Held Both Of My Wrists And Tightened His Harder This Time 'round That I Could Feel My Blood Stopping To Move Through My Veins And Both My Hands Became Numb

Me: Menzi You Hurting Me!!

Menzi: Listen Here And Listen To Me Carefully!

No One Breaks Up With Me,I Do The Leaving
Not The Other Way 'round!

SHOOT ME!

[05/18, 19:07] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT25 ♡

I Started Crying,He Let Go Off Me And Looked
At Me As I Cried

Menzi: You Should Count Your Words Before
Throwing Em To Me,We Gonna Make This
Work.Like I Told I Was Just Slanking That Girl's
Ass And Then That's It,Nothing More

I Wiped My Tears And Attempted To Leave,He
Grabbed Me By My Arm AGAIN OBJ:(But Not
Painfully This Time 'round

Menzi: So You Just Gonna Leave While We Still
Talkin'?

Me: You The One Doing The Talkin' And I
Thought You Were Done Talkin'

Menzi: Give Me My Goodnight Kiss

Me: I Didn't Know You Could Be This Naive
Menzi,I'm Even Starting To Regret Ever Fallin' In
Love Witchu.You Say No One Breaks Up
Witchu,You Do The Leaving,Guess What? I'm
Done Witchu,Menzi We're Done.I Can't Be In
Love With Someone Who Hurts Me,First You
Slept With A Girl From My School And You Were
Not Even Ashamed To Drive Her To School Now
You Holding Me Like You Holding a Man Or

Someone Your Age.I'm Done Witchu Shame

He Pushed Me To His Car And I Hit My Head On
It.Ouch! [OBJ]:' (

Menzi: I Said Watch Your Words Esihle!

Me: I Hate You Menzi! I Hate You

He Pushed Me Into His Car And Also Got In,He
Locked The Doors

Menzi: Gimme Your Phone

Me: I Ain't Gonna Give You N-

I Felt a Slap Across My Face And I Swear I Saw
Stars

Menzi: I Said Gimme Your Phone

Me: Menzi Why Are You Doing This??

Menzi: Esihle Gimme The Phone

I Slowly Went To My Pocket And Took The Phone Out And Handed It Over To Him.He Took It,Switched It Off Then Took His Out And Called Someone

Call Convo

Menzi: You Busy Man?

.....

Menzi: I Need You To Take Care Of Someone For Me

.....

Menzi: It's Not a Guy You Moron,It's a Girl

.....

Menzi: Haha Nhaa Man I'll Tell You All The Details When We Meet,Be At My House In a Few

.....

Menzi: I Know I Could Always Count On You

He Hung Up And Looked At Me,He Started The Car

Me: Why Are You Doing This Menzi?

Menzi: It's Something That I Had To Do a Long Time Ago

Me: What Do You Mean?

Menzi: I'll Explain Everything To You When We Get To My House,Anyway It's Gonna Be A Long Week Or Maybe Month Witchu

Me: WHOA WHAT??

Menzi: Now Relax,Don't Try Anything Or You'll Be On Your Way To Your Ancestors

Me: WHAT??

Menzi: Just Chill I Won't Hurt You If You Cooperate With Me

I Started Crying All Over Again

Menzi: Just Shut Up Esihle!

He Parked In Front Of His House Then Pulled Me Out And Walked In With Me,He Threw Me To The Couch

Me: Menzi Why Are You Doing This?

He Grabbed Me Painfully By My Arm And

Walked To His Room,I Kicked Him On The Balls
Then He Let Go Off Me.I Ran Outta The
Room,When I Opened The Front Door,Two Guys
Were Bout To Get In But They Stood Still When
They Saw Me

Menzi: Throw Her In

He Was Standing Behind Me,Holding His Balls

Menzi: Take That Bitch To My Room And Tie
Her To The Chair

Guy1: Ain't She Your Girlfriend Boss?

Menzi: I Said Take Her To My Room

And Tie Her

Me: Menzi Why Are You Doing This To Me?

Menzi: Just Shut Up Bitch!

Me: Wow

The Guys Held Me And Walked To His Room With Me,They Made Me Sit On A Chair Then Strongly Tied Me To The Chair,They Put A Plaster On My Mouth.Menzi Got In

Menzi: You Can Leave The Room Now

Guy2: Sure Boss

The Two Guys Left,Leaving Me With The Soulless Monster

Menzi: You Know I Was Supposed Not To Fall In Love In This Game

"So This Was All A Game To You You Asshole"

Menzi: You Wanna Say Something?

He Came To Me And Pulled Off The Plaster.OUCH!

Menzi: You Made Me Fall In Love,You Complicated All This Shit

Me: Whatchu Talkin' Bout Menzi?

Menzi: Your Parents Are So Stupid,They Just Gave You To Me Before I Even Made A Move.They Made All Of This Easy For Me But YOU,YOU COMPLICATED THINGS AND MADE ME FALL IN LOVE

He Released a Slap Across My Face

"THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH THIS DUDE??"

Me: Menzi What's Wrong Witchu?

Menzi: You Know What,What's Done Is Done
Let's Live With What's Happening Now.I Had To
Avenge Someone's Death a Long Time Ago But
I Spent Years Figuring Out How I'm Gonna Take
Down Your Father

Me: My Father??

Menzi: Yes.He Killed My Uncle Few Years
Ago,Someone Who Took Care Of Me,Someone
Who Gave Me The Love I Never Got From My
Own Parents And Your Father Just Had To Take
That From Me

Me: And What Does That Have To Do With
Me? OBJ: '(

Menzi: You Were My Only Ticket To Them And
Besides Your Mother Gave You To Me

Me: You Gonna Rot In Hell

Menzi: The Awesome Part Is That Your Parents
Will Be Beside Me And Maybe You Too

Me: I Hate You Menzi! I Hate You!

Menzi: I Know Sweetheart

Me: Whatchu Want From Me Menzi?

Menzi: Look We Gonna Make This Simple And Easy,I Keep You Here As Long As I Like And Terrorize Your Father's Estate Till I Get Bored And Kill His Ass

Me: You Such a Bastard,Dad Gave You a Job,He Welcomed You Into His Home,He Trusted You

Menzi: Then He's Way Too Dumb For Someone In His Position,Gangster Kings Can Smell Trouble From Afar

Me:.....

Menzi: You Know This Was Supposed To Be Simple,I Make You Fall In Love Then Make A Move But I See You Had Other Plans,You Made Me Fall For You

Me: You So Pathetic

Menzi: I'll Go And Make You Something To Eat
So We Could Sleep

He Took The Plaster And Put It Back,He Left
Then I Heard Him Talkin' To Someone,The
Voice Sounded So Familiar

Menzi: What Brings You Here?

Voice: We Need To Talk

Menzi: Wassup?

Voice: We Hear That While We Were Away
You've Been Pushing Your Own Agenda 'round
Here

Menzi: I Needed Money What Did You Want Me
To Do?

Voice: BUT GOING BEHIND OUR BACKS DUDE?
AIN'T LOYALTY IMPORTANT TO YOU
ANYMORE?

Menzi: Dude I Have To Sleep Now,We'll Talk Bout This Tomorrow

Voice: You Have a Lot Of Explaining To Do When We Meet With The Guys,You Fucked Up Big Time Bro

Then I Heard A Door Being Banged,In A Few Menzi Got In With a Plate With Food

Menzi: Should I Feed You Or You Gonna Eat By Yourself? Ohh I Forgot That I Can't Untie You

He Took The Plaster Off My Mouth And Fed Me

Menzi: You're A Good Girl You Know

Me: Then Why You Doing This To Me?

Menzi: I Have To Make Your Whole Family Suffer

Me: Whoa Is This Uncle Of Yours Aviwe?

Menzi: So You Know Him?

Me:.....

Menzi Put The Plate Aside And Smashed His
Lips On Mine,I Bit Him

Menzi: BITCH!

Me: You Gonna Go To Hell!!

Menzi: Don't Worry I Always Vacate There

[05/18, 19:28] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT26 ♡

I Was Fearing For My Life Coz Menzi's Eyes Were Starting To Be Red And There Was No Smile On His Face Or Whatsoever.He Looked Like He'd Even Devour Me Alive [OBJ]:'(

Me: Menzi Please Just Lemme Go Please! I Won't Say Anything To Dad Or Mom [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: Now I'm Gettin' Tired Of Your Whining

Me: Please Menzi Please! [OBJ]:'(What Happened To The Man I Fell In Love With,The Guy Who Loved Me?

Menzi: Unfortunately He Never Existed

With That Said He Got Up With The Plate And Left,Seconds Turned To Minutes,Minutes Turned To Hours But He Didn't Come Back.I Felt Myself Getting Drowsier And Drowsier,I Jumped To a Banging Sound

Menzi: YOU COMPLICATED THINGS!

Me:.....

I Was Starting To Think That Menzi Was A
Psycho Who The Hell Does What He Did And
Acts That Way??

Me: I Need To Use The Toilet

Menzi: WHAT??

Me: I Need To Pee

Menzi: You Can't,You Won't

Me: Dude My Bladder Can't Keep The Urine Any
Longer Or You Want Me To Pee On Myself?

Menzi: Fine! But Dare Try Anything,Your Parents
Will Sing Amagugu

Me: How Can You Be So Cruel Menzi?

Menzi: From Now On You Don't Talk To Me!

He Untied The Rope,I Pushed Him To The Bed,Took The Chair And Hit Him On The Head

Menzi: YOU BLOODY HOE!

Me: Your Mother Is The Hoe

The Chair Broke But I Kept Hitting Him With It While Crying,He Lied On The Floor.I Ran Outta The Room.Guess What?? There Were Five Guys In The Lounge

Guy1: Going Somewhere Madam?

Me: Shit!

One Guy Came To Hold Me,I Kicked Him On The Waist But He Stood There Like I Didn't Do Anything.He Held My Leg And Threw Me On The

Ground.Ouch!! [OBJ]:'(

He Came To Pick Me Up,I Got Hold Of His Gun From His Holster And Luckily It Was Loaded.I Shot Him On His Left Foot

Guy1: YOU BITCH!!

He Let Go Off Me And I Hit My Back On The Tiled Floor.I Pointed The Gun At The Five Of Them

Voice: Drop The Gun Or You Die

I Turned And Menzi Was Pointing a Gun At Me

Me: MENZI JUST LET ME GO PLEASE! [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: You've Done Too Much Damage For

Someone Your Age And Size

I Felt Something Heavy On My Head Then I
Blacked Out.I Woke Up Back In The Room,Tied
On The Bed.I Could See The Sun Penetrating
Through The Curtains.I Heard Footsteps Then
Menzi Got In Wearing A Suit

Menzi: I Look Good Right?! Today Is The Most
Important Day Of My Life,I'm Gonna Pitch Some
Deal And I Have To Blow Your Dad Away

Me:.....

Menzi: Don't Worry I'll Be Back For You,The
Guys Will Take Care Of You.Daddy Will Be
Back,You Don't Have To Miss Me Much

Me:.....

Menzi: ELIA!

"Whoa Whoa That Name Sounds Like I've Heard It Somewhere But Where?? C'mon Esihle Think Think!!"

I Just Couldn't Remember Where I've Heard The Name From.

One Of The Five Guys That Were In The Lounge Got In With a Small Medical Box

Me: WHATCHU GONNA DO TO ME?? MENZI WHY YOU DOING THIS??

Menzi: It's Just Something To Make You Relax And Not Cause Any Trouble,We Both Don't Need That Ayt?

Guy: Here Boss

Menzi: Dankie Elia,You Can Leave

Menzi Took Out A Syringe From The Box And a Small Bottle,He Pulled The Liquid Into The

Syringe Till It Was Ass Full

Me: Menzi Please Don't Do This! I Promise I Won't Cause Any Trouble! Menzi Please!! OBJ: '(

Menzi: Shhhh

He Got Closer, Rubbed My Arm First While I Tried To Fight Him

Menzi: The Needle Might Break Inside You, You Don't Want That Ayt?! Now Relax

He Injected The Liquid Inside Me, I Drifted Away Slowly But Surely.

I Woke Up Cold As Fuck And I Was Even Shivering, That Elia Guy Got In

Elia: Do You Want Something To Eat?

Me:.....

Elia: Then Suit Yourself

When He Was Bout To Open The Door

Me: I Also Need a Blanket

Elia: Haha Whoa Do You Think You In Some Kinda 5 Star Hotel Here Or Some'ing?

Me: I'm Sure Menzi Doesn't Want Me To Die,At Least Not Yet.I'm Sure He'd Make Sure That You Follow Me If I Ever Die Coz You Didn't Want To Give Me a Lousy Blanket

The Guy Just Chuckled And Walked Out,He Came Back With A Fleece And a Plate With Food,It Was Already Getting Dark Outside.He Untied Only One Hand Then Gave Me The Plate

Me: I Need To Use The Toilet

Elia: That Doesn't Work On Me

Me: Dude I Need To Use The Toilet Like Right Now! What The Fuck Is Wrong Witchu??

Elia: Eat Before I Change My Mind And Take The Plate

Menzi Got In Humming a Song

Menzi: Guess What?? I Got The Deal

Elia: That's Great Boss

Menzi: Esihle You Don't Look Like You Happy For Me

Me:.....

Menzi: You Can Excuse Yourself Now Elia

Elia: Sure Boss

Elia Got Out,Menzi Took Off His Jacket Then
His Tie,He Unzipped His Pants Then
Unbuttoned His Shirt

Me: Menzi Please Don't Do What I Think You
Gonna Do! Please!

Menzi: Last Time You Were Not Ready,I'm Sure
Now You're

Me: Menzi Please!! :(

I Felt a Slap Across My Face

Menzi: Shut Up! Did I Ask You To Talk?

I Shooked My Head As Tears Streamed Down
My Cheeks,That Was The Last Thing I Wanted
Him To Do To Me,Menzi Was Really a

Psychopath

Menzi: Don't Worry I'll Be Gentle

Me: We Don't Have To It This Way

I Felt Another Slap,He Tore My Clothes Into
Pieces.Now I Was Crying Louder ((

He Opened My Legs Wider And Pulled Down His
Pants,He Tore My Panty Into Pieces.Just When
He Was Bout To Enter Me,There Was A Loud
Knock On The Door

Menzi: WHAT????

Elia: You Have Visitors

Menzi: Can't You Attend Them? I'm Busy Here

Elia: I Can't

Menzi: FINE I'M COMING!

He Furiously Got Off Me And Pulled Up His
Pants,I Was Scared For My Life,Even If He Didn't
Do Anything To Me That Time,There Was Still
Next Time.

Menzi: I'm Gonna Be Back,You And I Are Gonna
Have So Much Fun Together

He Got Out Then Elia Got In,He Kept Glancing At
Me As I Sobbed Naked On The Bed.He Took A
Blanket And Covered Me

Me: Thanks

He Just Looked At Me And Took a Plaster Then
Covered My Mouth,He Stood In Front Of The
Door And Kept Walkin' Up And Down.

We Both Turned When Someone Kicked Down The Door,Mom Got In.Elia Tried To Reach For His Gun

Me: MOM!! [OBJ]:'(

Mom: Don't You Dare Make Any Move Or I'll Send You To Your Ancestors My Boy

Elia Lifted His Hands Up,He Tried To Get Closer To Mom.She Shot Him On Both Legs,He Fell On The Floor.She Took His Gun Then There Were Gun Shots Everywhere

Me: MOM!! [OBJ]:'(

Mom: I'm So Sorry My Love

She Untied Me Then We Hugged,She Saw That I Was Naked

Mom: I'm So Sorry My Love,Did That Bastard Hurt You In Any Way??

Me: He Didn't Rape Me But He Just Tried To

Mom: I'm So Sorry My Baby,We Didn't Know That This Would Get This Far

Me: Whoa Whoa Ma What Do You Mean?

Mom: We'll Explain Everything To You At Home

She Took Off Her Jacket And Gave It To Me,It Was Long So It Covered Every Place That Had To Be Covered.We Walked To The Lounge And Left Elia Moaning In That Room,Four Guys Were Lying Dead On The Floor And Dad Was Walking Up Down

Me: Dad!!

Dad: My Baby,Is She Okay? Are You Okay?

Me: I'm Fine

Dad: Did He Hurt You? Did He Try Anything O-

Me: I'm Fine Dad

He Hugged The Living Hell Outta Me

Mom: Where Is He?

Dad: He Ran Away

Mom: Dammit!

Dad: Don't Worry I'll Find Him....Let's Go Home
Princess

We Went To The Car And Dad Drove Us Home,I
Had a Long Warm Bath Then Mom Made Me
Warm Food But I Didn't Have Any Appetite For
Food.Mom Slept With Me In My Room That
Night,I Kept Waking Up At Night Thinking I Was
Still Back At Menzi's House.

The Following Day I Woke Up And Went To Bath,Mom Was Not In The Room So I Thought She Woke Up Early.

I Just Wore My Pyjamas Again Coz I Wasn't Ready To Go To School,I Went To The Lounge And Found Dad,Mom And Uncle B

Mom: We Have To Talk To You Baby

I Sat On Dad's Lap

Mom: I Know You Might Hate Us After This But We're Really Sorry Baby

Me: Wassup?

Dad: Your Mother And I Used You To Get To Menzi,Remember The Break In Here? That Night I Found Out That It Was Him Who Sent People To Break In Here But I Had To Make

Sure

Me: WHOA WHOA SO ARE YOU TRYNA TELL ME THAT YOU USED ME AS YOUR PAWN??

Mom: It Was The Only Possible Way Baby But We Didn't Know That Menzi Was Gonna Strike This Early

Me: I Can't Believe This!

I Got Up And Stormed To My Room,I Locked My Door And Sat On My Bed And Cried.

"MY OWN PARENTS SOLD ME TO THE DEVIL,THEY GAVE MENZI THE KEY TO MY HEART,TO MY LIFE,TO MY EVERYTHING.THEY USED ME FOR THEIR OWN BENEFIT,DO THEY KNOW WHAT MENZI PUT ME THROUGH? WHAT HE DID TO ME??"

I Couldn't Help Myself But Cry,Dad Tried Knocking,Mom Too And Even Uncle B But I Was

Mad At Them,I Was Mad At The Whole World.

-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-

I Spent The Whole Week In My Room,Crying
And Hating The Whole World.I'd Go And Look
For Something To Eat When Everyone Is
Gone,Vusi Tried His Luck To Talk To Me But I

Was Just Not Up For Any Kinda Talk.They Even Asked Inam To Try Her Luck But She Was No Exception Herself.On Friday Of The Second Week When I Was Just Sitting In Front Of The Mirror,Looking At My Dull And Lackluster Self,The Door Broke Down And Dad Got In.I Just Looked At Him

Dad: Princess You Can't Do This To Yourself

Me:.....

Dad: Your Mom And I Are Deeply Sorry For What We Did,We Know It Was Selfish Of Us.

Me:.....

He Came To Sit Next To Me,He Hugged Me And I Just Broke Down

Dad: I'm Sorry My Baby

Me: You Don't Know What That Monster Put Me Through? He Hurt Me Daddy,He Hurt Me!! (

Dad: He'll Never Ever Hurt You Ever Again.That,I Promise You.

Me: Menzi Is A Monster,He's a Soulless Monster

Dad: I Know My Love

Dad And I Just Lied On The Bed With My Head On His Chest.He Kept Playing With My Hair.

Later That Day I Finally Got Outta My Room And Joined The Family For Dinner

Vusi: I Missed My Sister

Me: I Missed Y'all Too

Vusi: I Hope That Menzi Guy Burns In Hell

Me: He's The Devil Himself I'm Sure He Will

So We Ate In Peace Then Went To Our Rooms,I
Went To Vusi's Room

Me: Can You Borrow Me Your Phone?

Vusi: Yeah Sure Wassup?

Me: I Wanna Call Lutho,We Haven't Talked
Since The Day Menzi Kidnapped Me

Vusi: You Really Need To Talk,He Came To Me
When You Were Missing And He Thought Your
Phone Was Off Coz You Were Ignoring Him

Me: Ignoring Him,Why?

Vusi: He Didn't Tell Me Why

Me: Uhhm Okay Thanks

I Took The Phone And Dialed Lutho's Number

Call Convo

Lutho: Talk To Me

Me: Hey Lutho

Lutho: Hey Sugar How Are You?

Me: I'm Good Bbe,How Are You?

Lutho: Now That You Called,I'm Good.I Missed You

Me: I Missed You Too

Lutho: Why Was Your Phone Off? I Was Worried And Sick Bout You

Me: Uhhm Can We Meet Tomorrow,I Have Something To Tell You

Lutho: Sho.....Still Love You Kay?!

Me: I Love You Too

I Hung Up And Gave Vusi His Phone,I Tried To

Sleep But The Nightmares Bout Menzi Were Still There.The Following Day Was A Sunday So Nothing Much Was Gonna Happen,Dad And Mom Had To Go To Some Dinner At Dad's Friend's House So It Was A Perfect Opportunity For Me To See Lutho.I Texted Him With Vusi's Phone And He Said He Was Gonna Be There In a Few,I Just Wore My Sweaters And Waited For Him.He Finally Called And Said He's Waiting For Me Outside,I Told Vusi Where I Was Going Then Went To Lutho's Car

Me: Hey

Lutho: Hey Bbe,You Look So Down

Me: A Lot Happened The Past Two Weeks

Lutho: Wanna Talk Bout It?

Me: Let's Drive To Your House First,I'll Tell You When We There

He Drove Us To His House,There Were Dolls In
The Lounge With Toys

Me: Got a Visitor?

Lutho: Yeah My Lil Sis Is 'round

Me: Where Is She Now?

Lutho: She's In Her Room,Sleeping.

He Came With a Fleece Then We Sat On The
Couch And He Laid My Head On His Lap

Lutho: So Wassup Witcho Phone?

I Turned And Looked At Him

Me: Remember The Guy I Told You I Wa-.....The
Fuck Did You Change Your Cologne?? This New

One Smells Awful

Lutho: Bbe I Didn't Change My Cologne

Me: Then Why Does It Smell So Awful?

My Stomach Started To Be Unsettled Then I Felt Like Throwing Up,I Got Up And Ran To The Bathroom And Threw Up

Lutho: Bbe You Okay?!

Me: I'm Fine

I Rinsed My Mouth And We Both Walked Back To The Lounge

Lutho: Did You Take The Pill?

Me: What Pill?

Lutho: So You Switched Off Your Phone Coz I

Was Mad Atchu For Taking That Pill? Look I've
Been Thinking And Now I Realise That I Was
Being Selfish That Day.The Past Two Weeks
Have Been Torture And I Realised That You
Were Right,We Still Have-

Me: Whatchu Talkin' Bout?

Lutho: The Morning After Pill?!

UH-OH!

THE FUCK????

[05/18, 19:29] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT27 ♡

"WHOA WHOA CAN SOMEONE PLEASE WAKE ME UP FROM THIS NIGHTMARE??" ((

Lutho: So You Didn't Take The Pill?

Me: Lutho No No No! It Can't Be, I Can't Be Pregnant!

Lutho: Why Didn't You Take It? Or You Did, It Just Didn't Work?

I Just Broke Down And Cried

Me: I Have To Drink That Pill Or Something

Lutho: Bbe It's a Morning After Pill, Meaning You Drink It The Morning After You Had Sex It's Been Two Weeks Now And You Even Have Bad Smells So It's Too Late

Me: Lutho I Can't Be Pregnant!

Lutho: Why Didn't You Take The Pill?

Me: That's Something For Another Day, You Have To Help Me

Lutho: On What?

Me: We Both Not Ready For a Baby, You Said That Yourself. We Have To Make a Plan, My Parents Are Gonna Kill Me! Lutho We Have To Make A Quick Plan

Lutho: I Said That Coz I Thought You Already Took The Pill But You Didn't, The Only Option Ayt Now Would Be Abortion

Me: WHAT???

Lutho: And We Can't Afford To Abort Our Baby

I Just Looked At Him And Cried, Lutho Brought Me Closer To His Chest And Patted My Back

Lil Voice: Bhut' Luu

I Broke Away From The Hug And Saw The Most Beautiful Sight Ever,It Was Lutho's Lil Sis Smiling And Rubbing Her Eyes

Lutho: Yes Baby

Girl: Is This Sis' Esihle?

Lutho: Yes Baby.Come Here

She Walked To Lutho And He Picked Her Up,They Both Looked At Me

Lutho: Baby This Is Olona My Lil Sis And Baby This Is Sis' Esihle

Olona: Why Is She Crying?

Lutho: I Dunno

Olona: Did You Beat Her Up?

Lutho: You Know Beating Up a Girl Is Not

Right,Right?!

Olona Nodded And Smiled

Olona: Then Why Is She Crying?

Me: Something Got Into My Eyes Baby

Olona: Is She Telling The Truth?

Lutho: Yeap...Look Take Your Dolls And Toys
To Your Room

Olona: But I Wanna Play With Sis Esihle

Lutho: You Will Some Other Day Kay?! Do You
Want Me To Trip On Your Toys And Die?

Olona: A.ha (Shooking Her Head)

Lutho: Then Take Them To Your Room Baby

Olona: When I'm Back You Gonna Let Me Look
At Your Pictures On Your Phone Right?! Right?!

Lutho: Okay Okay Now Clean My House

She Giggled And Collected Her Toys And Dolls

Lutho: You Smiling

Me: She's Cute

Lutho: Hear That Lholho? Sis Eshle Says You
Cute

Olona: Tell Her She's Cute Too And I Love Her

Lutho: She Heard You

[OBJ]:' (I Couldn't Stop Smiling,Lutho Was Just So
Good With His Sister And They Were Getting
Along Very Well,I Didn't Doubt It,He'd Make a
Great Father

Lutho: Bbe Stop Crying You Gonna Make Lholho
Cry

Me: Ohh Sorry I Didn't Notice

I Wiped Away That One Tear That Was Rolling Down My Cheek Then The Five Other Ones Then The Thousand Ones.Lutho Hugged Me

Lutho: Look I Know We Both Not Ready For a Baby But Sugar We Can't Abort Our Baby,What If It's Our First And Last?

Olona: Are You And Sis Esihle Gonna Have a Baby?

Lutho Looked At Me And Chuckled

Olona: Sis' Esihle?

Me: Uhmm?

Olona: Are You And Bhut' Luu Going To Have a Baby?

I Looked At Lutho And He Was Smiling At Me

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: Is She Going To Play Toys And Dolls With Me? Can I Show Her How To Wash And Dress Her Dolls? She's Going To Play With Me Right?!

I Just Chuckled At The Way She Said And Asked Everything

Me: Whoa Whoa,What If It's a Boy?

Olona: Then I'm Gonna Show Him How To Ride a Bicycle And How To Fight

Me: How To Fight?

Olona: Bhut' Luu Taught Me How To Fight

Me: Lutho She's Still Too Young For That

Lutho: I Just Showed Her Moves For Her Age
And Size Right Lholho?

Olona Chuckled And Nodded,She Took Her
Things And Walked To Her Room,Leaving Me
With Lutho

Lutho: So We Keeping The Baby?

Me: I Don't Know,I'll Have To Think Bout This

Lutho: Include Olona In Your
Thoughts,Always Know That She'll Be Expecting
Her Niece Or Nephew

Me:.....

Lutho: I'm Sorry That Things Had To Turn Out
This Way But We Have No Choice But To Keep
It Now

Me: My Parents Are Gonna Kill Me Lutho

Lutho: I'll Even Marry You If I Have To, Pay a 5 Million Rands For Lobola Just For You To Keep Our Baby

Me:..... [OBJ]:' (

Lutho: Come Here

We Hugged And Had a Long Ass Kiss, Lutho Grabbed My Ass And He Picked Me Up

Me: Easy Tiger, We Got a Toddler In The Room

Lutho: Eish!

Just Then Anga, Siya And Thabang Got In

Siya: Yhooo So You Still Exist?

Me: Wanted Me To Vanish Or Extinct?

Siya: Even If You Did That Would Pose No Harm

To Me

Me: I Like You Too Siya

Anga: Hey Esihle

Me: Hello Anga

Thabang: Hello Mrs

Me: Hey Mr

They All Sat Down

Anga: So Where Is The Lil Princess?

Lutho: Went To Put Her Toys In Her Room

Siya: I Hope She Trips On Something,Blacks Out
And Wakes Up When I'm Gone

Me: You So Heartless

Siya: Olona Thinks I Work For Her,Every Time
She's Here I Have To Go And Buy Ice Cream For
Her

Thabang: Haha You Mean The Whole Mall

Lutho: You Don't Have Kids Of Your Dude,Just Spoil Lholho It's Not Like You Don't Have The Money

Siya: I'm The One Who Has To Make Sure That His Ass Doesn't Get Seen When Robbing a Bank And Y'all Know How Hard It Is To Do That Ish And Now I Have To Spend All Of My Money On a Squicky Voiced Monkey

Olona: Bhut' Siya!

She Came Running And Sat On Siya's Lap

Siya: I Left My Wallet At Home

Olona: Was Just Greeting You

Siya: Okay Then I Guess I'll Buy Myself a Beer Or Two Since You Not In The Mood To Spend My Money

Olona: Just One Ice Cream

Siya: No!

Olona: Please

Siya: Olona No!

Olona: Please Please Pretty Please!

Siya: Lutho Don't You Have Ice Cream In Your Fridge?

Lutho: I Have I-

Olona: It's Not Fresh

Siya: What??

Olona: Please!

Siya: Okay Fine! Just One!

Olona: And a Lunch Bar

Siya: Only One Ice Cream And a Lunch Bar

Olona: And a Strawberry Krusher

Me: Yho!

Olona: Bhut' Siya Can Pay,His Wallet Always Has Money In It

Siya: Lutho!

Lutho: I Got No'ing To Do Witcho Financial Relationship

Olona: Can We Go Now?

Siya: Okay It's Just Gonna Be a Krusher,Ice Cream And A Lunch Bar

They Both Got Up

Olona: I Almost Forgot,We Have To Buy Jelly Tots For Bhut' Luu And Sis' Esihle's Baby

Anga: Whoa You Pregnant?

Olona: Yeap But Since The Baby Is Not Here Yet,I'll Eat The Jelly Tots For Her Then We'll Buy Her Another Ones When She Arrives

Siya: Yho I Swear Your Sister Is a Thug Herself

Lutho Zizwe,I Give Up

Siya Picked Her Up Then They Left For His Car

Thabang: So You Decided To Fall Pregnant

Me:.....

Lutho: Something Like That

Anga: Lutho We Need To Talk

Lutho: Sure

They Went To Stand Few Feet Away From
Thabang And I And They Were Whispering

Thabang: Ain't Your Parents Gonna Freak Out?

Me: They Might Even Kill Me

Thabang: But You Seemed Thrilled Bout The
Idea That You Even Told Lholho

Me: I Had No Choice,She Heard Me And Lutho Talkin' Bout The Pregnancy And She Got All Excited

Lutho: I KNOW KAY?!

Anga: Then Why The Fuck Did You Let This Happen If You Know??

Lutho: We Keepin' The Baby,I'll Make Sure That My Child Is Safe All The Time

Anga: You Can Be Dumb Sometimes You Know

Lutho: You Know What Let's Just Drop This Before We Say Things We Might Regret

Anga: Don't Say I Didn't Tell You

They Saw That I Was Lookin' At Them And They Stopped Talkin'

Thabang: Uhhm So How's School?

Me: Great I Guess

Lutho And Anga Came Back And Sat On Their Seats,Siya Got In With a Full Plastic Bag And Olona Who Was Lickin' On Her Ice Cream

Me: That Was Fast

Lutho: Dude Speed Kills

Siya: Olona Is Already Used To My Driving

Lutho: Dude You Exposing My Sis To Dangerous Things

Siya: This Is My Gangster Queen....Go To Your Room Lholho,Older People Need To Talk Bout Adult Stuff

Olona: Kay

She Took Her Plastic And Walked To Her Room

Lutho: Wassup?

Siya: You Won't Believe The Fuck I Just Saw

Thabang: Your Ex Driving a Lamborghini?

Siya: Fuck You Dude

Anga: Just Talk Already

Siya: I Saw Elia Walking With Menzi

WHOA WHOA WHOA WHOA!!!! My Heart
Started To Beat Fast

Anga: Haha Dude Are You a Ghost Whisperer Or
What?

Siya: Dude I Wasn't Dreaming Or Anything, I Saw
Him With My Very Own Eyes

Thabang: Then He Must've Rose From The
Dead

"DAMN YOU ESIHLE! YES YOU HEARD THIS ELIA NAME WHEN YOU MET WITH THE GUYS FOR THE FIRST TIME AND YOU WERE AT ANGA'S PLACE,A GUY CAME RUNNING,SAYING THAT THEY KILLED ELIA AND THREW A DEAD RAT AT ANGA'S YARD"

Lutho: WHOA SO YOU TRYNA TELL ME THAT YOU SAW MENZI WITH ELIA?

Siya: Dude My Eyes Had Never Lied To Me

Lutho: DAMMIT!

Anga: So He Didn't Make New Deals And Sold Stuff While We Were Away,He Two Timed Us While We Were Still Here.Dude That Nikka Tore The Gang Into Two

Lutho: DAMN YOU MENZI!!

UH-OH! o o.O

[05/18, 19:29] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

♠Crop_Top♠

#INSERT28 ♡

My Breathing Rate Increased, My Heart Just
Started Beating Fast. All The Things Menzi Did
To Me Just Started To Come Back, So Lutho
Knew Menzi?? The Fuck??

Siya: Maybe He's The One Who Shot Your Car
The Other Day

Lutho: How Could He Do This To Me? To Us?

Anga: He's The One Who Always Told Us Not To Trust Anyone,I Guess That 'Anyone' Meant Him Too

Thabang: Esihle Are You Okay?

Me: Uhhhm Lutho Can You Drive Me Home?

Lutho: I'll Be Back Guys,We Really Need To Talk Bout This

Lutho Took His Car Keys Then We Walked To His Car,Lutho's Thoughts Were So Far Away.This Menzi And Elia Thing Was Beating Him Up And There I Was Going To Add Fuel To The Fire

Me: Baby?

Lutho: Uhmm?

Me: Remember When I Told You That There's

Someone I'm With While You Were Away?

Lutho: Yeah

Me: Uhhhm It Was It It Was Menzi

Lutho Lost Control Of The Car And I Thought We Were Gonna Die,He Managed To Drive It Outta The Road And Stopped

Lutho: WHOA WHAT????

Me: I Didn't Know That You Knew Each Other

Lutho: THAT SON OF A-

Me: He Seemed To Have A Beef With My Parents Then He Kidnapped Me And Kept Me Hostag-

Lutho: Did He Hurt You In Anyway?

Me: He Slapped Me Several Times And He Tried To Rape Me

Lutho: Get In The Car!

Me: What Are You Go-

Lutho: I Said Get In The Damn Car!

I Got In The Car Then Lutho Started The Car
And He Was Driving It Like Crazy,He Stopped In
Front Of The House Menzi Took Me To Meet
With His Aunt And Uncle

Me: Whoa What Are We Doing Here??

Lutho: To Tell My Parents Bout Your Pregnancy
And To Knock Some Sense Into Menzi's Head

Me: But Lu-

Lutho: Let's Go In

He Got Out Then Took Me By My Hand,He
Knocked And Menzi Opened The Door

Menzi: Lil Bro! What A Surprise!

Lutho Pushed The Door On His Face And Threw A Punch, Menzi Stumbled Back Few Times

L's Dad: WHAT'S HAPPENING IN MY HOUSE???

Lutho: Did Your Precious Nephew Tell You What He Did To My Girlfriend??

L's Dad: What Girlfriend?

I Was So Scared That I Was Even Shivering Just Imagine Two Cousins Introducing You To The Same Parents As Their Girlfriend, How Sick Is That?

L's Mom: Lutho My Son What's Going On?

Lutho: Menzi Kidnapped My Girlfriend Ma, My Girlfriend While She's Pregnant With My Baby

Menzi: WHAT??

L's Dad: Is Esihle The Girlfriend You're Talking About?

Lutho: You Know Her?

L's Dad: That Little Bitch You're Standing With There Used My Nephew And Now She's Using You Too, See How Messed Up Menzi's Face Is? When She Had Enough Of His Money She Sent Her Thug Sugar Daddy To Beat Up My Son

Luu And I: WHAT????

L's Mom: Is Esihle Pregnant?

Lutho: Yes She's Pregnant Ma With My Baby.....I See Dad You'll Never See The Real Menzi, Don't You See That He's Only Showing You The Facade?

L's Dad: LUTHO I TOLD YOU TO NEVER EVER LAY YOUR DIRTY FEET IN MY YARD EVER

AGAIN AND NOW YOU COME HERE ACCUSING MENZI OF SOMETHING HE DIDN'T DO, YOU LET THIS THING (Pointing At Me) COME BETWEEN YOU AND YOUR BROTHER DOESN'T BLOOD COME FIRST TO YOU?

Lutho: Ohh So If Blood Comes First Why Do You Treat Me Like Mom Slept 'round, Got Pregnant With Me And Accused You Of Being The Father?? Huh?? Dad You Even Did Three Paternity Tests And They All Proved That I'm Your Son, YOUR SON BY BLOOD BUT YOU THREW ME OUT THERE TO THE DOGS LIKE I'M NOTHING TO YOU!

Whoa That Family Really Had Issues, What Kinda Father Does Three Paternity Tests To Know That Their Son Is Really Their Son? I Mean Like Musa Treats Me Like I'm His Daughter By Blood Even Though We Don't Even Share A Single Drop Of That Red Liquid Yet

There Are People Out There Who Wish Their Sons Were Not Their Sons

L's Dad: LUTHO!! GET OUT OF MY HOUSE!

Lutho: I'm Going Mr Zizwe And Don't Worry I'll Never Lay My Dirty Feet In Your House Ever Again

L's Mom: Can We All Please Sit Down And Talk?

L's Dad: I'm Not Going To Sit Down And Talk With a Disrespectful Boy! Lutho Out Of My House! You Come Here And Disturb a Peaceful Lunch,Out!!

Lutho: I Swear You'll Re- You Know What? Lemme Save Me My Breath.You (Pointing At Menzi) I'm Not Done Witchu

L's Dad: And Just So You Know,I Gave All Your Inheritance To Menzi,He's The Right And Good Person To Receive It

I Saw Lutho Tightening His Jaws And His Grip On My Hand Got Tighter But He Stopped And Exhaled

Lutho: Congratulations Big Bro I Hope You Happy That You Got What You Wanted And You Dad,I Couldn't Care Less.Let's Go Sugar

We Both Walked Out To His Car And Veins Had Popped Outta Lutho's Head

Me: Uhhhm I'm Sorry

Lutho:.....

Me: I Didn't Know That Menzi Was Your Cousin

Lutho: I Know.....He Planned All Of This (Snort-Laugh) He Planned Err Single Thing Perfectly But You Know What? No One Messes Up With Lutho Zizwe! I Mean No One!

Yhooo [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o I Didn't Know Why But I Just
Had a Bad Feeling Bout Errthing

Me: Whoa Whoa Menzi Said He Was Avenging
Awiwe's Death And You're In The Same Gang-

Lutho: Were In The Same Gang,Not Anymore

Me: Okay Whatever So If He Was Avenging His
Death That Means You Also Enemies With My
Parents

Lutho:.....

Me: LUTHO ARE YOU ALSO USING ME TO GET
TO MY PARENTS??

Lutho: What?? Now That's Bullshit!

Me: Lutho Are You Using Me?? [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Sugar You Know I Love You

Me: That's The Same Gospel Menzi Preached
To Me

Lutho: I AIN'T MENZI DAMMIT!!

He Hit The Wheel,I Swear I Almost Peed On My Self,He Exhaled And Tried To Calm Down

Lutho: Take The Wheel I Can't Drive Like This

We Exchanged Seats Then I Drove While Lutho Buried His Head In His Hands With No One Talkin' To The Other

Lutho: I Found Out Bout Your Parents When I Was Away,Menzi Called Me And Said He Found Your Father And He's Ready To Strike,Anga Told Him To Let That Go Coz I Told Him That Musa Was Your Father.Menzi Didn't Know That You Were My Girlfriend But He Went Against Our Orders And Striked,If I Told Him That You Were My Girlfriend Maybe He Might Have Killed

You.He Sold All Of Our Stuff,Took Almost Every Cent From Our Joined Account Then Broke The Gang Into Two

Me: What Does That Mean Then?

Lutho: It Means That From Now On My Cousin And I Are Enemies.He Did This Coz He Knew We Were Gonna Kick Him Out When We Come Back,Menzi Always Had His Own Views In Everything We Did.Look Imma Be Honest Witchu,I Impregnated You Coz I Knew If I Did Your Parents Would Have No Other Choice But To Accept Me,I Love You Esihle And I Don't Want No Past Feud Of Theirs To Come Between Us

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: I'm Sorry For Being Selfish But I Did It For Us,For Our Love

[05/18, 19:30] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT29 ♡

I Was Just Emotional, Mad At Luu For Being Selfish But Happy At The Same Time To Know How Much Our Relationship Means To Him

Lutho: Bbe?

Me: Uhmm?

Lutho: I'm Sorry Kay?!

Me: So You Gonna Use This Baby As Your Ticket To My Family?

Lutho: No! That Baby Is Our Gift But It's Also Going To Bring Peace Between Me And Your Family.....I Hope

Me: I Hate You For Doing This To Me

Lutho! [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: I'm Really Sorry Sugar

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Pull Over

I Pulled Over Then Lutho Got Out And Came To My Side,He Opened The Door And Pulled Me Out.He Hugged Me So Tight That I Could Feel The Safety In His Arms

Lutho: I Love You Esihle

Me: (Sniffing) I Love You Too Lutho But Do You Know The Trouble I'll Be In When My Parents Find Out Bout This Pregnancy?

Lutho: We Can Tell Them Together

Me: My Father's Gonna Kill Me,He Told Me Long Time Ago To Break Things Off Witchu

Lutho: Eish

Me: And Besides A Lot Has Happened The Past Two Weeks,I'm Not Ready For Another Dramatic Week

Lutho: We'll Tell Them Or You'll Tell Them When You Ready

I Just Nodded And Buried My Face On His Chest,He Kept Pecking My Forehead Then We Had A Brief Kiss,He Took The Wheel And Drove Me Home

Lutho: Lholho Will Want To See You Again

Me: She's So Loud And Lovable

Lutho: Like Me

Me: Who Said You Lovable?

Lutho: Aren't I?

Me: Nope

Lutho: Ouch!

Me: Just Kiddin' Bbe

He Looked At Me And We Both Smiled,He
Parked Few Yards Away From Mine Then We
Had A Long Passionate Kiss

Lutho: You Woke Some Things Up

I Looked At His Pants And Things Were Really
Up

Me: Too Bad I Can't Put Them Back To Sleep

Lutho: Now That Sucks

Me: Uhhhm Can I Ask You Something?

Lutho: Yeah Shoot

Me: Can You Borrow Me Your Gun?

Lutho: Can You Shoot?

Me: Dude You Know My Father's A Gangster,What Did You Expect?

Lutho: I Thought Maybe They Never Let You Try That Kinda Life

Me: Unfortunately They Forced Me To It

Lutho: You Didn't Want To Join?

Me: Nope But I Had No Choice Coz Mom And Dad Have Enemies Everywhere

Lutho:.....

Me: Just Like You

Lutho: I Think You Should Go Before Someone Sees Us And Tells Your Father

Me: I Wanted To Ask You Something

Lutho: Ohh That,What Is It?

Me: When You Slept With That Girl,Did You Use A Condom?

Lutho:.....

Me: Huh?

He Looked At Me,Shocked Guess He Didn't Expect That Question

Me: Lutho I'm Askin' You A Question

Lutho: Uhhm Yeah I Did,Why You Still There?

Me: Coz My Boyfriend Left Me,Slept With Someone Else Then Came Back And Slept With Me Without Using A Condom So I Wanna Make Sure That I'm Safe

Lutho: Look Esihle Can We Just Forg-

Me: I Wasn't Reminding You Of That Or Bringing It Up So We Could Fight,I Just Wanted To Make Sure That My Baby And I Are Safe

Lutho: You Safe

Me: Thank You

I Opened The Door

Lutho: My Goodbye Kiss?

I Pecked His Lips,Just When I Was Bout To Pull Away,He Pulled Me By My Neck And Brought Me Closer For A Deeper Kiss.We Both Chuckled And Continued Kissing,We Finally Broke The Kiss Then I Walked Home.The Rents Were Already Back,I Found Everyone In The Lounge

Me: Hi,Bye

I Walked Up The Stairs

Dad: Where You From?

Me: I Went To I-

Mom: And Don't Lie Bout Inam,She Just Came Here Looking For You

Me: I Went Out To Get Some Air And Guess What? I Saw Menzi

Dad: Look Baby This Whole Thing Is Complicated

Me: You Said You Were Gonna Take Care Of Him Dad

Dad: I'll Explain Everything To You Later

Me: Save It Dad,It's Clear That Menzi Will Walk Out There Like Nothing Happened While I Fear For My Life

I Stormed To My Room And Threw Myself On My Bed,Dad Got In And Closed The Door.He Lied Next To Me

Dad: Menzi Is Smarter Than I Mentated

Me: What Do You Mean?

Dad: That Night He Went To The Police And Opened A Case Against Me,Saying I Killed Four Of His Friends,Injured One Then Beat Him Up Coz I Was Jealous That He Got The Deal He Pitched For

Me: WHAT?? WHAT KINDA MAN DOES THAT??

Dad: A Man Like Menzi I Guess,The Police Are Still Investigating The Case So If Something Bad Happens To Him,I'll Be The Top Suspect

Me: I'm Sorry I Didn't Know Dad

Dad: It's Okay Baby You Had Every Right To Be Mad

Me: That Guy Almost Ruined My Life

Dad: I'll Take You For Some Counselling After School

Me: I Don't Need Counselling Dad,I Just Need

You To Promise Me That You'll Do Anything In
Your Power To Assure My Safety

Dad: He'd Never Try Anything On You. That, I
Promise You

Me: Thanks Dad

Dad: Anything For My Princess

He Kissed My Forehead Then Walked Out, Vusi
Got In And Sat Next To Me

Vusi: So Did You Two Talk?

Me: Yeah

Vusi: And?

Me: We Fixed Things Uhhm There's Something I
Have To Tell You

Vusi: Go Ahead

Me: Uhhhm Please Don't Freak Out

Vusi: You Worrying Me

Me: Uhhhm I'm Pregnant

Vusi: WHOA WHAT????

Me: Jeez Keep Your Voice Down

Vusi: WHOA! You Mean Like You Pregnant?

How Can You Be That Care Less Esihle??

Dammit! Who's The Father?? Is It Menzi??

Me: It's Lutho

Vusi: Does He Know?

Me: Yeah

Vusi: So When Can I Expect My Niece Or Nephew?

Me: What??

Vusi: It's Lutho's Child So I Don't Have To Get All Worked Up

Me: You're Unbelievable

Vusi: I Like That Guy

Me: Whoa Whoa Sir He's Mine

Vusi: Haha As If I Was Gonna Fuck With Him, I Like Cookies Not Butts Sweetheart

Me: Yeah Ayt So How Are Things Between You And Inam?

Vusi: I Don't Know If It's Me Or My Insecurities But It's Like Inam Is Spending Too Much Time With That Litha Guy

Me: Ohh?

Vusi: But I Know She Loves Me Maybe I'm Just Being Too Insecure

Me: Yeah I Think So Too

I Spent The Afternoon With Vusi, Talkin' Bout Anything And Everything.

Later On I Went To Help Mom With Preparing Supper Then We Ate Together. The Following Day Was A Monday So It Was a School Day And

I Couldn't Miss It,My Alarm Rang But I Snoozed It.

Mom: ESIHLE!

Me: MA

Mom: Did You See The Time?

I Jumped And I Was So Gonna Be Late

Mom: What's Wrong Witchu?

Me: I Must Have Switched Off My Alarm While Tryna Snooze It

Mom: Go And Quickly Shower,Your Dad Is Gonna Be Mad Atchu

I Didn't Make The Bed,I Just Fixed The Blankets A Lil Then Went To Shower.I Got Dressed And

Went To The Kitchen

Me: Those Eggs Must Be Rotten Or Some'ing

Mom: Your Oversleeping Must Have Messed Up
Witcho Head

Vusi Looked At Me And Chuckled

Dad: Eat Quickly Or I'll Be Late For Work

Me: I Can't Eat That

Mom: You Always Eat Eggs For Breakfast Stop
Acting Childish Here And Eat Your Breakfast

She Gave Me My Plate

Dad: Now Eat!

I Took a Piece Of The Eggs And Brought It
Closer To My Mouth

A War Started Inside My Tummy,I Got Up And
Ran To The Bathroom And Threw Up,Mom
Opened Up And Got In

Mom: You Okay?

Me: It Must Have Been Something I Ate Last
Night

Mom: Who Is The Father??

[OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o FUCK ME SIDEWAYS [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o

[05/18, 19:31] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT30 ♡

I Wished I Could Bury Myself Alive Right There
On That Spot,I Wished The Earth Would Open
Up And Devour Me,My Ass Was Going To Get
Toasted Straight And Two Beers 🍺:o

Mom: Is It Menzi? Did You Sleep With Him?

Me: Huh?

Mom: Esihle I Know You Pregnant

Me:.....

Mom: Now Tell Me Who Is The Father? Is It
Menzi?

Me: Mom I Can Explain

Mom: Who Is It Esihle??

OBJ: '(I Just Felt Tears Threatening My Eyes Then They Escaped

Mom: And Then Why Are You Crying?

Me: You Gonna Beat Me Up? Are You Mad At Me? Will Dad Ever See Me As His Princess Ever Again? Ma I Also Didn't Want This To Happen, Menzi Kidnapped Me, I Didn't Have Time To Take The- Those Things Have To Be Taken In Three Or Two Days. When I Came Back It Was Already Too Late, Lutho Is Willing To Pay The Damages, Be There For The Bab- Dad Is So Gonna Kill Me, He Told Me To Break Up With Him a Long Time Ago But I Love Him And He Loves Me To- Mom Please-

Mom: You Stumbling On Your Words Young Lady, Breathe And Start Over

Me: Dad Is Gonna Kill Me Ma OBJ: '(OBJ: '(

Mom: So It's Not Menzi's Child?

I Shooked My Head,Mom Exhaled I Guess She Was Kinda Relieved Or Some'ing.She Pulled Me Into Her Arms And Hugged Me

Mom: Who Is This Lutho Guy?

Me: It's He He It's He's The Guy Dad Asked Me To Break Up With,The One Who Picked Me Up One Night When You Were Away On Your Vacation Then The Neighbours Called You

Mom Let Go Of Me And Looked Away

Me: I'm Sorry Ma I Know This Is a Disgrace To Our Family,Disrespect To You And Dad I Can Even Abort The Baby If You Wa-

Mom: YOU NOT GONNA DO SUCH THING! 

Me:.....

Mom: How Can You Be This Care Less Esihle??
You Know How Furious Your Father Will Get
When He Hears This! You Disrespected
Him,Me,Us And Even Your Self Worth

Me: I'm Sorry Ma [OBJ]:'(

Mom: We'll Talk 'bout This When You Back
From School,Go And Grab Some Fruits Before
Your Dad Comes Looking For You Here

Me: Thanks Mom

She Kissed My Forehead Then I Opened The
Bathroom Door [OBJ]:'(

Me: Dad!

Dad: I'm Gonna Be Late For Work

Mom: Musa!....How Long Have You Been
Standing There?

Dad: Long Enough To Hear Everything

Me: Dad I'm Sorry [OBJ:]' (

He Just Turned And Walked To His Bedroom, I
Just Broke Down And Cried

Me: Mom He's Mad At Me, He's Angry, He'll
Never Forgive Me [OBJ:]' ([OBJ:]' (

Mom: Give Him Some Time To Cool Off Bbe, I'm
Sure He's Just Shocked

Me: Please Talk To Him Ma! Tell Him That I'm
Sorry [OBJ:]' (

Dad Came Back And Stood In Front Of Us

Dad: Are You Going To School Or What?

Mom: She's Going

Me: Daddy I'm Sorry, I'm So Sorry [OBJ:]' (

He Just Walked Down The Stairs,I Went To The Kitchen And Took My Lunch Box And Two Fruits.I Went To The Car And Found Vusi And Dad Already Waiting For Me,We Drove In Silence

Vusi: Dad?

Dad: Yeah

Vusi: Can You Please Buy Me A New Phone? My Phone Is Getting Old,I Can't Even Hear Someone Talkin' On The Other Side If I Don't Have My Earphones On

Dad: Then Why Don't You Fix That?

Vusi: It's Not Like You Don't Have The Money Old Man

Dad: I SEE Y'ALL THINK MONEY GROWS FROM TREES,I WORK MY ASS OFF TO MAKE SURE THAT YOU'RE FED,CLOTHED AND NOW I'LL HAVE MORE MOUTHS TO FEED

Vusi: O-W-K-Y

Vusi Looked At Me And I Saw That He Felt Bad For Me

Vusi: Okay Fine I'll Fix The Phone But Esihle Needs A New Phone,Remember Menzi Took Hers?

Dad:.....

Vusi: But You Can Hear Me Ayt?! Right

Dad Parked Outside The Gate Then I Opened The Door To Get Out

Dad: You Don't Want Lunch Money Anymore?

Me: Save It For The Additional Mouth On The Way

Dad: ESIHLE!

I Got Out

Dad: HEY YOU YOUNG LADY,GET YOUR ASS
BACK HERE!

Me: Bye Dad

Dad: ESIHLE MORENA I'M TALKIN' TO YOU!!

I Just Walked To My Class,I Was The Only One
So I Sat Down And Cried A Lil

Inam: Wassup Bbe? (Getting Inside)

Me: My Life Is Just a Mess OBJ: '(

Inam: What's Wrong?

Me: Dad Is Mad At Me

Inam: What Did You Do?

Me: Uhhhm I'm Pregnant

Inam: Whoa That's Some Fucked Up Shit So Did You Tell Menzi? What Does He Say Bout This?

Me: Lutho Is The Father

Inam: That's Better

Me: Dad Doesn't Like Lutho

Inam: I'm Sorry Bbe

Me: I Wish I Could Just Die

Inam: Don't You Dare Think 'Bout That

Me: Enough Bout Me....What's Hip And Happening Witchu?

Inam: Look There's Something That I Have To Tell You And I'm Telling You This As My Friend Not Vusi's Sister

Me: You Fallin' For Litha?

Inam: Uhhhhm Actually We're Dating

Me: WHAT????

Inam: I Know It's Wrong Of Me But I Like Litha
And He-

Me: Yeah Damn Right It's Wrong! Inam You
Cheating On My Brother!

Inam: But Vusi Ain't a Saint Himself

Me: HE STOPPED HIS WAYS FOR YOU AND
NOW YOU DO THIS TO HIM?

Inam: Hey Look Litha Makes Me Happy I'm
Sorry For Following My Happiness Then

Me:.....

Inam: Vusi Played Me Countless Times,Who
Knows? He Might Be Fuckin' With Another Biych
Out There Or He'll Be Soon.Esihle I Can't Spend
The Rest Of My Life Wondering Who My
Boyfriend Will Be Fuckin' Next.I Thought You'd
Understand

Me: Look I'm Sorry Inam It's Just Tha-

Inam: You Have Issues Sweetheart

With That Said,She Put Her Bag Down And
Walked Away

Me: Where You Going?

Inam: To Litha,At Least He Can Brighten My Day

With That Said,She Walked Out [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:(So I
Was Officially Going To Spend The Day On My
Own Ohhh Almost Forgot With The Lil Lutho Or
Esihle Growing Inside Of Me.We Went To The
Parade Lines,My Class Teacher Called Me To
Her Office,She Helped Me In Catching Up With
The School Work I Missed The Past Two Weeks.

The Day Was Just Boring And Too Long For Me
Coz Inam Was Just Avoiding Me.Vusi Came To
Me And Said Dad Won't Be Able To Pick Us Up
So We Had To Take A Taxi Back Home.He Was
Just Avoiding Me [OBJ]:'(

The Bell Rang And School Was Out,I Took My Bag And Walked To The Gate.I Saw Lutho's Car And He Got Out With Olona

Olona: Sis' Esihle!

She Ran To Me,I Picked Her Up And Pecked Her Lips

Me: Hello Baby

Olona: Bhut' Luu Said We Going To Buy Ice Cream And Food For Us And The Baby

Me: The Baby Can't Eat Ice Cream

Olona: Then I'll Eat Her Things For Her

Lutho: Hey Bbe

Me: Hi

He Pecked My Lips

Lutho: Wassup?

Me: It's a Long Story

Lutho: Olona And I Were On Our Way To Grab
Something To Eat,Wanna Join Us?

Me: Yeah Why Not? I'm Starving

Lutho: I Ain't Surprised,You Eating For Two

I Looked Down

Lutho: Wanna Talk Bout It?

Me: Mom And Dad Found Out

Lutho: Lemme Take You,Lholho And My
Princess Out Then We'll Talk Bout That Later

Me: Thanks

Voice: Lutho Zizwe!

We Both Turned, Philela Was Standing Behind Us

Lutho: So You Still Alive?

Philela: Wanted Me To Die?

Lutho: Hoes Like You Don't Live For Too Long

Philela: Haha Funny....Did Menzi Tell You That We're Dating?

Lutho: Did He Have To? And Ohh By The Way Congratulations You Two Deserve Each Other

Philela:.....

Lutho: Thought I'd Care? I'm Sorry For Giving Non Fucks....Have A Good Whore Life Philela

:v I Love This Nikka

[05/19, 12:08] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

♠Crop_Top♠

#INSERT31 ♡

Philela: I See You Love Tasting All My Left
Overs (Lookin' At Me)

Lutho Turned And Looked At Her While I Just
Snort-laughed And Looked At Her

Lutho: Let's Go Sugar

Philela: He'll Leave Your ASS Like He Left Mine

Lutho Chuckled And Got Closer To Philela

Lutho: You're a Bitch,She's Not,You're a Mine Hole,She's Tight.Don't Compare Yourself To Her

Philela: Everyone Knows You're a Fuck Boy
Lutho,All You Do Is Just Tap And Pass But You Kept Coming Back Why? Coz You Can't Get Enough Of This (Pointing Down There) Don't Be Surprised Esihle When He Comes Crawling Back To Me

Lutho: I Don't Have The Energy For This

Me: Let's Just Go I'm Really Not In The Mood For This

We Got In The Car And Left Her Standing There

Me: So You've Fucked With Her?

Lutho: Something Like That

Me: Not Once But Many Times?

Lutho: Can We Change The Topic?

Me: So She's Fucking With Cousins

Lutho: I Used To Fuck With Her,She's Fucking With Only Menzi Now And Anyway She's Already Used Goods

Me: Ouch!

Lutho: Everyone Knows She's A Hoe

Me: If Y'all Didn't Fuck Her She Wouldn't

Lutho: If She Didn't Go 'Round Opening Her Legs For Everyone She Wouldn't

Me: Haha Okay I Won't Say Anything More

Lutho: So Whatchu Wanna Have?

Olona: I Feel Like Eating A Burger

Lutho: I Was Still Asking Princess's Mom
Lholho

Olona: Okay But I Want a Burger

Lutho: Baby?

Olona And I: Uhhm?

Lutho: Okay Esihle Whatchu Wanna Have?

Olona And I Both Laughed

Me: I'll Also Take The Burger

Lutho: Burger It Is Then

He Parked In Front Of a Fast Food Rastaurant
Then We Sat Down And Looked At Our Menus,A
Waiter Came To Us

Waiter: Afternoon So What Can I Get You?

Lutho: Uhhm We'll Take The Burgers With
Fries,Two Strawberry Krushers And A Beer

Olona: Bhut' Luu Why Do You Order A Beer?

Lutho: Coz I Can

Olona: Can I Have It Too?

Lutho: You Still Young For That Baby

Olona: And Sis Esihle?

Lutho: The Baby Eats What She Eats So She Can't

Olona: Yho

Our Orders Came And We Started Digging In

Waiter: Hope You Enjoy

Lutho: I'm Sure We Will

Waiter: You Have Beautiful Sisters Hey

Lutho And I Both Laughed And Looked At The Guy

Lutho: Uhhm This Loud Lil Mouse Is My Sister
(Pointing At Olona) And This One Is The Neck
Of My Household

Me: Neck Baby? C'mon

Waiter: Ohh Sorry I Didn't Know She Was Your
Woman

Lutho: It's Okay Man

Waiter: I Should Get Going Uhhm Enjoy Your
Meal

He Walked Away And Lutho And I Were Almost
Laughing Our Asses Out

Me: Someone Had His Eye On Someone's Bae

Lutho: Do I Look Too Old For You Or You Look
Too Young To Date With Me?

I Just Shrugged My Shoulders And Laughed

Olona: Bhut' Luu

Lutho: What Do You Want Lholho?

Olona: I Want Nothing Hawu

Lutho: What Is It Then?

Olona: When Is Sis' Esihle Going To Sleep Over
At Home With Us?

Lutho Looked At Me,I Just Kept Quiet And
Pretended That I Didn't Hear Olona

Olona: Sis Esihle?

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: When Are You Going To Sleep At Home
With Bhut' Luu And I?

Me: I Don't Know When Do You Want Me To?

Olona: TONIGHT!

Me: Whoa That's Too Soon

Olona: Mom Is Going To Take Me Back In Two Days So Can You Please Pretty Please Try To Before I Go?

Me: Okay I'll Try

We Finished Eating Then When We Were Walking To Lutho's Car,Olona Pulled Us Both Into a Shop With Baby Clothes

Me: What Are We Doing In Here?

Olona: Can We Look For The Baby's Clothes?

Lutho: But The Baby Is Not Here Yet

Olona: We Not Gonna Buy Them,We Just Gonna Look At Them

Lutho: One Would Swear That This Is Your Baby,Okay Fine

Olona: Thank You,Thank You

We Looked 'Round,Lutho And I Ended Up Enjoying What We Were Doing,Olona Kept Choosing Girl Clothes,She Was Really Looking Forward To Having A Niece.

One Of The Ladies Working There Came To Us

Lady: Can I Help You?

Lutho: No Thank You,We're Just Looking At The Clothes We Won't Buy Anything

Lady: Tryna Buy A Present For A Friend's Baby Shower?

Me: Nhaa We're Just Looking At The Clothes For Our Baby

Lady: Your Baby?? (Pointing At Me And Lutho)

Lutho: Yes Our Baby,Is There Anything Wrong With What She Said?

Lady: Uhhhm Nhaa It's Just That She Seems Too Young To Have a Baby

Voice: Why Do You Look So Surprised? Kids Nowadays Take Pregnancy As Some Trend Or Fashion And They Not Even Ashamed To Wear Tight Things Just To Show Those Big Bellies

Lutho And I Both Turned,It Was Some Middle Aged Lady Looking At Some Clothes

Lutho: Who Asked For Your Opinion?

Me: Bab-

Lutho: Nhaa Esihle Whoa.....Lady I'm Talkin' To You,Who Asked For Your Opinion?

Lady:.....

Lutho: Exactly,No One.Mind Your Own Business And Stop Meddling Your Long Nose In Other People's Business.Thank You

Lutho Picked Olona Up

Lutho: Let's Go

We Walked Out

Me: That Was Disrespeful

Lutho: Nhaa Her Putting Her Nose Where It Didn't Fit Was Disrespectful

Me: O-W-K-Y

Lutho: So Where To From Here?

Me: Drive Me Home,I Have To Get There Before Everyone

Lutho: So Bout Your Father,Whatchu Gonna Do Bout Everything?

Me: I Guess I'll Just Wait For Him To Cool Off

Lutho: I'm Sure He'll Come 'Round

We Bumped Into Menzi And Elia Who Was
Using Walking Sticks

Menzi: I See We Playing Happy Families

Lutho: If You Got No'ing Senseful To Say Save
Us The Crap Comin' Outta Your Mouth

Menzi: Kay Then But Enjoy The Happiness
While It Last

Lutho Put Olona Down And Walked To Menzi

Me: He Ain't Worth It Lutho Just Let Him Be

Lutho: Dammit! Menzi Why Do You Keep
Provokin' Me?

Menzi: If I Was You I'd Listen To That Bitch
Standing Ayt There Before I Do Something I
Might Regret

Lutho Punched Him

Olona: Bhut' Luu No!

Me: Baby Just Let Him Go,He Ain't Worth Your Time Or Energy.Lutho!

Lutho Pointed His Finger At Menzi But He Exhaled And Walked Back To Us,We Got In The Car Then Lutho Started The Car And Drove Away

Two Police Vans Stopped In Front Of The Car Then Another One Was Behind The Car So There Were Three Cop Vans Surrounding The Car

Me: Lutho....What's Going On?

Lutho: Act Cool

Me: What's Going On?

Lutho: I Dunno

Two Policemen Came Closer To The Car,They
Had Their Guns Pointing At Us

Cop1: Get Out Of The Car!

Lutho: The Fuck Is Going On?

Cop2: GET OUT OF THE CAR!

Lutho: Jeez Kay We Coming Out

He Looked At Me And Nodded,We All Went
Outta The Car.Two Other Cops Searched The
Car While The Other Two Searched Us

Lutho: The Fuck Is This?

No One Answered

Lutho: THE FUCK IS GOING ON?? I HAVE SOMEWHERE TO GET TO AND I DON'T HAVE ALL DAY,THE FUCK YOU LOOKIN' FOR? MAYBE I'D HELP YOU FIND IT

Cop1: Sir You're Under Arrest For Possession Of Illegal Weapons Found In Your Car,You Have The Right To Remain Sile-

Lutho: SPARE ME THAT CRAP! THE FUCK YOU TALKIN' BOUT??

[OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o THE FUCK??

[05/19, 12:17] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT32 ♡

Me: The Fuck Is Going On Lutho??

Lutho: Bbe I Dunno Too....Please Take Lholho To Anga's House I'll Pick Her Up When I'm Back

Me: And When Will That Be??

Lutho: I Dunno But I'll Be Back

Olona: I Don't Wanna Go To Bhut' Anga's House

Me: Ohh My Word What Am I Supposed To Do Lutho?

Olona: I Wanna Go To Your House

Me: My House??

Olona Nodded While She Held My Arm Tightly As We Looked At The Police Holding Her Brother

Lutho: But Lholho Sis Esihle Can't Take You To Her House

Olona: But I Wanna Go To Her House,Sis Esihle Please! [OBJ]:'(

Me: Okay Okay We'll Go To My House

Lutho: Thanks Bbe

The Officers Tried To Cuff Him

Lutho: I CAN WALK MY ASS TO THE VAN AND THERE WON'T BE NO NEED FOR THAT,IT'S NOT LIKE I'M A DEADLY ALIEN

Cop1: Sir Ca-

Lutho: I DON'T KNOW WHY YOU BUSY ARRESTING INNOCENT PEOPLE WHILE THERE ARE PEOPLE BREAKING THE LAW OUT THERE

They Pushed Him To The Back Then Another Officer Took His Car Keys And They Drove Away,I Took Lholho By Her Hand And We Walked To The Taxi Rank.Menzi's Car Parked Next To Us,I Swear I Thought I Was Gonna Pee On Myself

Menzi: Beautiful Ladies Like You Shouldn't Walk While There Are Guys With Cars Like Me

Me:.....

Olona: Sis Esihle Let's Get Inside The Car

Me: No!

Olona: No?

Me: We Gonna Take a Taxi Home,Thanks For The Offer Menzi

Menzi: You Should Let Me Take Care Of You Since Lutho Will Be Away For a While I Know You Love The Zizwe Boys

Me: You So Sick

Menzi: Okay Then Be That Kinda Player But
Next Time I Might Not Let You Off That Easy

Me: I See You Think Life Is Just A Game Menzi

Menzi: Isn't It?

Me:.....

Menzi: Bye Lholho Bhut' Menzi Loves You Kay?!

Olona: Lholho Loves You Too

Me: Let's Go Olona

We Got To The Rank And Took a Taxi To My
House, There Was No One Inside So We Went
To The Kitchen And I Made Her Something To
Eat, She Followed Me To My Room And I
Changed

Olona: Why Is Your Belly Flat? Where Is The
Baby?

I Laughed And Looked At Her,She Was Really Serious

Me: The Baby Is Still Small

Olona: Ohhhh

I Decided To Go And Start Preparing Supper Since I Didn't Know When Everyone Was Gonna Be Back.

Olona Just Sat On The Counter And Watched Everything I Did

Olona: Sis Esihle?

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: When Is Bhut' Luu Gonna Be Back?

Me: I'm Sure He'll Be Back Soon Baby

The Thought Of Lutho Spending So Many Years
In Jail Just Hit Right Through My Heart OBJ: '(

"What Was Menzi Talkin' Bout? Whoa Whoa
Maybe He's The One Who Planted Those
Things In Lutho's Car,Lutho Ain't That Dumb
That He'd Carry Those Kinda Things In His Car
In Public"

Olona: Sis Esihle?

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: Why Are You Crying?

Me: I Just Miss Bhut' Luu

Olona: He Said He's Gonna Be Back,He Keeps
His Promises

Me: Really?

Olona: Yeap,Don't Cry Bhut' Luu Will Be Back

I Just Smiled At The Way Olona Said What She Was Saying,She Came To Me And Wiped My Tears.Just Then Mom And The Twins Got In

Owethu: When Were You Pregnant?

Me: What??

Owethu: I See A Grown Up Baby Playing Witchu,Who's Child Is It?

Me: Mine

Olwethu: Like You Know How To Do One

Mom Looked At Me And I Looked Down

Olona: I'm Olona And You're? (Lookin At Owethu)

Owethu: I'm Owethu,Where Is She From And What Is She Doing Here?

Me: Can You Take Care To Your Room And Play

With Her? She Ain't Handful

Owethu: Okay Sure,I Like Her Anyways

Owethu Picked Her Up From The Counter And Walked To Her Room With Her,Olwethu Left Too,Leaving Me With Mom Who Had Her Eyes On Me

Mom: Care To Explain

Me: She's Lutho's Sister

Mom: WHAT??

Me: Lutho Got Arrested So Olona Said She Wanna Go With Me

Mom: Why Was He Arrested?

Me: It's a Long Story

Mom: That's Why They Created Something Called A Summary

Me: Menzi Planted Some Illegal Stuff In His Car And Called The Police

Mom: YOU SAID WHO??

Me: Yeah

Mom: What Does This Boy Want From You?

Me: Actually It's a Feud Between Him And Lutho

Mom: They Know Each Other?

Me: They Are Cousins

Mom: WHAT???

Me: Yeah

Mom: Are They Fighting Coz You Dating With Lutho?

Me: Maybe That Also Fueled It But It Was A Fire That Was Already There

Mom: This Guy Should Be Eliminated Before He Does More Damage

Me: Uhhhm Ma?

Mom: Yes

Me: Have You Talked To Dad?

Mom: He Doesn't Want To Talk To Me Too

Me: He Hates Me

Mom: Your Father Doesn't Hate You,He's Just Shocked.You Were His Princess And You Disappointed Him,He'll Come 'Round

Me: When Will That Be?

Mom: He's Still In Shock,Don't Push Him

Me: Mom You Know I Can't Go A Day Without Talking To Dad? For How Long Will He Be Mad At Me? OBJ: '(

Mom: Come Here

She Hugged Me,Even Though Mom Was Also Mad At Me,She Just Couldn't Stop Her Self From Calming Me Down.

We Finished Making Supper,Vusi Came Back

But Dad Dololo [OBJ]:(

We All Sat Down And Started Eating,Someone
Knocked And I Got Up To Open Up

Me: LUTHO! [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:)

Lutho: Hey

Me: HOW DID YOU GET OUT??

Lutho: That's Another Story For Another
Day,Where's Lholho?

I Hugged The Living Shit Outta Him,Dad
Appeared Behind Him

Dad: And Then Where Am I Supposed To Get In?

We Moved Aside Then Dad Got In

Dad: I Need To Talk To You,Both Of You!

UH-OH [OBJ]:(

[05/19, 12:22] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT32 ♡

Me: The Fuck Is Going On Lutho??

Lutho: Bbe I Dunno Too....Please Take Lholho
To Anga's House I'll Pick Her Up When I'm Back

Me: And When Will That Be??

Lutho: I Dunno But I'll Be Back

Olona: I Don't Wanna Go To Bhut' Anga's House

Me: Ohh My Word What Am I Supposed To Do

Lutho?

Olona: I Wanna Go To Your House

Me: My House??

Olona Nodded While She Held My Arm Tightly
As We Looked At The Police Holding Her
Brother

Lutho: But Lholho Sis Esihle Can't Take You To
Her House

Olona: But I Wanna Go To Her House,Sis Esihle
Please! [OBJ]:(

Me: Okay Okay We'll Go To My House

Lutho: Thanks Bbe

The Officers Tried To Cuff Him

Lutho: I CAN WALK MY ASS TO THE VAN AND THERE WON'T BE NO NEED FOR THAT,IT'S NOT LIKE I'M A DEADLY ALIEN

Cop1: Sir Ca-

Lutho: I DON'T KNOW WHY YOU BUSY ARRESTING INNOCENT PEOPLE WHILE THERE ARE PEOPLE BREAKING THE LAW OUT THERE

They Pushed Him To The Back Then Another Officer Took His Car Keys And They Drove Away,I Took Lholho By Her Hand And We Walked To The Taxi Rank.Menzi's Car Parked Next To Us,I Swear I Thought I Was Gonna Pee On Myself

Menzi: Beautiful Ladies Like You Shouldn't Walk While There Are Guys With Cars Like Me

Me:.....

Olona: Sis Esihle Let's Get Inside The Car

Me: No!

Olona: No?

Me: We Gonna Take a Taxi Home,Thanks For
The Offer Menzi

Menzi: You Should Let Me Take Care Of You
Since Lutho Will Be Away For a While I Know
You Love The Zizwe Boys

Me: You So Sick

Menzi: Okay Then Be That Kinda Player But
Next Time I Might Not Let You Off That Easy

Me: I See You Think Life Is Just A Game Menzi

Menzi: Isn't It?

Me:.....

Menzi: Bye Lholho Bhut' Menzi Loves You Kay?!

Olona: Lholho Loves You Too

Me: Let's Go Olona

We Got To The Rank And Took a Taxi To My House,There Was No One Inside So We Went To The Kitchen And I Made Her Something To Eat,She Followed Me To My Room And I Changed

Olona: Why Is Your Belly Flat? Where Is The Baby?

I Laughed And Looked At Her,She Was Really Serious

Me: The Baby Is Still Small

Olona: Ohhhh

I Decided To Go And Start Preparing Supper Since I Didn't Know When Everyone Was Gonna Be Back.

Olona Just Sat On The Counter And Watched Everything I Did

Olona: Sis Esihle?

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: When Is Bhut' Luu Gonna Be Back?

Me: I'm Sure He'll Be Back Soon Baby

The Thought Of Lutho Spending So Many Years In Jail Just Hit Right Through My Heart [OBJ]:'(

"What Was Menzi Talkin' Bout? Whoa Whoa Maybe He's The One Who Planted Those Things In Lutho's Car,Lutho Ain't That Dumb That He'd Carry Those Kinda Things In His Car In Public"

Olona: Sis Esihle?

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: Why Are You Crying?

Me: I Just Miss Bhut' Luu

Olona: He Said He's Gonna Be Back,He Keeps His Promises

Me: Really?

Olona: Yeap,Don't Cry Bhut' Luu Will Be Back

I Just Smiled At The Way Olona Said What She Was Saying,She Came To Me And Wiped My Tears.Just Then Mom And The Twins Got In

Owethu: When Were You Pregnant?

Me: What??

Owethu: I See A Grown Up Baby Playing Witchu,Who's Child Is It?

Me: Mine

Olwethu: Like You Know How To Do One

Mom Looked At Me And I Looked Down

Olona: I'm Olona And You're? (Lookin At Owethu)

Owethu: I'm Owethu,Where Is She From And What Is She Doing Here?

Me: Can You Take Care To Your Room And Play With Her? She Ain't Handful

Owethu: Okay Sure,I Like Her Anyways

Owethu Picked Her Up From The Counter And Walked To Her Room With Her,Olwethu Left Too,Leaving Me With Mom Who Had Her Eyes On Me

Mom: Care To Explain

Me: She's Lutho's Sister

Mom: WHAT??

Me: Lutho Got Arrested So Olona Said She
Wanna Go With Me

Mom: Why Was He Arrested?

Me: It's a Long Story

Mom: That's Why They Created Something
Called A Summary

Me: Menzi Planted Some Illegal Stuff In His Car
And Called The Police

Mom: YOU SAID WHO??

Me: Yeah

Mom: What Does This Boy Want From You?

Me: Actually It's a Feud Between Him And Lutho

Mom: They Know Each Other?

Me: They Are Cousins

Mom: WHAT???

Me: Yeah

Mom: Are They Fighting Coz You Dating With Lutho?

Me: Maybe That Also Fueled It But It Was A Fire That Was Already There

Mom: This Guy Should Be Eliminated Before He Does More Damage

Me: Uhhhm Ma?

Mom: Yes

Me: Have You Talked To Dad?

Mom: He Doesn't Want To Talk To Me Too

Me: He Hates Me

Mom: Your Father Doesn't Hate You,He's Just Shocked.You Were His Princess And You Disappointed Him,He'll Come 'Round

Me: When Will That Be?

Mom: He's Still In Shock,Don't Push Him

Me: Mom You Know I Can't Go A Day Without Talking To Dad? For How Long Will He Be Mad

At Me? [OBJ]:'(

Mom: Come Here

She Hugged Me,Even Though Mom Was Also Mad At Me,She Just Couldn't Stop Her Self From Calming Me Down.

We Finished Making Supper,Vusi Came Back But Dad Dololo [OBJ]:(

We All Sat Down And Started Eating,Someone Knocked And I Got Up To Open Up

Me: LUTHO! [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:)

Lutho: Hey

Me: HOW DID YOU GET OUT??

Lutho: That's Another Story For Another Day,Where's Lholho?

I Hugged The Living Shit Outta Him,Dad
Appeared Behind Him

Dad: And Then Where Am I Supposed To Get In?

We Moved Aside Then Dad Got In

Dad: I Need To Talk To You,Both Of You!

UH-OH OBJ: (

[05/19, 12:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT33 ♡

Lutho And I Looked At Each Other Then Walked To The Table,Vusi Looked At Me And Lutho,I Just Shrugged My Shoulders

Mom: Hey Bbe

Dad: Hey Pumpkin

Mom: You Came Back Home Late Today

Dad: Had Some Few Errands To Run Before Coming Back

Mom: I See

Dad: Can You Please Dish Up For Zizwe Too?

Mom: Yeah Sure

Olona Got Up And Ran To Luu

Olona: YOU REALLY BACK!

Lutho: I Told You That I'll Be Back

Olona: Sis Esihle Took Me To Her Room When She Was Taking Off Her School Uniform And She Has A Flat Belly,Why Hasn't Her Big Belly Showed Yet?

Lutho And I Both Looked At Each Other,Vusi Cleared His Throat While Snorting.Dad Turned And Looked At Me And Lutho

Mom: You Can Both Sit Down

Lutho: Thanks Ma But I'm Okay I'll Pass

Dad: You've Been In A Cell The Whole Afternoon,You Didn't Touch Anything.We Won't Poison Your Ass For Ruining My Daughter's Future Or Lemme Say That Would Be A Quick Death For Me

Vusi: That's Too Cruel Dad

Lutho Chuckled And Sat Down,Mom Gave Him His Plate And We All Focused On Our Plates.

Olwethu: So This Is Thee Lutho?

Owethu: What Lutho?

Dad: The One Who Ruined Your Sister's Future And Turned Her Into A Mother At The Age Of 16!

Dad Hit The Table And We All Jumped In Fright

Vusi: I Should Take My Plate To My Room

Mom: No One Is Going Anywhere Here

Vusi: But The Old Man Is Spitting Fire,I Don't Wanna Get Burnt For Her Sins (Pointing At Me)

Me: Then Don't!

Mom: Shut Up! Both Of You!

Dad: Vusi I'm Still The Man Who Sweated To

Ejaculate You Inside Your Mother

Mom: Musa!

Dad: Vusi Seems To Forget That I'm His Father

Mom: Can We All Just Eat In Peace?

Owethu: I Think Bhut' Vusi Was Right,Some Of Us Should Go And Eat In Our Rooms (Takin' Her Plate)

Olwethu: I'm Right Behind You (Getting Up)

Dad And Mom: SIT THE FUCK DOWN!!

Lutho Stole A Glance At Me And Smiled

Owethu And Olwethu: O-W-K-Y

They Both Sat Down,We Finished Eating Then Mom Took The Plates To The Kitchen With My Help And Owethu's.Dad Called Mom And I To

The Lounge,He Was Sitting There,Drinking His Brandy With Lutho Looking At Him

Dad: Sit Down

Mom Went To Sit Next To Him,When I Was Bout To Sit Next To Lutho

Dad: Sit There

He Pointed At A Couch So Far Away From Bae's OBJ: (

Lutho: Before You Talk Sir,I Wanna Say Thank You For Getting Me Outta There

Me: WHOA DAD BAILED YOU OUT?? OBJ:)

Dad: Not Coz I Wanted To,Your Mother Asked

Me To And I Did It Coz It Was Menzi's Doing

Me: It Doesn't Matter THANK YOU THANK YOU
THANK YOU DADDY 😁:D 😁:)

I Got Up And Went To Him,I Hugged The Living
Shit Outta Him

Me: Thanks Dad

I Kissed His Cheek

Dad: That's Not What I Want Us To Talk Bout
And Ohh Before We Talk,When Are You Paying
Me My Money Back Zizwe?

Lutho: I Can Pay It Back To-

Mom: You Don't Have To

Dad: WHAT??

Mom: Bbe C'mon He Doesn't Have To

Dad: That Was My Money

Mom: I Know Maybe This One Thing Might Earn
You a Ticket To Heaven

Me: Haha Ohh Please It Would Take Him More
Than That

Dad: So You Take This Slightly?

Me: Not That I Take It Slightly But Dad We Both
Know You've Sinned More Than-

Mom: More Than He Breathes

Dad: C'mon Women I Do Good Sometimes

Mom: Yeah Right

We All Laughed For That Moment Then Dad Put
On His Serious Face Again

Dad: Zizwe

Lutho: Sir

Dad: I Hope You Know I Feel Like Roasting Your Ass Right Now For What You Did

Lutho:.....

Me: Dad Can-

Dad: Let The Men Talk Esihle

Me:..... OBJ:(

Dad: Now Back To What I Was Saying....Zizwe I Hate You And What You Did With Every Single Thread Of Every Single Inch That Makes Up Every Single Living And Dead Cell In My Body

Mom: Yho So Much Hate,Forget Going To Heaven

Dad Ended Up Chuckling

Dad: Pumpkin Please

Mom: So Much Seriousness, Losen Up a Lil Bit

Dad: Baby Please Go And Warm Up Our Bed, I See You Overstayed Your Welcome Here

Mom: This Is My House Too Remember?

Dad: Then Can You Please Shut Up And Conserve Those Lips For Kissing Me

I Looked At Lutho And We Both Laughed

Dad: Princess I Hope You Know I'm So Disappointed In You

Me: I'm Sorry Daddy

Dad: But Being Mad Atchu Won't Help Anyone, What's Done Is Done

Me: And I'm Really Sorry Dad

Dad: I Know.... Now Let's Talk Bout What's Going To Happen When The Baby Is Here

Lutho: What Do You Mean Sir?

Dad: The Baby Will Be Raised By Me And
Pumpkin, You Two Can Enjoy Your Lives And
Carry On Growing Up

Lutho: But I Thought Suga- I Thought Esihle And
I Were Gonna Raise The Baby Together

Dad: What Do You Know Bout Parenting?

Lutho: I Want a Stable And Warm Home For My
Child, When Growing Up I Never Got That, My
Father And I Never Got Along. I Want My Child
To Know Me And Have A Good Relationship
With Me

Dad: Don't Tell Me You Want Esihle To Stay
Witchu While Her Parents Are Still Alive And
Fresh

Mom: Fresh?

Dad: Babe Isn't That Patent? You See I'm Still
Hot And You Still Hella Fine

Mom: Back To What You Were Talkin Bout

Before You Start Having Dirty Thoughts

We All Laughed

Dad: So How Are You Gonna Do This?

Lutho: I Want Esihle To Be My Wife

Dad: WHAT????

Me: WHAT??

Mom: Whoa

Lutho: I Love Her And She Loves Me

Dad: Marriage Ain't a Child's Play Son

Lutho: I Know

Dad: Then Why Do You Want This When You Know?

Lutho: Coz I Love Your Daughter And I Want Our Child To Be With Both Parents

Mom: Lutho Marriage Ain't Something You Can

Just Play With

Lutho: I Know

Mom: As People Grow Up,They Grow To Love
New Things,Want To Experience And Explore
The World Especially Atcho Age

Lutho And I Looked At Each Other

Lutho: I'm Committed To What Esihle And I
Have

Dad: You Serious? Pumpkin This Kid Is Dead
Serious

Lutho: I Am Sir

Dad: We'll Talk Bout This Some Other
Time,Alone.Just Take Your Sister Back
Home,Take A Shower And Sleep

Me: Dad Is It You Saying That Or Someone
Switched My Dad?

Dad: Shut Up Esihle,Pumpkin Let's Go To Sleep

Lutho And I Went To Owethu's Room And Found Olona Asleep.Lutho Picked Her Up Then We Walked Out,Anga's Car Was Parked Just Outside The Yard

Anga: So Your Future Daddy In Law Got You Out Boy?

They Fist Bumped

Lutho: Wasn't Expecting It Boy Yho

Anga: When I Got To The Station They Told Me You Were Already Out

Lutho: Then You Can Use Your Money On Something Else

Anga: Like Luring Miss Morena Into My Arms?

Lutho: You Dream Too Much Boy

Anga: Lemme Drive You Home Boi

Lutho Put Olona At The Back Then Came To Me,He Wrapped His Arms Round My Waist And I Put Mine Round His Neck

Me: I'm Glad You And Dad Seem Like You Fixed Things

Lutho: When We Meet,ALONE He Might Roast My Ass.He's A Gangster King,He Can't Let Me Off That Easily

Me: He Still Wants To Go To Heaven Maybe He Might Let You Off That Easily

Lutho: Thanks For Taking Care Of Olona

Me: She's A Sweet Soul I Wouldn't Say No To Spending Some Time With Her

Anga: Hey Hey Boi We Gotta Go!

Lutho: I Gotta Go So I Guess I'll See You
Tomorrow

Me: Bye

We Had A Long Passionate Kiss Then Lutho
Pecked My Lips And Got In The Car.I Walked
Back To The House And Walked To My Room,I
Found Vusi Sitting On My Bed And Typing
Something On His Phone

Me: Big Bro

Vusi: So Your Friend Decided To Cheat On Me

I Acted Surprised

Me: WHAT?

Vusi: Don't Act Like You Don't Know,She Told
Me That She Told You

Me: Ohh

Vusi: When Were You Gonna Tell Me?

Me: It Was Not My Place To Tell


Vusi: Ohh?

Me: It's Not Like You Were Treating Her In a Good Way Too

Vusi: So You Siding With Her?

Me: Vusi I Ain't Takin' No Side

Vusi: You're And You Know What? Tell That Friend Of Yours That She Did Me a Favor Now I Can Tap Anything I Wanna Tap Without Thinkin' Bout Some Loyal Ass Bitch Waiting For Me To Come Back To Her And Play The Loyal Loving Boyfriend

WOW!  o.o

[05/19, 12:27] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT34 ♡

I Looked At Vusi And He Was Serious As a Heart Attack,He Got Up From The Bed And Walked To The Door

Me: You Two Can Still Fix Things If You Want To You Know?

Vusi: I'm Down With Being Held Down I'm Just Gonna Slank And Pass

Me: Vusi

Vusi: That Loyalty,Commitment Thing Ain't For Me

Me: I'm Sure Inam Still Loves You And I Know You Still Love Her Too

Vusi: That Doesn't Matter,What Matters Is That She Moved On And I'm Gonna Do Just That Too

Me: Can You At Least Promise Me One Thing?

Vusi: Yeah

Me: Find A Suitable And Good Sister In Law For Me

Vusi: You Ain't Getting That Anytime Soon Lil Sis Don't Worry Maybe I'll Consider Getting You One When I'm 50

Me: Haha What??

Vusi: What's The Rush?

Me: You Just Saying That Coz You Haven't Met Your Mrs Right

Vusi: Maybe But Even If I Meet Her At The Age Of 30,She'll Have To Wait For Me Till I Turn 50

Me: That's Bull.I Wouldn't Wait For You For 20 Fucken Years Even If You Were The Only Guy Walking On Earth

Vusi: Then That Would Be Your Loss

Me: You So Full Of Yourself

Vusi: I Take After Your Dad

Me: Yeah Ayt

He Walked Back To My Bed And Lied On His
Back,I Sat Next To Him

Vusi: Speakin' Of Dad,What Did He Do To Lutho?
I Hope He Didn't Rough Him Up Too Much

Me: They Only Talked

Vusi: Whoa Are You Telling Me That Musa
Morena Only Talked With The Guy Who
Impregnated His Daughter?

Me: Yeap

Vusi: Then Whatever Sangoma Lutho Uses,It
Works For Him Straight

I Chuckled And Hit Him With My Elbow Playfully

Vusi: So Where To From Here?

Me: Lutho Is Talkin' Bout Marriage

Vusi: Whoa What??

Me: Yeap

Vusi: Some People Just Throw Away Their Fun
And Joy Easy Like That

Me: What Do You Mean?

Vusi: Having A Wife Is A Lotta Job Sis And
Lutho Is Gonna Marry You So He Should Start
Digging His Grave The Minute He Says I Do

Me: Whatchu Tryna Say Bout Me You Moron?

I Kept Throwing Punches At Him But Vusi Kept
Ducking And We Were Both Laughing

Vusi: You'd Never Win a Fight Against Me Like
Uncle Lethu Would Never Win Against Uncle B

Me: And You So Full Of Yourself Like That Uncle
Of Yours

We Both Sat Down

Me: So Tell Me,Are You Really Glad That Inam
Cheated On You?

Vusi: Why Would I Be Glad?

Me: Coz You Can Tap Anything You Wanna Tap
Without Thinkin' Bout Some Loyal Ass Bitch
Waiting For You To Come Back To Her And Play
The Loyal Loving Boyfriend

Vusi: Haha Are You For Real? You Can't Use My
Line Against Me

Me: I'm Asking For Real

Vusi: I Won't Say I Ain't Hurt,I Love Inam And Always Will

Me: But?

Vusi: I Never Treated Her Well,She Deserves Someone Who Will Treat Her In A Good Way And Give Her The Love And Care I Wasn't Able To Give To Her

Me: You Can Be Sane Sometimes

Vusi: I'm Always Sane Bitch

He Hit Me Playfully

Me: Me And My Baby Wanna Sleep So Dash Outta Our Room

Vusi: Hehe I See You Lookin' Forward To Being A Mother,Tell That Munchkin In There That Uncle Vusi Says Goodnight

Me: Bye Uncle Vusi

He Kissed My Forehead Then Walked Out,I
Closes The Door And Got In Bed.Lutho Called
Me

Call Convo

Lutho: Sugar Sugar

Me: Hey Bbe Did You Arrive Safely?

Lutho: Even Though Anga Took Us Into Some
South African Fast And Furious We Were Able
To Survive

Me: Haha As If You Not Used To His Driving

Lutho: I'm Not,Only Lholho Is

Me: You Say Siya Is The One Exposing Her To
These Kinda Stuff While You Also Have A Hand
In That

Lutho: No I'm Not

Me: Yes You Are,Where Is She Now?

Lutho: She's Asleep In My Room

Me: And Where Are You?

Lutho: Going Through Some Work Files

Me: Lemme Not Disturb You Then

Lutho: You Ain't

Me: Lutho!

Lutho: Okay Fine Then Goodnight Bbe

Me: Night Love

Lutho: Love You Kay?!

Me: And I Love You More

Lutho: No I Love You More

Me: You Know That's Not True

Lutho: Go To Sleep Sugar

I Hung Up And Tried To Fall Asleep.My Alarm

Woke Me Up The Following Day Then I Went To Bath,I Went To The Kitchen And Everyone Was Having Eggs

Me: Morning

Mom: Morning Bbe

Dad: Hey Bbe

Both The Smell Of The Eggs And Oil Didn't Sit Me Well,I Went To Puke In The Bathroom Then Made Cereal For Myself And Went To Eat In The Lounge Then Dad Drove Us To School

Dad: It's Been a While Since I've Seen Inam Wassup With You And Her?

Vusi: She Cheated On Me And Now She's Dating With Another Guy

Dad: Ouch!

Me: It's Not Like Your Son Is A Saint Himself

Dad: I Knew Vusi Wouldn't Be Held Down For Too Long

Vusi: Just Like Mom Couldn't To You Back In High School?

Dad: As A Teenager You Have To Explore,Get Different Samples Till You Get That Unique One

Me: Dad!

Dad: What??

Vusi: Haha Tasting And Slanking Em Till You Get That One You Wanna Make The Main Meal

Dad: You Gettin' What I'm Sayin'

Me: I'm Starting To Think You The One With The Bad Influence On Vusi

Dad: I'm Just Tellin' Him The Truth

Me: Mom Would Kill You Ayt Now If She'd Hear You Saying All These Things To Vusi

We Got To School,Dad Gave Us Lunch Money,Fist Bumped With Vusi Then I Kissed His Cheek.I Went To My Class And Found Inam With Litha

Me: Hey

Litha: Hello Miss Morena

Inam:.....

I Put My Bag On My Desk Then Sat On a Desk Far From Theirs

Litha: So Aren't You Going To The Matric Dance Esihle?

Me: Nhaa I Don't Feel Like Going And Besides No One Asked Me To Be Their Date Except You

Litha: It Would Have Been Nice To Have You There,I'm Sure Bbe Is Gonna Need Some

Female She Can Talk To

Babe? [OBJ]o.O Wow

Inam: I'm So Thirsty Can You Accompany Me To The Tap Bbe?

Litha: Yeah Sure

They Both Got Up

Me: Inam Can We Talk?

Inam: If It's Bout Me Cheating On Your Loving Loyal Brother Who Left His Ways For Me Then No

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout Vusi,I Wanna Talk Bout Us

Inam: Is There Still Us?

Me: What Do You Mean? Vusi Is My Brother And I Ha-

Inam: Exactly! Vusi Is Your Brother And Now That We Over Coz I Left Him For Someone Else,Our Friendship Won't Work

Me: I Know What I Said To You Was Wrong,Can We Please Fix This Shit Up.I Need My Friend

Inam: I Don't Think So,I Gotta Go Esihle

She Walked Out So I Was OFFICIALLY FRIENDLESS.We Went To The Parade Lines And Had Our Morning Prayer,I Spent The Whole Day On My Own Or Lemme Say With My Baby [OBJ]:(

Dad Picked Us Up,We Found Mom With Her Bag And Dad's In The Lounge.They Said They Were Going Away On A Three Day Vacation Or Business Trip Of Dad's And Mom Just Had To Leave The Ford To Vusi [OBJ]-_- I Really Hated Her

For Doing That Coz Vusi Was Gonna Be Able To Come With Any Hoe He Wants To Come With,Anytime Of The Day.Fuck My Mom For Having A Soft Spot For Vusi [OBJ]_- - As Expected Vusi Brought Us a Wannabe Mrs Morena Hoe From School And Took Her To His Room.It Was a Freedom Three Days For Vusi While The Twins And I Were Gonna Get A Pornography Week From Vusi And His Bitches.He Came Back And Joined Me And The Twins In The Lounge

Vusi: So What Are We Having For Supper? I'm Starving

Owethu: Are You Starving Or Your Bitch Is?

Vusi: I'm So Not In The Mood To Kick Some Ass Tonight

Me: You Only In The Mood To Slank It Ayt?

Olwethu: So Is It Gonna Be Some Tap And Pass

Kinda Thing Or You Gonna Keep Her For A While?

Vusi: You So Forward

Owethu: I Still Love Inam For You

Vusi: Too Bad Inam Moved On With Another Dude

Owethu: You Both Still Love Each Other

Vusi: I'm Not There Anymore

Olwethu: Yho

Vusi Went To Dish Up On Two Plates Then Walked To His Room

Vusi: Lemme Leave Before You Kids Say Bi And Scary Stuff

Olwethu: I Feel Sorry For That Girl Coz She Ain't Gonna Sleep a Wink

Vusi: Sisanda Morena Would Commit Suicide If She'd Hear Her Kids Saying That

Olwethu: I Take After Your Father Dude

Vusi: You Missy Take This Opportunity And Pay Lutho A Visit Coz Once The Rents Are Back,You Ain't Gettin' Non

Owethu: So We Gonna Be Left Alone?

Vusi: Am I Invisible?

Olwethu: It's Not Like You Gonna Pay Any Attention To Us,All You Gonna Do Is Work Out

Vusi: Yho Lemme Leave For Real

Vusi Went To His Room

Olwethu: Bhut' Vusi Is Right,Take This Opportunity And Pay Bhut' Luu Some Visit And Go And Do Some Sexual Exercises

Me: So That You Can Also Bring Hoes To Dad's

House?

Olwethu: I Didn't Have That In Mind But I Might Just Consider It Since You Mentioned It

Me: You So Sick

Olwethu: Blame Musa Morena

Me: Owethu Are You Cool With Me Leaving?

Owethu: If You Gonna Bring Me Some Goodies Then We're Good

Me: You So Old For Your Age

Owethu: We Should Both Benefit From This

Me: Okay Fine Deal

I Called Lutho And Told Him To Pick Me Up,I Packed My Small Bag And Waited For Him.He Finally Arrived Then He Drove Us To His House

Me: Where's Lholho?

Lutho: Mom Came To Fetch Her,Dad Was Starting To Get Suspicious Or Maybe Menzi Told Him That Lholho Is With Me

Me: So He Didn't Know?

Lutho: He'd Kill Mom If He'd Find Out,That Man Hates My Gut

Me: I'm Sorry To Hear That

Lutho: It's Fine,I've Decided To Live My Life For Me Not For Him.I'm Done With Him

We Sat On The Couch Then Lutho Brought Us a Fleece And Snacks,We Kept Having Short Kisses In Between Then I Sat On His Lap And We Had The Longest Kiss Which Left Me In a Sexual Mood.

Lutho Took Off My Jacket,I Took Off His.He Picked Me Up And Walked To His Room With Me,He Put Me On The Bed And We Continued Kissing,We Stripped Each Other Naked.Lutho

Took a Long Look At My Body

Lutho: I Feel So Bad That This Small Flat
Tummy Will Look Like a Balloon Soon

Me: And All Thanks To You

We Went Back To Kissing Again While Lutho
Played With My Boobs,He Played With My Clit
And I Was Drippin' Wet.He Finally Shoved
Himself In And For A Change I
Participated [OBJ]:v [OBJ]:)

We Lied On Our Backs To Catch Our Breath,I
Fell Asleep Right On His Chest.When I Woke Up
The Following Day,Lutho Was Not Next To Me.

I Wore My Gown And Walked To The Lounge,I
Found Lutho With a Girl And a Baby

Me: Morning

Lutho: Hey Bbe

Girl: WHO IS SHE LUTHO??

Lutho: Angela Please Don't

Ohh So Her Name Was Angela

Angela: I ASKED YOU A QUESTION,WHO IS SHE LUTHO?? WHO THE HELL IS SHE??

Me: Lutho What's Going On?

Angela: I THOUGHT WE WERE GONNA WORK ON OUR MARRIAGE,SO THIS RING ON MY FINGER MEANS NOTHING TO YOU HUH? THE I DOES WE MADE IN FRONT OF THE PRIEST MEAN NOTHING TO YOU??

Me: Wow

Lutho: Bbe This Is Angela My Ex Wife And Her S
-

Angela: I'M ANGELA ZIZWE! LUTHO'S WIFE

AND THIS IS OUR SON! OUR SON!

WHOA!! HOLLUP!! THE FUCK?? [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:o

[05/19, 12:28] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT35 ♡

I Was Just Stunned No Stretch That, I WAS WAY BEYOND THE WORD SHOCKED, If I Was The Sensitive Type That Taints After Hearing Something So Traumatizing, I Would've Fainted. I Just Stood There Like A Pole And Stared At The Girl Dismayed

Lutho: Sugar

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Angela: I See He Didn't Tell You That He Already Got a Family

Lutho: Angela Just Shut Up! Baby Can I Explain To You?

Me: I Think It's My Cue To Leave

Angela: Don't Talk To Me Like That Lutho In Front Of The Baby

Lutho: ANGELA JUST SHUT UP!!

I Walked Back To The Bedroom [OBJ]:'(Crying,Sad,Shocked,Mad,Angry.I Was Just An Emotional Wreck.Lutho Got In And Held Me

Me: Don't Touch Me Lutho! DON'T YOU DARE TOUCH ME!! [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Baby Can You Just Lemme Explain

Errthing To You?

Me: WHAT IS THERE TO EXPLAIN LUTHO??
YOU MARRIED AND YOU HAVE A SON WITCHO
WIFE,WHAT'S THERE TO EXPLAIN IN THAT??
WAS I SOME KINDA REBOUND WHILE YOU
WORKED THINGS OUT WITCHO WIFE??

Lutho: What?? Esihle No!

Me: You're a Dog Lutho! A Tailless Dog!!

Lutho: You Don't Mean That

Me: I Mean Every Fucken Letter Lutho
Zizwe,Just Go Back To Your Wife! I'll Take My
Things And Leave You Two Working On Your
MARRIAGE

Lutho: Sugar She's Not M-

Me: SAVE IT FOR SOMEONE WHO CARES
LUTHO! [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'('

I Changed To A Dress And Took My Bag Then

Walked To The Lounge Then Went Out,Lutho Was Walking Beside Me Asking For A Chance To Explain But I Was Really Not In The Mood For His Bullshit.

"He Didn't Tell Me That He Was Married Or That He Had Son And On Top Of All That He Told My Father That He Wanted To Marry Me.The Fuck Is Wrong With This Nikka?? So He Wanted To Make Me His Second Wife? Fuck That"

He Pulled Me To Him And Tightened His Grip

Me: Lutho Leggo Off Me

Lutho: CAN YOU JUST LISTEN TO ME FOR ONCE??

He Roared,I Won't Say I Didn't Get Frightened But He Didn't Have The Right To Be The Shouting Or Mad One While He Played Me And

Deceived Me

Me: DON'T YOU DARE And I MEAN DON'T YOU DARE RAISE YOUR VOICE WHEN TALKING TO ME LUTHO!!

Lutho: Okay Look I Kn-

Me: WHAT DO YOU KNOW LUTHO?? HUH?? WHAT DO YOU KNOW?? DO YOU KNOW HOW HURT I AM AYT NOW? HOW PLAYED AND DECEIVED I FEEL?? HUH? DO YOU?? JUST LET ME GO HOME WHERE I'M LOVED,RESPECTED AND NOT PLAYED FOR A FOOL

Lutho: Can I At Least Drive You Home?

Me: No!!

Lutho: Baby C'mon I Just Wanna Make Sure That You And My Baby Are Okay

Me: THIS IS OFFICIALLY NOT YOUR CHILD! THERE'S YOUR CHILD INSIDE THE HOUSE

WITCHO WIFE,THIS IS MY BABY! MY BABY
ALONE!

Lutho: Now You Taking Madness To Another
Level

Me: Am I Lutho? AM I? Lutho Zizwe Just Leave
Me Alone!

I Walked And Left Him Standing There,I Caught
A Taxi And Went Home

{I work too hard for all my shit

To be given away

Fuck how you feel

Just put my shit in the grey[?]

If I go

If I go

If I go

I want it all with me

Want to take all this shit with me when I go

Want to take all this shit with me when I go

Leave nothing behind, leave nothing behind

All this shit with me when I go

Want to take all this shit with me when I go}

" I Gave Lutho My Heart,My Love,My Soul And That's How He Repaid Me.He Never Even Tried To Tell Me That He Was Married Or Had a Son! What Kinda Father And Husband Is He? And On Top Of Everything He Told My Parents That He Wanted To Marry Me,The Hell? So It Was Clear He Was Talkin' Bout Making Me His Second Wife And I Esihle Morena Would Never Settle For Less HELL NO!" [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:([OBJ]:'([OBJ]:([OBJ]:'(

I Got Home And Opened Using My Key,I Went Straight To My Room And Threw Myself On My Bed.Lutho Tried Calling Me But I Switched My Phone Off.I Just Thought Of Everything And That I Never Took A Pregnancy Test To Be Sure That I Was Really Pregnant.At That Moment I Wished The Test Would Say I'm Wasn't Pregnant,I Just Didn't Want Anything To With Lutho Zizwe And A Child Was So Gonna Keep Him Close Even If I Didn't Want Him.

I Went To Take The Longest Warm Bath,Wore A Dress And Sandals,Leather Jacket Then Took Some Money From My Savings.

I Felt Like Puking,I Went To The Bathroom And Did The Deed Then Went To The Kitchen,Olwethu And Vusi Were Making Breakfast

Me: Morning

Olwethu: Whoa Weren't You Supposed To Be At

Bhut' Bae's House?

Me: I Still Have A Home

Vusi: Did Lutho's Main Chick Kick You Out?

Me: Yeah

I Opened The Fridge And Looked For Fruits

Vusi: Just Kiddin'

Me: And I Ain't

Olwethu: Are You For Real?

Me: Vusi Can You Please Drive Me To The Mall?

Vusi: You Can Go There By Feet And Besides
You Need The Exercise

Me: Oh

I Took My Apple And Banana Then Walked
Outta The Kitchen

Vusi: I'm Just Kiddin' Wassup Witchu?

Me: The Sky Is Up But I Ain't With It

Vusi: Someone's Moody

Me: Are You Gonna Drive Me To The Mall Or
What?

Vusi: Gimme a Few

Me: Cool

He Went To Take The Car Keys Then We Got In
The Car Then He Drove To The Mall

Vusi: Esihle Really Wassup?

Me: Nothing

Vusi: You Still Gonna Tell Me Ayt?

Me: I SAID IT'S NOTHING VUSI,WHAT DO YOU
WANT ME TO SAY?

Vusi: See What I Mean

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Vusi: Baby What's Wrong? Esihle I'm Not Just Your Brother,I'm Your Friend Too.You Know You Can Tell Me Everything

Me: I'm Fine

Vusi: No You Not

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Vusi: Baby?

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout It

Vusi: Did Lutho Hurt You Or Something?

Me: I Said I Don't Wanna Talk Bout It!

Vusi: Okay Fine Then But Always Know I'll Always Be There For You

Me: Thanks But I'll Be Fine

He Looked At Me With a Sad Face But Shifted

His Attention Back To The Road,I Went To Buy
The Pregnancy Test Then Vusi Drove Us Back
Home.I Took It And It Showed Two Lines So
Yeah I Was Officially Going To Be a Single Mom.

I Slept Almost All Afternoon,Vusi Knocked On
My Room

Me: What??

Vusi: Ain't You Hungry? I Made Something To
Eat

Me: I'd Never Say No To Food

Vusi: Come Out Then And Ohh Uncle Avela
Invited Us To His House.He's Having A Huge
Braai

Me: Are We Slewing Over?

Vusi: We Might Come Home Late Or Maybe
Sleep Over

me: Okay Gimme a Few

I Took An Outfit In Case We Sleep Over Then My Toiletries.I Went To Eat What Vusi Made Then We Drove To Uncle Avela's House With The Twins.When We Got There,It Was Already Packed Outside.

We Went In And Greeted Errone,People Were Already Getting Wasted.I Went To The Ladies,Uncle Avela And Anela's Mom (Unathi) Broke Up Long Time Ago But They Were Still Good Friends And Anela Lived With Uncle.She Was 10 Years Old,The Twins Went To Play With Her While I Looked For A Room And Went Back To Sleep.I Woke Up To Someone Opening The Door

Guy: Ohh Sorry I Was Lookin' For The Bathroom

Me: O-kay

He Was Cute [OBJ:])

Guy: Can You Please Show Me? It's My First Time Here So.....

Me: Can't You See That I'm Sleepin' Here?

Guy: Ohh Sorry

Me: Third Door On Your Right

Guy: Ohh Thank You

I Went Back To Sleep Till Uncle Avela Dragged Me Outta The Room And Said The Meat Was Waiting To Be Eaten By Me.I Went Outside And Joined Everyone,We Ate The Meat While Some People Were Drinking.I Decided To Take a Walk 'round Since I Was Bored.I've Been There Three Or Four Times So I Knew Few Corners And All That Ish.I Left My Phone In The House Coz There Were Wanna Be Thugs 'round And I Was In No Mood To Kick Some Asses.While

Walking, Three Guys Sitting On Stones Whistled
But I Paid No Attention To Them

Guy1: Wait Up For Us

I Continued Walking

Guy2: Maybe She Didn't Hear You, Hey
Sweetheart Wait Up For Us!

I Still Continued With My Walk, I Felt A Strong
Grip On My Arm, I Turned Only To Find Those
Three Guys Behind Me

Guy3: Are You Deaf Or Something?

Me: If I Look Deaf Then I Am

Guy2: So You Can Hear? Why Didn't You Wait

Up For Us?

Me: Did I Have To?

Guy1: I See You Think You Miss All And That

Me: Aren't I?

Guy3: Can We See Your Phone And Wallet

Me: Haha You Funny You Know

Guy2: So You Want Us To Take It By Ourselves?

Me: I Really Don't Have Time To Waste And
Dude Please Let Go Off My Arm

They Put Me In The Middle

Me: Okay So How Long Are You Gonna Make
Me Stand Here?

They Searched My Jacket,I Just Let Them

Voice: Nikka She's With Me,The Fuck You Doing?

Guy2: Hardie Boy We Didn't Know

They Moved Away,I Turned And Saw The Guy
Who Knocked On My Door Coming Towards Me

Him: Let's Go Bbe

Me: Bbe?

Him: Just Play Along

Me: Thanks For Being Quick BABE Who Knows
What They Would've Done To Me If You Didn't

He Just Laughed And Took Me By My Hand,We
Just Walked Few Feet Away From Thosw Guys

Him: I'm Thobela

Me: Esihle

Thobela: Whatchu Doing Walking Alone On These Dangerous Streets?

Me: Dangerous?

Thobela: This Ain't Those Suburbs Y'all Live In

Me: Who Said I Live In Suburbs?

Thobela: I Can See a Suburbian,I've Been Here For A While So I Can Tell What Kinda Life Someone Is Used To Or Living

Me: Wow

Thobela: So Where You Going Esihle?

Me: Just Walking To Whereever My Feet Can Take Me

Thobela: Ohh?

Me: Yeap

Thobela: Destressing?

Me: Something Like That

Thobela: I See So How Old Is Esihle And What Is

She Currently Doing?

Me: Why Do You Want To Know Bout Me?

Thobela: You're An Interesting Person

Me: Ohh? Thanks.Uhhm I'm 16 And Currently Doing Grade 11.Now Tell Me Bout Thobela

Thobela: Uhhm I'm 19 And Currently Walking These Streets Everyday To Hustle While I'm Still Taking a Gap Year

Me: What Kinda Hustling?

Thobela: Haha Don't Worry It's Legal

Me: I Think I Should Get Back Before Everyone Gets Worried Bout Me

We Turned And Walked Back To Uncle Avela's House Then Thobela Turned When We Got To The Gate.I Saw A Familiar Face Coming Towards Me,It Was Litha With a Girl.They Stopped And Kissed Then The Girl Got Inside a

Yard Few Meters Away From Uncle Av's.

Me: Litha!

He Turned,He Was So Shocked To See Me

Litha: Whatchu Doing Here?

Me: That Doesn't Matter,So Is That Your Girlfriend?

Litha: I Don't See How That Is Any Of Your Business

Me: It Became My Business The Minute You Started Dating With My Friend And Made Her Leave My Brother For You

Litha: I Didn't Ask To Date With Her,She Offered Herself So I Don't Know Why You Getting All Worked Up

Me: She's So Gonna Leave Your Flat Black Ass

When I Tell Her Everything

Litha: Do I Look Like I Care? I Got What I
Wanted So Go Ahead

THE FUCK?? [OBJ]o.O [OBJ]

[05/19, 12:35] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT36 ♡

THE FUCK?? [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o

Me: Let's Pretend You Didn't Just Say That

Litha: I've Always Wanted You Not Her

Me: What?? [OBJ]:o

Litha: I've Always Wanted You

Me: So Why Did You Agree To Date With Her Or Sleep With Her If You've Always Wanted Me?

Litha: I'm a Guy,I Wouldn't Just Say No To a Free Pussy

Voice: Where's The Free Pussy?

I Turned And Saw Vusi Standing Beside Me

Litha: I Should Get Going?

Vusi: Where's The Free Pussy? I'm In Need Of One

Litha: I'll See You 'Round Esihle

Vusi: Did I Say Something Wrong?

Litha Walked Away,I Just Shrugged My Shoulders

Vusi: Is The Pussy He's Talkin' Bout Inam's?

I Looked At Him

Vusi: That Idiot Is Playing Inam?

Me: Yeah Just Like You Did

Vusi: SO YOU TELLING ME THAT THAT NIKKA
IS SAYING INAM'S PUSSY IS FREE??

Me: Calm Down

Vusi: Hold Here

He Handed Me His Phone

Me: Where You Going?

Vusi: Just To Sort Some'ing Out

He Ran To Litha,I Followed Him.He Got To Him
And Pulled Him Roughly So He Could Face Him

Litha: Dude You Have A Problem?

Vusi Snorted And Threw a Punch,Litha Got Up
And His Lower Lip Was Bleeding

Litha: THE FUCK IS WRONG WITCHU NIKKA??

Vusi: Listen Here BOY

He Articulated The Boy Part To Show How
Serious He Was,I Wasn't Really In The Mood To
See Vusi In Action.

Vusi: If You Don't Want a Girl,Tell Her! Stop

Sayin' Bad Stuff Bout Her And Especially If That Girl Is Close To Me

Litha: I Can't Believe You Fightin' For A Bitch Who Left You The Minute She Got The Taste Of My Dick

Vusi Threw Another Punch Which Made Litha Kiss The Ground

Vusi: C'MON FIGHT BACK! YOU MA'FUCKEN MALE HOES OR GOSSIPERS WHATEVER THE HELL YOU ARE CAN'T EVEN THROW A PUNCH.ALL Y'ALL KNOW IS TO SPREAD BAD STUFF BOUT GIRLS.YOU TALKED BOUT A WRONG PERSON TO THE WRONG PERSON AT THE WRONG TIME! IMMA WHIP YOUR ASS BOY TILL YOU DON'T KNOW YOUR NAME, YOU DON'T MESS WITH ME OR ANYONE CLOSE TO ME!

Me: Now Can We Go?

Vusi: I Want This Thing To Fight Back

Me: He Won't, Can't You See That?

Vusi: Dare Say Another Bad Thing Bout Inam, I'll Do Something Worse Than This Pampering I Was Giving You

Vusi Took His Phone From Me Then We Walked Back To Uncle Av's House. I Just Went To The Room I Slept In And Found The Twins Fast Asleep So I Just Joined Them. The Following Day, I Woke Up To Someone Closing The Door, It Was Vusi

Me: What Time Is It?

Vusi: Past 8

Me: Why Did You Wake Up This Early?

Vusi: I Never Slept, It Was Going Down The

Whole Night

Me: Yho

Vusi: Dash I Wanna Sleep

He Couldn't Even Stand Still

Me: You Really Drunk

Vusi: Can I Tell You Some'ing?

Me: Go Ahead

Vusi: I Meant What I Said To Inam

Me: And That Is?

Vusi: That She's Mom's Future Daughter In Law. Bbe I Love That Girl

Me: And She Loves You Too But You Kept On Hurting Her Over And Over Again

Vusi: I Can't Date With One Girl

Me: Then Forget Makin' Inam Mom's Daughter

In Law

Vusi: I Wish She'd Understand

Me: Understand What?

Vusi: That I'm Still Tasting Other Dishes And Samples,She's Already My Main Meal That I'm Keeping Aside For The Future

Me: That's Bullshit! You Want Inam To Hold You Down While You FUCK With Other Hoes

Vusi: She Knows I Love Her

Me: Yeah Ayt,Just Sleep Vusi

I Opened Some Space For Him To Sleep,I Got Up And Went To Bath.I Made Breakfast,Thobela Got In

Thobela: Morning You

Me: Hey You,Whatchu Doing Here This Early?

Just Then Uncle Av Came Out Of His Room

Uncle Av: Eita Boy

Thobela: Ola Bra,I Came For That Thing

Uncle Av: Lemme Go And Fetch It From My Room,Esihle Please Give Him Something To Eat

Me: Kay

Uncle Av Left,Thobela Sat Down

Thobela: So You Can Cook?

Me: I'm Trying

Thobela: It Smells Good In Here,I'm Sure You're a Good Cook

I Dished Up For Me,Him And Uncle Av.I Gave

Thobela His Plate And Sat Next To Him

Me: So You And Uncle Av Know Each Other?

Thobela: Something Like That

Me: You Friends?

Thobela: He's Old To Be Friends With Me

Me: Then How Do You Know Each Other?

Thobela: I Was His DeeJay Last Night With My
Cousin,Who Was The One Left Doing Everything
When I Left

Me: You're A Dj?

Thobela: Yeah Something Like That

Me: So That Is The Hustling You Were Tellin' Me
Bout?

Thobela: Kinda

Uncle Av: Here's Your Thank You Boy,You And
That Other Boy You Were Here With Did A Great

Job

Thobela: We Always Aim To Please And I'm Really Happy To Hear That

Uncle Av Gave Him His Money Then We All Sat Down And Ate.Thobela Kept Smiling At Me And I'd Just Smile Back,He Seemed Like a Loving Soul.I Offered To Walk Him Out

Me: You Must Be Making a Lotta Cash From This Deejaying Thingy

Thobela: I Try Hey

Me: So What Do You Do With The Money?

Thobela: I Save It For My Next Year Studies But I Give Some To Mom To Help With The House Needs

Me: Wow

Thobela: What?

Me: Most Guys Would Just Spend The Money
One Girls, Parties And Expensive Things

Thobela: I'm Not Just Any Guy, I'm Me

Me: And I Agree With You On That One

Thobela: I Think You Should Go Back Home, I
Don't Want Bra Av Thinking I Stole His Niece

Me: Haha Okay Then Bye

Thobela: You Never Told Me Where You Stay Or
Live

Me: Let's Leave That On The Hands Of Fate

Thobela: Haha Okay

I Turned Back Home, I Found The Twins Already
Up And Eating. Uncle Av, Some Of His Friends
And I Tried To Clean 'Round. Vusi Was Still
Asleep. He Finally Woke Up And Bathed, He Ate
Then We All Got Ready To Go Back Home.

We Said Our Goodbyes To Everyone, Uncle Av

Gave Us Some Few Hundreds Then We Left. On The Way We Saw A Group Of Guys Running In Front Of The Car, When We Got To The Robots They Threw Two Blocks And Broke The Back Window, Luckily The Twins Didn't Get Hurt

Vusi: THE FUCK??

Me: VUSI LOOK THERE!! LITHA IS WITH THEM

Vusi: That Boy's Gonna Get What He Wants!

Me: Just Let Him Be

Vusi: ESIHLE YOU KNOW HOW FURIOUS MOM'S GONNA GET WHEN SHE SEES THIS!

Me: But You Can't Fight All Of Them! Just Drive Away!

Vusi: Bu-

Me And The Twins: DRIVE AWAY!!!!

Vusi: Jeez Okay Fine

He Drove Away While Litha And His Friends Whistled And Moved 'round The Car.We Got Home And Vusi Tried To Sweep The Glasses From The Car.While Helping Him,Inam Got In And Came To Us.She Released The Hottest Slap Across Vusi's Face

Vusi: The FUCK?

Inam: VUSI YOU NEVER TREATED ME RIGHT, YOU TREATED ME LIKE TRASH AND NOW THAT I FOUND SOMEONE I LOVE, YOU GO OUT THERE TO DESTROY THAT!

Vusi: Excuse Me?

Inam: LITHA TOLD ME THAT YOU WENT TO WHERE HE STAYS AND BEAT HIM UP

Vusi: Did He Tell You Why I Beat Him Up?

Inam: ISN'T IT OBVIOUS? VUSI YOU JUST JEALOUS THAT I FOUND SOMEONE WHO LOVES ME UNLIKE YOU

Vusi: That Asshole You Call Your Boyfriend Doesn't Love You If You Must Know,He Said Your Pussy Is Free.Damn You Inam! He Said You Threw Yourself To Him And He Just Wanted To FUCK You And That's Just That

Inam: You Lying

Vusi: Am I? He Broke Up Witchu Didn't He? And He Said He Did Coz I Beat Him Up? He Already Wanted To The Minute He Got What He Wanted Way Before I Even Rearranged His Face

Inam: That's Not True

Vusi: Tell Her Esihle

Me: I'm Sorry But It's True

Vusi: And Tell Him That I'm Still Gonna Come After Him For Doing This To Mom's Car

Inam: You Both Lying,You Esihle,You Just Want Me To Get Back With Vusi

Me: Believe Whatchu Wanna Believe But We're Telling You The Truth.....Vusi I'm Going To The

Shop To Buy Myself Some Airtime While You
Two Talk Bout Your Issues

I Left Them There And Walked To The Shops,A
Car Stopped Beside Me,Three Guys Got Out And
Pushed Me Into The Car.They Also Got In And It
Sped Away,I Was Crying And Screaming On The
Way,I Stopped When They Parked In Front Of
Lutho's House.They Got In With Me And Lutho
Was In The Lounge

Lutho: So You Really Brought My Package

He Came To Stand In Front Of Me

Lutho: Thanks Guys,You Can Go Now

The Guys Left

Me: Really Lutho? Kidnapping?

Lutho: You Switched Off Your Phone While You Were Busy Making Friends With Low Life Boys

Me: WERE YOU HAVING ME FOLLOWED??

Lutho: I Just Wanted To Make Sure That You And My Baby Were Okay

Me: YOU CRAZY..WHAT DO YOU WANT FROM ME LUTHO?

Lutho: Time To Explain

Me: Explain What? That You Married And Have A Son? There's Nothing To Explain There

Lutho: Angela Is My Ex Wife

Me: Who You Working Things Out With

Lutho: Mxm.....And Her Son Ain't My Son

Me: Haha Yeah Ayt,Lutho You'd Have To Do More Than That To Get Me Back.Now Can I Go Back Home?

He Sat Down And Looked At Me

Lutho: Dad Has Always Been Obsessed Or Loved His Empire More Than Anything.He Married Angela For Me When I Was 18 So That He Could Teach Me Everything Bout His Business To Make Sure That It'll Be Successful Even If He Ain't There So He Wanted Me To Start My Own Family At A Young Age

Me: Am I Supposed To Feel Sorry For You?

Lutho: I Didn't Touch Nor Kiss Angela,I Went Away To My Aunt's House To Spend Time With My Cousins,LeavingAngela Behind Then When I Came Back She Was Pregnant

Me: Mxm Lutho Can I Go Home?

Lutho: My Father Impregnated Her

Me: WHOA WHAT??

Lutho: He Said It Was Something Acceptable In Our Culture, More Like a Tradition. He Said If I Couldn't Make My Wife Pregnant Then He Had The Right To Do It By Himself And I Had To Raise The Child Like My Own Coz According To Our Culture, The Baby Was Mine, Dad Just Donated His Sperm While I Had Millions Of My Own. When I Heard That, I Divorced Angela. Dad Took Her Somewhere Else Where He Took Care Of Her Without Mom's Knowledge, I Couldn't Care Less Coz I Never Loved Her. From That Day Onwards Dad Hated My Guts And Everything I Did. So Sugar That Baby Ain't Mine And That Wife Ain't Mine

FUCK ME SIDE WAYS 

[05/19, 12:42] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT37 ♡

I Was Just Speechless,Lutho's Father Was Pure Evil.What Kinda Man Does That To His Own Son And Hide Behind Tradition And Culture?

So It Was Clear That His Hate For Him Wasn't Just Bout The Lifestyle Lutho Was Living,His Hatred Came A Long Way

Lutho: Want Something To Eat?

Me: Uhmhhh I'm So Sorry To Hear That I Didn-

Lutho: It's Fine,That's In The Past Now

Tears Just Escaped My Eyes,I Don't Know Why But I Just Felt Like Crying

Me: I Should've Given You Time To Explain,I Was Just Too Shocked And Hurt.I Thought-

Lutho: Shhh

He Smashed His Lips On Mine,I Kissed Him Back While Still Crying.Lutho Broke The Kiss And Looked At Me,He Chuckled.

Lutho: Why You Crying?

Me: I Dunno

Lutho: You Such A Cry Baby

Me: No I'm Not

Lutho: Yes You Are

Me: No I-

He Kissed Me Again Then We Looked At Each Other,I Held His Hand

Me: I'm Really Sorry To Hear Whatcho Dad Did To You

Lutho: By Sleepin' With Angela,He Did Me a Huge Favor.He Gave Me A Valid Reason To Divorce Her

Me: But That Led To This Bad Blood Between You Two

Lutho: He Expected Too Much From Me And I'll Never Be His Slave Like Menzi Is,Dancing To Whatever Tune He's Singing.I'm My Own Damn Ass Man,I Can Take Care Of Myself.I Don't Need His Lousy Inheritance Or Any Shit He Has To Give

I Looked At Him And Laughed,He Looked So Hot And Cute Saying What He Was Saying

Lutho: What? [OBJ]:)

Me: You Just Looked Hot When You Said That

Lutho: And You Felt Like Takin' A Bite Ayt?!

Me:..... [OBJ]:)

Lutho: Right

He Got Closer And Wrapped His Right Hand
'round My Waist And Pecked My Lips

Lutho: I Missed Your Cray Ass

Me: My Ass Ain't Crazy

Lutho: It's Just Big Ayt?!

I Laughed And Hit Him Playfully,He Picked Me
Up And Walked To The Kitchen With Me.He Put
Me On The Kitchen Counter Then Went To Open
The Fridge

Me: If You Gonna Cook Please Call My Parents
And Tell Them To Prepare For Two Funerals

Lutho: Huh?

Me: You Gonna Kill Me And My Baby Witcho
Cooking

Lutho: I Ain't A Bad Cook Sweetheart

Me: Jeah Ayt

He Took An Apron And Put It On,I Got Down
From The Counter And Also Wore An Apron.I
Helped Him With The Cooking,My Phone Rang

Call Convo

Me: Vusi

Vusi: The Shops Ain't Even 10 Minutes Away

Me: Haha Ohh Bout That

Vusi: Where You At?

Me: Uhhm At Lutho's Place

Vusi: You Should've Just Told Me That You Visiting Him

Me: I Was Really Going To The Shop But Lutho's Goons Kidnapped Me

Vusi: Am I Supposed To Believe That?

Me: Haha For Real Dude

Vusi: Tell Me If You Gonna Come Back And Hala For Me There

I Turned And Looked At Lutho

Me: Vusi Says Hi

Lutho: Hala Back!

....

Me: Hope You Heard Him....So What Happened Between You And Inam?

Vusi: You'll Hear Errthing When You Back

Me: But I-

Vusi: Bye

He Hung Up On Me

Lutho: Is Inam His Girlfriend?

Me: And My Friend Too Or Lemme Say Ex Friend

Lutho: Girl Drama,I Don't Even Wanna Know.

We Finished What We Were Cookin' Then Went To The Lounge And Ate While Watching T.V.My Plate Was Ass Full (Hey Was Eating For Two)

I Sat On The Couch While Lutho Sat In Between

My Legs On The Floor

Me: Can I Ask You Some'ing Bbe?

Lutho: Shoot

Me: Where's Your Gun?

Lutho: The Gangster's Daughter

Me: Mxm Whatever.....Uhhm Bbe

Lutho: Sugar

Me: Don't You Sometimes Wish Things Were Different Between You And Your Fathe-

Lutho: I Used To But I Grew Up Now And I Don't Need Him

Me: So You Just Gonna Let Menzi Take Errthing That Belongs To You?

Lutho: I Got Everything That Belongs To Me By My Side With Everything I Need.I Got My Own Apartment,A Decent Job And Soon I'll Be Done With My Studies.I Got You And Our Baby,I Don't

Need My Father Or Anything That Comes From Him

Me: Every Child Needs Its Father Bbe

Lutho: I Ain't No Child Anymore And That's Why I Wanna Be There For My Baby

I Just Looked At Him And Went All Emotional

Lutho: Someone's Gonna Cry Again

Me: No I'm Not

Lutho: You Cute When You Crying

Me: Liar Who's Cute When They Cryin'?

Lutho: My Sugar Boom Boom

I Bent Down And Kissed Him. On That Position We Were Both Able To Get Each Other's Lower Lips p

We Broke The Kiss Then I Took The Plates To The Kitchen,I Rinsed Them And Went Back To Lutho In The Lounge.I Found Him With Anga And Siya

Siya: The Woman Of The House

Me: Hey Guys

Anga: Hey Mrs

I Sat Next To Lutho

Siya: So Have You Told Her Yet?

Lutho: Siya Bro!

Me: Told Me What?

Siya: Yho I Didn't Know Boy

Me: I'm All Ears

Siya: Lutho Has To Introd-

Lutho: I Can Talk For Myself Siya!

Siya: Just Thought I'd Get Rid Of The Spider Webs For You

Anga: Dude Just Shut Up!

Siya: Lemme Go And Get Myself A Beer While You Get Your Heads Bitten Off

Me: Lutho?

Siya: I'm Out

Siya Walked Out,Lutho Held My Hands

Anga: You Go First Dude

Me: What's Going On Here Guys?

Lutho: You Know I Love You Ayt?

Me: Lutho Just Talk

Lutho: Uhhhm Okay The Thing Is,Anga,Siya And I Did Some Thinking And We- Eish

Me: Lutho Just Talk!

Anga: We Want You To Join Us

Me: You Speakin' In Tongues Dude

Lutho: Uhhm We Want You To Join Our Gang
Sugar

Me: Haha You Kiddin' Ayt?

Anga: We're Dead Serious

Me: Why Do You Want Me To Join Your Gang?

Lutho: I Guess We Need You

Me: You Guess You Need Me?

Lutho: Okay We Need You Sugar

Me: Guys You've Been Thugs For Years Now
And You Know The Game Inside Out,How Can
You Need Someone Who Just Joined?

Anga And Lutho Looked At Each Other

Anga: The Thing Is, Menzi Is Building a Huge And Strong Army Against Us. He Got Most Of Our Guys Against Us, Telling Them That We Didn't Kill Your Dad Coz Lutho's In a Relationship With You And That We Betrayed Aviwe So We Should Not Be Trusted

Me: Wow

Lutho: But If You Don't Wanna Join Us Bbe I Underst-

Anga: She Must Join

Me: Seems Like You Ain't Asking Me Anga

Anga: You Join, You'll Be Safe With Us But If You Don't, It'll Be Easy For Menzi To Take You Out And We Don't Want That Coz That Would Be Like Destroying My Boy

Me: I Can Take Care Of Myself Thank You

Anga: Okay I Know Your Father Runs This City And Shit But Don't Forget That Aviwe Did Too

Me: And Dad Took Him Out

Anga: And Another Aviwe Grew Up, Menzi Is Mad. He's A Psycho And You Know That

Me: I Need Some Time To Think Bout This

Siya: But Don't Think For Too Long, We Don't Have Enough Time (Getting In The Lounge) And I See You Didn't Chew Their Heads Off

Anga: We Have Some Few People We Would Like You To Meet Before You Make Your Decision

Me: What Kinda People?

Anga: You'll See When You Meet Em, Can We Go Now? If That's Okay Witchu

Me: You Want Me To Meet Em Now?

Lutho: The Sooner The Better

Me: O-W-K-Y

Lutho Gave Me His Jacket Then We Went To The Cars, I Rode With Lutho While Siya And

Anga Drove Their Own Cars.

They Parked In Front Of This House,It Wasn't Big Nor Small Twas Just A House.

Lutho Took Me By My Hand Then We Went In While Siya And Anga Walked Behind Us.We Got In Then Some Girl Wearing Black Clothes Threw A Knife At Me But I Ducked And It Went Straight To The Door Behind And Almost Tore It Into Pieces

Me: THE FUCK??

Girl: She Ain't Bad

Lutho: She's From a Royal Family

The Girl Looked At Me And Rolled Her Eyes,Anga And Siya Also Got In

Siya: Who's Heart Almost Got Torn Apart?

Girl: The "Royal Princess's"

Lutho Chuckled And Fist Bumped With Two
Guys In The Room

Guy1: The Royal Princess Is Cute

Guys: And She's Hot, We Might Use Her Charm
To Distract Our Targets

Lutho: Hey Hey You Won't Use My Wife As a
Sex Object

Girl: But You Used Me

Lutho: You're Bitch I'm Sure You Needed The
Sexual Satisfaction

O-W-K-Y It Was Obvious There Was Some Beef
Between The Girl And Lutho

Lutho: Bbe This Is Onele (Guy1) And That One Is Bonele (Guy2)

Me: I See We Got Twins Here,Nice To Meet You Twins

Girl: Even A Fool Can See That

Lutho: And This Ugly Obnoxious Bitch Is Zona

Me: Uhhm Hi Zona

Zona: You Calling Me a Bitch Now Coz You Got Tired Of This Ass

She Tapped It,It Was Really Big o.O

Me: Is She Your Ex?

Siya: One Bitter Ex

Lutho: Nhaa We Were Just Fuckin

Zona: Really?

Siya: We Not Really Interested In Your Past You

Know?

Zona: Couldn't You Just Kee-

Siya: Don't Finish Askin That Or You Might Find That Ass Of Yours In Ashes

Anga: We Didn't Come Here For Your Shit,Sit Down.

We All Sat Down

Onele: So You Talked With Her?

Anga: We Tried

Bonele: And?

Me: Look Guys I'd Really Love To Join You But It'll Be Like Betraying My Fa-

Zona: Then Don't

Siya: Bitch Just Shut The Fuck Up!!

Zona: Call Me A Bitch One More Time I Swear I'll

Tear Your Heart Into Fragments

Siya: You Know What Zona? Get Your Ass Up
And Let's Go To The Ring And See Who Will Win?

Onele: Not Another Rematch

Siya: Zona Is Full Of Shit

Zona: And You Full Of Crap

Lutho: SHUT THE FUCK UP!

They Both Went Dead

Lutho: Jeez Can't You Both Just Act Matured
For Once?

Anga: These Two Need You To Whip Their
Asses a Lil

Siya: Zona Started All This Shit

Zona: I Didn't Start No-

Lutho: Okay That's Enough Now!

The Room Went Dead Again

Lutho: We Have Enough Problems Already To Be Sitting Here, Listening And Looking Atchu Two On Each Other's Necks!

Siya: Hardie Boy

Bonele: We Just Met You Esihle But We've Heard a Lot Bout You And We Really Need Your Help

My Phone Rang And It Was a Number

Me: Excuse Me

I Got Up And Answered The Call

Call Convo

Me: Hello

Caller: The Future Mrs Zizwe

Me: What Do You Want Menzi?

Menzi: That's Not The Way To Talk To Your Future Brother In Law

Me: Menzi What Do You Want?

Menzi: Okay Fine.....I Guess You Know That Luu's Wife Is In Town

Me: So?

Menzi: And She's Gonna Make Your Life A Living Hell

Me: I Ain't Scared Of Her

Menzi: You Better Be

Me: Is That Why You Called Me?

Menzi: I Have a Business Deal For You

Me: What Makes You Think I'd Work Witchu?

Menzi: Angela Is Capable Of Doing Anything Especially For Getting Lutho Back

Me: What Do You Want From Me Menzi?

Menzi: Help Me Get Rid Of Her

Me: Whatchu Getting From Her Leave?

Menzi: That Doesn't Concern You

Me: Then Forget Whatever Deal You Wanted To Make With Me

Menzi: Okay The Thing Is Uncle Will Want To Take The Inheritance From Me And Give It To Angela's Son

Me: Ohh So This Is All Bout That Stupid Inheritance?

Menzi: That Boy Ain't His,It's Mine

Me: WHAT?? Whoa What??

Menzi: That Boy Is My Son And I Can't Lose Everything To My Son,Angela Doesn't Want To

Tell Him The Truth Coz She Wants Everything For Herself.Now I Need You To Help Me With Getting Rid Of Her,That Way We Both Benefit.You Keep Your Luu While I Keep My Inheritance,What Do You Say?

Lutho: You Okay Bbe??

Me: Yeah I'm Fine.That Was just mom checking on me.

[05/19, 12:43] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT38 ♡

He Got Closer To Me And Held Both Of My Hands,I Had To Look Up Coz He Was Taller

Than Me.He Pecked My Lips

Lutho: You Know I Love You Ayt?

I Smiled And Nodded,My Phone Beeped.It Was
A Message From Vusi

"The Rents Are On Their Way Back Home,If Why
Don't Ask Me"

Me: Uhhm You Should Drive Me Home

Lutho: Parents Back?

Me: Yeap

Lutho: Lemme Talk To The Guys First

He Walked To The Guys,Zona Came To Me

Zona: You So Young For The Whoring You
Doing

Me: Excuse Me?

Zona: Did You Fall Pregnant Coz You Wanted
To Keep Lutho?

Me: The Fuck??

Zone: Lemme Tell You Some'ing
Sweetheart, The Baby Won't Make Him Stay

Me: Ohh?

Zona: Lutho Ain't The Type That Can Be Tied
Down, If I Were I'd Save Myself The Heartache
And Leave His Ass While I Can

Me: Unfortunately You Ain't Me And Never Will
Be

I Walked Away And Lutho Was Already Coming
My Way

Me: Let's Go

Lutho: You Okay?

Me: I'm Perfect

Bonele: It Was Nice Finally Meeting You Esihle

Me: Same Here

We Walked To Lutho's Car And He Drove Away, I
Just Looked Outside The Window

Lutho: It's Good To Share You Know?!

Me: Huh?

Lutho: Wassup Bbe?

Me: No'ing

Lutho: We Both Know That's Not True

Me:.....

I Just Looked At Him And Didn't Say Anything

Lutho: If You Don't Wanna Join Us Baby It's Okay,I Ain't Pushing You To Do Anything You Don't Wanna Do

Me: Anga Makes This Seem Like I Don't Have a Say Nor A Choice In This

Lutho: He's Just Scared And Trepidated By Menzi

Me:.....

Lutho: They Just Want To Work Witcho Dad

Me: Then Why Don't You Ask My Dad?

Lutho: I Guess They Are Just Scared Of Him So They Wanted To Get To Him Using You-

Me: WHA-

Lutho: I Wasn't Supporting Them But I Was Out Numbered So I Had To Bow Down To What They Were Saying

Me: Ain't You The Boss?

Lutho: I Wish I Was.Nhaa No One Is The Boss There But They Give The Ropes To Me When Things Start To Go Left And I Have To Clean Up Their Mess

Me: Why Don't You Talk To Dad And Tell Him Errthing?

Lutho: I Don't Want Your Dad To Think I'm Taking Advantage Of His Kindness,.He Was Mad That I Made You Pregnant But He Forgave Me,If I Ask A Lot,He Might Think Even This Relationship Is Not Real And That I Used You And Our Baby To Get What The Gang Wants.

Me: Did You?

Lutho: Did I What?

Me: Did You Use Me To Get What The Gang Wants?

Lutho: You Kiddin' Me Ayt?

Me:.....

Lutho: I Can't Believe You Think I'd Do That
Sugar

Me: Everything Is Just a Mess Lutho

Lutho: When We Met I Knew Nothing Bout
You, Like I Said, I Found Out Bout Your Father
Only When I Was Away. I Wouldn't Mind Getting
Help From Him But I Don't Wanna Get It
Through You, I Love You And I'd Never Risk Our
Relationship For Anything

OBJ: '(

Lutho: Baby C'mon You Crying?

Me: I Can't Help It OBJ: '(

Lutho: Princess Better Come Out Soon If She's
Gonna Make Her Mommy Cry

Me: Who Said It's Gonna Be a Girl?

Lutho: I Can Feel It, We Gonna Have a Princess

Me: And If It's Not?

Lutho: It Will Be a Girl

Me: Let's Bet On It

Lutho: If It's a Girl We Gonna Make Another One

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: Then If It's a Boy Then You Win,I'll Give You Some Time Before We Make Another One

Me: You Crazy

I Punched Him Playfully While We Both Laughed

Lutho: I Missed That Smile On Your Face

Me:..... [OBJ]:)

Lutho: Olona Is Coming Tomorrow,She Says She Misses You

Me: Ncoah Really?

Lutho: And It Seems Like She Wants You To

Sleep Over At My House

Me: Yho

Lutho: Is It Okay If She Sleeps Over Atcho Place?
I Can Pick Her Up Before You Go To School.I
Know She Won't Let This Go So It's Better This
Way

Me: I'll Talk To Mom

He Parked Few Yards Away From My House,We
Had A Brief Kiss Then I Walked Home.I Found
Dad's Car In The Garage So They Were Already
Back

Me: Hello Family!

No One Answered.I Walked To The Rents' Room
And They Were Lying On Their Bed With Mom's
Head On Dad's Chest

Me: Hello Rents Bye Rents

I Turned To Walk Out

Dad: Come Back Here

I Turned Back

Dad: Where You From?

Me: Uhhm I'm I'm Fro-

Mom: Lutho's Place?

Me: Uhhm Yeah

Mom: You Should Invite Him Over For Dinner
Some Time

Me: Really?

Dad: Yeah

Wow! Maybe Mom Gave Dad The Most Amazing Time Of His Life While They Were Away

Me: Mom Where Is My Dad? Did The Vacation Eat Him Up Or What?

Dad: Don't Provoke Me Young Lady

I Ran To Him And Hugged Him

Me: Thanks Dad

Dad: Okay Okay You Killing Me Here

I Kissed His Cheek And Mom's

Me: Love You

Mom: We Love You Too Now Leave We Tryna Sleep Here

Me: Ohh Really? Or You Tryna Give Us Another Sibling?

Dad: That Wouldn't Be a Bad Thing Ayt Pumpkin? We Still Fresh And Young

Mom: My Body Can't Keep Another Soul Inside Anymore Yho

Dad: If Your Mom Would Agree Them I Would Gladly Give You Another Sibling

Me: Dad You Gonna Be A Grandpa Soon So No Sibling Please

The Room Went Dead 'Uh-oh Maybe I Said Too Much'

Me: Uhhm Lemme Leave Hope You Sleep Well

I Walked To The Door

Dad: Princess?

Me: Yes Dad

Dad: Daddy Loves You Okay?!

Me: I Love You Too Daddy

I Walked To My Room And Threw Myself On My
Bed,Vusi Got In

Me: So What Happened After I Left?

Vusi: Inam Left

Me: She Just Left??

Vusi: Was She Supposed To Do Something Else?

Me: Didn't You Two Talk Things Through?

Vusi: I Moved On With My Life

Me: But You Still Love Her Like She Still Loves You

Vusi: That's Not What I'm Here For

He Threw The Ford Keys Next To Me

Me: And Then?

Vusi: Don't Tell Me You Haven't Figured It Out

Me: Mom Is Back But She Hasn't Taken The Keys

Vusi: Meaning?

Me: Meaning?

Vusi: You Dumb Sometimes

HELL NO!! IT CAN'T BE!

Me: HELL TO THE NO! MOM!!

Vusi Laughed,I Ran To The Rents' Room And They Were Already Sitting On The Bed

Mom: What?

Me: This Can't Be True?

Vusi: Don't Mind Her Mom

Me: Dad???

Dad: My Hands Are Tied Sweetheart

Me: Thanks Mom Be Ready To See Different Bitches Everyday In Your House

Vusi: Someone's Jealous

Me: No I'm Not

Vusi: Yes You Are

Me: So Does This Mean Vusi Will Be Driving Us To School?

Mom: Yeap

Me: Be Ready To Bury Three People

I Walked To The Lounge And Turned On The T.V.And OHh Nhaa I Wasn't Jealous Coz Mom Gave The Ford To Vusi,I Was Just Scared Of The Lives I Might Loose When He Does The Driving And The Pretending I'll Have To Do When He Brings His Thousand Girlfriends.

Dad Joined Me.I Laid My Head On Dad's Lap While We Both Watched The Soccer Match

Me: Dad?

Dad: Yes Princess

Me: I'm Really Sorry Bout Errthing,Not Ending Things With Lutho When You Asked Me To And Uhhm Being Reckless And Falling Pregnant

Dad Took My Hand And Kissed It

Dad: What's Done Is Done Bbe,Let's Just Focus On Making The Situation Better And Best For Errone

I Got Up And Kissed His Cheek

"My Dad Rocks In Every Possible Way,I'm Sure Mom Supports That 1000% Coz She Can't Keep Her Hands Off Him" [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:)

Me: Thanks Dad.Are You Sure That That Lonwabo Guy Didn't Ejaculate Your Sperm Inside Of Mom To Fertilize The Egg I Was In Instead Of His?

Dad: Haha I Bet He Did,That Was So Stupid Yet Useful Of Him Coz He Made Me A Daughter

We Both Laughed While Dad Tickled Me

Me: I'm Not 6 Years Old Anymore Dad!

Dad: You'll Always Be To Me

He Let Go Off Me And I Smiled And Looked At Him

Me: Thanks Again For Not Giving Up On Me Or Disowning Me Or Some'ing

Dad: You My Daughter, You Still Young. You'll Fuck Up Sometimes

Me: And You Wonder Why We Love Swearing

Dad: O-W-K-Y

We Both Laughed, I Laid My Head On His Lap Again

Me: Dad?

Dad: If You Want Me To Give My Second Car To You Like Your Mom Gave Vusi The Ford Then No

Me: Dad?

Dad: What Do You Want?

Me: Haha I Can't Believe You Thought I Was Gonna Say I Want A Car Too

Dad: You And Vusi Always Wanted The Same Things At The Same Time When You Were Young And Nothing Much Changed

Me: I Still Enjoy Seeing My Teachers Drooling Over You When You Drive Us To School Maybe I Might Even Not Get Punished If I Do Something Wrong Just Coz My Dad Is Hot

Dad: Be Glad Your Mom Didn't Hear That

Me: She Knew When She Married You That There Are Some Women Who Will Want A Taste Of Her Hot Gangster Husband

Dad: Haha Yeah Ayt So What Did You Want To Say?

Me: Uhhhm

I Sat Up Straight And Looked At Dad

Me: You Know That I Love You Right Dad And I'd Never Do Anything To Hurt You,At Least Not Intentionally?

Dad: Uhhm Yeah And Daddy Loves His Princess Too,Wassup?

I Got Up

Me: Uhhm Lutho Worked For Aviwe

Dad: I Know That

Me: YOU KNOW?

Dad: I Wouldn't Just Let Some 21 Year Old Independent Guy Date With My Daughter Without Doing Some Background Check

Me: So If You Know,Why Didn't You Kill Him?

Dad: Coz He Didn't Kill Me Too,I Know Errthing Princess

Me: Uhhm O-kay Uhhh The Thing Is,His Friends Want Me To J-

Olwethu: I See Some People Decided To Spend Some Time With Their Favorite Parents Today,Vusi Is Busy Helping Mom In The Kitchen And Now You're Watching Soccer With Dad.Wow

Owethu: This Day Is Weird

Me: Vusi Is Helping Mom Coz She Gave The Ford To Him

Olwethu: What??

Owethu: Hallelujah,Our Home Is So Officially Going To Be Home To Vusi's Thousand

Girlfriends

Olwethu: Dad?

Dad: I'm Still Waiting For My Lamborghini

Olwethu: Bu-

Dad: If You Want a Car,Buy Me Mine First.You Haven't Delivered Yet,I Gave You Your Room Now It's Time For You Two To Deliver

Owethu: I Didn't Move Out So Asithandle Will Do The Buying,He's The One Who Got The New Room

Me: I Thought You Were Gonna Buy The Car Together

Owethu: Mom And Dad Are The Ones Working Here

Dad: Then Don't Make Promises You Can't Fulfill

Me: Why Don't You Sell Their Shares And Then Bu-

Olwethu: Whoa Whoa Hollup

Dad: That's a Good Idea Esihle

Olwethu: Can't We Do Something Doable For You?

Dad: Then Wash All Three Of The Cars Besides The Ford

Owethu: Lemme Get A Bucket Of Water For You Twin Bro

Dad: Hey Hey You Made The Promise With Him So You'll Both Wash The Cars

Owethu: But Da-

Dad: No But,I Want Them Sparkling Clean

Olwethu: Yes Sir At Least You Won't Be Selling Our Future

Me: Your Future?

Olwethu: After My Grade 12 I Ain't Going To No Varsity I'll Just Chill And Watch You And Vusi Making Me Some Money

Me: Your Kids Are So Spoilt Musa Morena

Mom And Vusi Finished Cooking,We Had Dinner
And Went To Sleep.My Phone Rang

Call Convo

Me: Hi

Caller: Lemme Tell You Something Young
Lady,Lutho Is My Husband And I Won't Rest
Until He's Back To My Bed.If I Were You,I'd Save
My Little Heart Some Ache Coz Lutho Will
Leave Your Sorry Ass And He Will Forget That
You Even Exist

[05/19, 12:46] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT39 ♡

I Just Became Speechless,I Hung Up And Threw My Phone Under The Pillow.It Rang Again So I Just Switched It Off With Out Checking Who It Was,I Fell Asleep.

I Woke Up The Following Day And Switched On My Phone,I Had Voice Messages From Lutho.Just When I Was Listening To Them,He Called

Call Convo

Lutho: What Did I Do Wrong Now?

Me: Nhaa Nothing Bbe,My Phone Was Off Sorry

Lutho: I Thought Maybe You Were Mad At Me

Me: Did You Fuck Up?

Lutho: Nope

Me: Then You Got Nothing To Worry Bout,Is Olona Still Coming?

Lutho: Yeah How Bout We Pick You Up After School?

Me: Mom And Dad Said I Should Invite You Over For Dinner So Why Don't You Come With Her?

Lutho: Bbe Wake Up Please

Me: For Real,I Ain't Dreaming.I Was Also Shocked When They Said That

Lutho: Are You Really For Real??

Me: Yeap

Lutho: Wow

Me: So What Do You Say?

Lutho: I'd Never Turn Down An Offer From Them,I'll Come Bbe

Me: See You Then Bbe

Lutho: How Is My Munchkin In There Treating You?

Me: We're Good,I Gotta Shower See You

Lutho: You Okay?

Me: Yeah I'm Fine,I'll Be Late For School Bye

Lutho: O-kay.Love You

Me: Love You Too

I Hung Up And Did My Bed,I Was Just Not In The Mood And I Don't Know Why.I Went To Shower And Got Dressed.I Was Still Having The Morning Sickness So I Did The Puking Before Going To The Kitchen For Breakfast.I Found Mom Making Breakfast

Me: Morning Ma

Mom: Morning Bbe,How You Feeling Today?

Me: Like Not Going To School Or Talking To

Anyone

Mom: Pregnancy.I Was Also Like That When I Was Pregnant Witchu

Me: Then I'll Never Fall Pregnant Ever Again

Mom: You Just Saying That Coz You Still Young,Here Eat

She Gave Me My Eggless Plate And I Ate My Breakfast

Me: Lutho's Sister Wants To Spend The Night With Me Today

Mom: Olona?

Me: Yeap

Mom: She's So Loud And Forward Like You When You Were Young,She Can Come Babe

Me: Thanks Mom

Dad And The Others Got In,We Ate Breakfast Together.I Had To Ride With Vusi To School
G.R.E.A.T! [OBJ]- -

I Took My Bag And We Went To The Car,He Drove Us To School

Me: Don't You Miss Inam Sometimes?

Vusi Just Pretended Like He Didn't Hear Me,He Turned The Volume Button To Max.I Just Switched Off The Radio

Vusi: I Hope You Ain't Forgetting That This Is My Car Now

Me: Stop Ignoring The Topic

Vusi: What Do You Want Esihle?

Me: Don't You Miss The Times You Had

Together?

Vusi: That's In The Past Now

Me: Vusi!

Vusi: Can We Change The Topic Before I Throw You Outta The Window?

Me: Dad Would Kill You For Killing Me And Lutho Would Kill You Too For Killing His Child And His Bae

Vusi: Mxm

Me: Okay Let's Keep It Hunnid Bro, Will You And Inam Ever Get Back Together?

Vusi: I Dunno

Me: What Happened To Her Being Mom's 'Future Daughter In Law'?

Vusi: Not That Please

Me: You Were The One Busy Saying That

Vusi: Inam Will Want a Serious Relationship, I'm Still Enjoying The Playin' 'Round. She Needs

Someone Who'll Give Her What She Wants

Me: And She Wants You

Vusi: Then She Might Wait For Eternity

Me: Ouch!

Vusi: You Wanted Us To Keep It One Hunnid
That's What I'm Doing. What More Do You Want?

Me: You Really Serious With This Lance Thingy
You Got Going On?

Vusi: I Ain't No Lance

Me: These Thotties Gonna Leave You Sick And
Dickless

Vusi: Haha Trust Me It's Too Big To Sustain All
Of Em

Me: I Think We Should Really Drop The Topic

Vusi Laughed. He Parked Outside The School's
Premises Inam Came To Us

Inam: Hey Vusi,Hey Esihle

Vusi: Yeah,Bye

Inam: Can We-

A Girl Came To Vusi And They Kissed

Vusi: I'll See You Later Ladies

Me: Bye

Inam:.....

Vusi Left With The Girl,Inam Was So Hurt,I
Could See Right Through Her.

Me: Let's Go To Class

Inam: Uhhm Sure,We Need To Talk

Me: We'll Talk In Class Then

We Went To Our Class,I Put My Bag On My Desk Then Sat On It

Inam: I'm Sorry For Pushing You Away,Breaking Our Friendship Up And Ever-

Me: You Were Doing What You Thought Was Best For You

Inam: Which Turned Out To Be The Worst,Now Vusi Can't Even Look At Me

Me: He Ain't a Saint Himself

Inam: He Stood Up For Me

Me: Coz He Still Loves You

Inam: And I Still Love Him Too

Me: Then Fix Your Issues,This Drama Between The Two Of You Is Irritating.

Inam: We Can't

Me: Why?

Inam: Vusi Is Mad At Me,I Called Him Names
Coz I Thought What Litha And I Had Was Legit

Me: Lesson Learnt,Never Throw Your Exes On
The Dirt When You See Some'ing Better Coming
Your Way

Inam: And I Learnt It The Hard Way

Me: You Two Just Fix Things Even If You Just
Become Friends

Inam: You Mean Fuckin' Friends?

Me: I Forgot That My Brother Doesn't Become
Just Friends With Females

Inam: Exactly

The Bell Rang And We Walked To The Parade
Lines

Inam: I'm Really Sorry For Ignoring You

Me: It's Okay Bbe That's In The Past Now

Inam: So We Cool?

Me: More Than Ever

We Had A Hug

Inam: So How's The Baby?

Me: The Baby's Okay I Guess

Inam: You And Lutho?

Me: We're Cool

The Day Went By So Quickly And The Thought That We Only Had Two Weeks Before Our Exams, Tore Me Into Pieces, I Was So Not Ready. I Took My Bag And Walked To The Car And I Saw Thobela Coming Towards Me

Thobela: Esihle?

Me: Hey What Brings You Here?

Thobela: I'm Waiting For Some Nikka,We Have To Go Somewhere

Me: Does That Friend Of Yours Go To This School?

Thobela: Yeap

Me: Ohh Owky

Thobela: I See Fate Wanted Us To Meet Again

Me: Haha Yeah Ayt

Thobela: Can I Have Your Number?

I Gave Him My Number And He Gave Me His,Vusi Came Our Way Then Litha Did Too.

Vusi: Eita Bro

Thobela: Sure Sure

Litha Stood Next To Thobela And They Fist Bumped

Me: You Know Each Other?

Litha: We From The Same Hood,What Did You Expect?

Thobela: He's The Nikka I Was Waiting For

Vusi Came To Stand Next To Me

Vusi: Were You Also Part Of Those Boys Who Hit My Car With Bricks?

Thobela: What?

Vusi: You Two Are Friends Ayt? This BOY Here And His Friends Threw Bricks At My Car When I

Was Atcho Hood

Vusi Got Closer To Litha

Me: Whoa Whoa, Can't We Talk Bout This?

Vusi: I Love It When My Punches Do The Talkin'

Me: Vusi

Litha: Bring It On BOY

Vusi Chuckled, Looked Aside Then The Next Thing Litha Was Losing His Balance, Stumbling Backwards And Vusi Was Ready To Throw Another Bomb Punch

Thobela: Nikka Whoa, The Fuck Is Going On Here?

Vusi: Nikka Tell This BOY To Count His Words

Or He Might Find His Teeth On The Ground

Litha: You Think I'm Scared Of You,I Said Bring It On

Vusi Laughed Again,He Walked To Him,Pushed Thobela Aside And Threw Bomb Multiple Punches.Litha Fell On The Ground But Vusi Didn't Stop Punching Him,Thobela Walked To Them And Tried To Punch Vusi

Vusi: Nikka This Has No'ing To Do Witchu

I Pulled Thobela Aside 'Hey I Didn't Want Vusi To Go All Gangster On Both Of Em,Thobela Didn't Do Anything Wrong' OBJ:v

Me: VUSI! VUSI JUST LET HIM BE! STOP IT,CAN'T YOU SEE HE AIN'T EVEN FIGHTING

BACK??

He Got Off Him,The Principal Came Our Way

Principal: VUSI MORENA! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING IN MY SCHOOL?

Vusi: In Case You Didn't Notice,We Outside The School's Premises

Principal: YOU STILL IN MY SCHOOL UNIFORM!

Vusi: Fuck The School Uniform,Let's Go Home Esihle

He Got In The Car,The Whole School Was Looking At Us

Vusi: Are You Coming Or Wha??

Principal: I WANT TO SEE YOUR PARENTS

FIRST THING IN THE MORNING

Me: Yes Ma-

Vusi: Forget That Shit,You (Pointing At Me) Get In The Car!

I Got In The Car And He Sped Away,Leaving a Cloud Of Dust Behind.

My Phone Rang,It Was The Same Number That Called Me The Previous Night

Call Convo

Me: What Do You Want?

Caller/Angela: Hope You Heard What I Said To You Last Night Young Lady

Me: You Acting Like An Obsessed Old Thotty,Lutho Doesn't Love You.Get That Into Your Thin Big Skull

Angela: Meet Me At The Coffee Shop In 10

Me: Haha Are You For Real?

Angela: Be There

She Hung Up

Vusi: Is Errthing Okay?

Me: Drive Me To The Coffee Shop

Vusi: You Meeting With Someone?

Me: Something Like That

Vusi Turned The Car And Drove Me To The Shop,I Told Him To Wait For Me In The Car.I Went In And Found Angela Drinking Coffee And There Was a Second Cup In Front Of Her

Angela: I Don't Even Know What Lutho Saw In a

Young,Dirty School Girl

Me: Is That What You Called Me Here For? To Call Me By Names?

Angela: I Already Ordered A Cup For You Too

Me: Do You Want To Kill Me And My Baby Or Lemme Say My Child With Lutho?

She Choked On Her Coffee

Me: And Besides,Coffee Makes Me Vomit.I Don't Want To Kill My Baby With It

Angela: YOU PREGNANT??

Me: Ohh You Didn't Know?

Angela: Dammit Lutho!.....You Gonna Abort That Thing!

Me: Hahaha What? I Think You Should Do Comedy,You're A Good Joker

Angela: Whatchu Gonna Feed And Clothe That Thing Inside Of You With Coz Lutho Ain't Gonna Spend a Cent On It,If I Was You I'd Abort It.

Me: You Lutho's Bitches Really Love To Say If You Were Me,Listen Here You'll Never Be Me And FYT I Don't Need Lutho's Money Or Any Money From The Zizwe's Unlike Someone I Know

Angela: Call Me A Bitch One More Time I Swear I'll-

Me: You'll What?? I See This Uniform I'm Wearing Makes You Undermine Me

Angela: You Ain't Even Ashamed Of Getting Pregnant To a Married Man While You Still In School,Destroying Someone's Family.You Such a Bitch At a Young Age,I'm Sure You'll Be Selling Your Body At My Age

I Chuckled,I Was So Boiling But I Decided To Act

Like a Matured Ass Bitch

Me: Who's The Biggest Bitch Between Us? I Didn't Sleep With Lutho's Dad And His Cousin Menzi,I Didn't Get Pregnant With Menzi's Child And Pinned It On Lutho's Father Coz I Wanted His Wealth Did I?

Angela: YOU BITCH!

She Lifted Her Hand Up To Slap Me But I Held It While She Was Breathing Like An Obese Dragon

Me: Pack Your Bags Sweetheart And Leave Before I Make Your Life a Living Hell,I'm That Bitch You Don't Wanna Get On Its Wrong Side.I'm Capable Of Anything With This School Uniform On.I Can Kill You,Stuff You Under My Bed But Still Win The Case In Court Even If Found Witcho Blood In My Hands

Thotty-Bitch

L.A.N.C.E-Lying Ass Nikka Cheatin' Errrday

New Words You'll Be Comin Across

[05/19, 12:47] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT40 ♡

Angela: I Ain't Going Nowhere! I Won't Let You Or Anyone Get In The Way Of My Happiness With Lutho! Not Now, Not Ever!

Me: So Should I Tell Mr Zizwe And Lutho The Truth Or You'll Tell Them?

Angela: You Really Think I'm Scared Of You?

Me: If I Were You,I'd Be

Angela: I'd Never Be Intimidated By A
Small,Dirty Lil Girl

Me: I See Someone Wants To Die

I Turned And Walked Out,I Found Vusi Eating A
Pack Of Fried Chips,I Took The Pack From Him
And Got In The Car

Vusi: Someone Is So Not In A Good Mood,What
Went Down In There?

Me: Just Drive Me Home Before I Eat You Next

Vusi: So Did You Kick Some Butts?

Me: I Prefer Kickin' Em Privately Unlike
Someone I Know

Vusi: That Nikka Wanted His Ass Kicked

Me: Right,Whatchu Gonna Say To Mom And Dad?

Vusi: I'm Sure Dad's Gonna Celebrate While I'll Have To Work My Ass a Lil Bit To Convince Mom That I Was Not The One In The Wrong

Me: You Were Cheeky To The Principal,What If You Get Suspended? You Know We Got Only Two Weeks Before Our Exams Ayt?!

Vusi: Dad Will Use His Charms To Make Sure That I Don't Get Suspended

Me: You So Sick

We Got Home And Went To Our Rooms,I Changed To A Simple Outfit,Sweaters And Sneakers.I Went To Find Something To Eat,Vusi Got In Talkin' To Someone On His Phone

Call Convo

Vusi: Nhaa Some Nikka Took Her Phone So She Has A New One Now

.....

Vusi: You Really Ain't Gonna Let This Go I See

.....

Vusi: And She's Gonna Be a Mother Soon

Me: Vusi Are You Talkin' Bout Me?

Vusi: Was Just Tellin' Elethu Errthing He's Missing Out

.....

Vusi: Yeah She's In The Room With Me. My Nikka I Think You Should Look For Some Other Thotties Coz Esihle Is Already Used Goods Or You Wanna Be a Step Daddy?

.....

Vusi: Haha Nikka You Too Young To Be a Stepdad

I Took A Spoon And Threw It At Vusi But He Ducked

Vusi: We'll Talk Later My Nikka

.....

Vusi: Eish I Don't Wanna Talk Bout That

.....

Vusi: She Dated With This Stupid,Player Wanna Be Nikka And Boi I Hate That Dude If I Was Fed Up With Life,I'd Kill Him,Go And Hand Myself Over To The Police But I Still Have Hoes To Fuck So His Ass Just Got Saved

Mom And Dad With The Twins Got In

Olwethu: Who's Ass Just Got Saved?

Dad: Vusi We Got A Call From Your Principal

Vusi Hung Up And Went To Stand In Front Of
Dad

Me: Afternoon Rents

Mom: Hey Bbe

Dad: Esihle What Did Your Brother Do?

Owethu: I Also Wanna Know,What Did Bhut'
Vusi Do?

Vusi: Just Shut Up Owethu

Dad: I'm Still Listening

Vusi: Look Dad I Can Explain

Mom: You Beat Someone At Scho-

Vusi: We Were Outside The School's Premises

Mom: What Difference Does That Make? You Were Only Two, Three Meters Away From School

Vusi: That Boy Asked For It

Dad: This Didn't Just End There, You Were Cheeky Towards The Principal. VUSI MORENA THE HELL IS WRONG WITCHU??

Mom: Calm Down Bbe I'm Sure He's Got A Good Explanation For Errthing

Dad: Start Talkin' Now!!

Dad Sat Down With Mom, Vusi Sat On a Couch In Front Of Theirs

Me: Uhhm The Guy He Beat Up Is The New Guy Inam Was Dating

Dad: IS THIS ALL BOUT A GIRL??

Vusi: He Said Bad Things Bout Inam And I

Heard Errthing,I Went To Confront Him And He Still Said Em So I Couldn't Control My Anger,I Beat Him Up.

Dad: Didn't You Say You Were Over Inam?

Vusi: I Was I Mean I Am,It's Just That I Still Care Bout Her Even If We Ain't Dating.When We Were On Our Way Back Home From Uncle Avela's House,This Guy Came With His Friends With Bricks And Hit The Ford With Em

Dad: GET UP WE'RE GOING TO REARRANGE HIS FACE FOR THE THIRD TIME

Mom: Bbe C'mon Vusi Already Did That,The Principal Said The Boy Is Badly Injured So They Took Him To The Hospital

Vusi: WHAT??

Mom: Yeah That's How Bad You Beat Him And We'll Have To Pay For His Hospital Bills

Vusi: Mom And Dad I'm Really Sorry I Didn't Mean To Hurt Him That Much To Send Him To

A Hospital Bed

Dad: You Did The Right Thing My Boy, No One Messes Up With The Morenas And Gets Away With That

Mom: Musa!

Dad: What Pumpkin? You Know How Much I Had To Pay To Repair That Car, Vusi Should Have Called Me To Give Him An Extra Hand

Mom: You Encouraging Violence Musa

Dad: That Moment Was In Need Of It

Mom: I Give Up, If You Gonna Be Like This, Be Ready To Go To Meetings To That School Errrday

Vusi: So You Really Going To Pay For Litha's Hospital Bills?

Mom: And Be Glad That His Parents Didn't Want To Open Up a Case

Vusi: Wow

Dad: Powerful Bomb Morena Fists Have The Potential To Kill Boy So Next Time Don't Just Use Them When They Ain't In Need Kay?! But You Did The Right Thing For Busting That Boy's Butt,He Should Learn Not To Mess With The Morenas

Me: Mom Are You Sure You Married The Right Man Or They Swapped Him And You Realised When It Was Already Too Late?

Dad: Esihle!

Me: Just Kiddin Dad

Olwethu: So Is It Acceptable If We Also Bust Some Butts At School?

Mom: NO!

Dad: YES!

Mom: I'm Divorcing You Musa For Real

Me And Vusi: You Love Him Too Much To Divorce Him For That

Dad: Your Mother Is Just Kiddin,We Both Know She'd Never Leave This (Pointing At Him)

Mom: Lemme Go And Change Before You Say A Lotta Stuff

Dad Ran After Mom And Mom Ran Up The Stairs

Dad: You Know No One Would Meet Your Needs Like I Do

Mom: Ohh Really?

Dad: 1000%

Mom: Keep Lying To Yourself Mr Morena

Dad: Keep Denying The Fact That I'm The Only Man For You On Earth Mrs Morena

They Got To Their Room, I Guess We All Know What Went Down.

Owethu: Your Parents Are So Full Of Drama

Vusi: At Least I Didn't Get My Ass Roasted

Me: Coz Your Dad Is Crazy,If He Was Stable He Would've Busted Your Ass.Vusi You Beat Litha Up That He Ended Up On a Hospital Bed

Vusi: Dad Made Me Like This

Me: While Mom Is On Her Process Of Divorcing Dad,I'll Divorce Y'all Guys

Olwethu: Speak Of Never

Owethu: If You Go,I'm Going Witchu.This Family Is Really Creepy

Vusi: I Still Can't Believe I Beat Litha Up That Much

Me: You Still Love Inam,You Did That For Her

Vusi: My Feelings For Inam Faded Away

Owethu: We All Know You'll Love Her Forever Big Bro,Stop Denying That

We All Sat Down And Watched T.V While Our Parents Upstairs Tried To Create Another Sibling For Us,They Finally Came Back

Me: Lutho Is Coming Over For Dinner Tonight

Owethu: Is He Coming With Olona?

Me: Yes Baby

Owethu: Yeapy!

Mom: Then We Should Start Preparing Something To Eat

Dad: That Was Quick,I Thought Maybe He Was Gonna Come Next Week Or Some'ing

Mom: The Sooner The Better Bbe

Dad: O-kay

Mom And I Went To Start With The Cooking

And We Finished Up Quickly Coz We Made
Something Simple.Lutho Finally Arrived With
Olona,I Picked Olona Up And Kissed Her All
Over Her Face

Olona: Aren't You Going To Kiss Bhut' Lutho?

Ahem!! This Kid Mara.I Kissed Lutho's Cheek

Olona: But That's Not Where You Usually Kiss
Him

Lutho: Olona!

Olona: Sorry

Vusi And The Twins Were Laughing,Lutho
Greeted Errone.We All Sat Down And Dished Up
For Ourselves

Olona: Are You Sis Esihle's Father? (Lookin' At Dad)

Dad: Yes Im Her Father,Want Me To Be Your Father Too?

Olona: Nope,I Already Have A Father.When Is Sis Esihle Going To Give Birth To The Baby? I Wanna Play With The Baby

Dad: When Are You Giving Birth To The Baby Sis Esihle?

Me: Not Anytime Soon Bbe,You'll Have To Wait

Dad: So How Are Things At Work And At School Lutho?

Lutho: They Are Still Going Great Sir Thank You And How Is It Like To Own a Multi Million Rand Company?

Dad: With Stuff Like Mine,It's Great.Since You Studying Business,Do You Wanna Own Your Own Company One Day?

Lutho: Jeah Something Like That

Dad: I'll Tell You One Thing Son,It Ain't Easy
Especially If You Have a Big Family Like Mine

Lutho: You Survive All Through That,I'm Sure I
Can Too And Of Course Witcho Help

Dad And Went On Chatting And Chatting Bout
Business,It Was Good Seeing Them Like
That.They Went To Have a Beer Or Two While
Mom And I Washed The Dishes

Me: If You The One Who Made Dad Change His
Minds Bout Lutho,Thanks a Million

Mom: Your Dad Liked Him From The Start But
He Didn't Wanna Show It,He Has A Heart
Sweetheart Even Though He Tries To Hide It

Me: I'm Sure It Was Hard For You To Love
Someone Like Him When You First Met

Mom: I Fell In Love Witcho Dad Way Before He
Turned Into a Thug So It Was Easy To Love Him

Even With That Cold Heart Coz I Knew There
Was Still a Human Being Left Inside Of Him

Me: You Brave

Mom: Trust Me You'll Have To Be Too With
Lutho Being Some Part Of a Gang

Me: Then You'll Have To Teach Me a Thing Or
Two On How To Love A Gangster

Mom: You Don't Have To Love His Gangster
Ways, Just Love The Real Him

Me: You Make It Sound So Easy

Mom: It Is Easy

Dad And Lutho Got In

Dad: Where's This Lil Loud Rat? They Have To
Go Now

Me: Olona's Gonna Sleep Over

Dad: Ohh Walk Lutho Out Then

Me: O-kay

Lutho And I Walked Out

Me: Dad Seems To Be Liking You a Lot Now

Lutho: I'm a Charmer Bbe

Me: Haha Yeah Ayt

Lutho: Olona And Mom Are Staying With Me
Now

Me: What? What Happened?

Lutho: Dad And Angela Are Getting Married
Tomorrow Morning,I Think Mom Is Fed Up With
Dad's Whoring Tendencies So She Left Him

Me: What????

Lutho: Dad Says Angela Gave Him The Son He
Had Always Wanted,He's Gonna Transfer

Errthing To Angela's Account

Me: What Bout Menzi?

Lutho: That's How Full Of Shit My Father Is,He Took Errthing From Menzi Coz He Was Never His Son.That's Why I Want Nothing To Do With Him

Me: Angela's Son Is Menzi's

Lutho: Whoa WHA- HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT??

UH-OH [OBJ]:o [OBJ]:o

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT41 ♡

I Just Kept Quiet And Looked At Lutho OBJ - -
Eish Me And My Big Mouth

Lutho: Sugar

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle!

Me: Okay Okay Menzi Told Me

I Could See The Shock In His Eyes

Lutho: You And Menzi Are On Talkin' Terms
Now??

Me: He Wanted To Make A Deal With Me

Lutho: WHAT??

Me: I Know It Wa-

Lutho: And You Didn't See The Need To Tell Me?

Me: I Was Still Thin-

Lutho: Still What? What Kinda Deal You Talkin' Bout?

Me: Do We Really Have To Talk Bout This Now And Here?

Lutho: Esihle Marn!

Mev Okay Fine,He Wanted Me To Help Him With Getting Rid Of Angela

Lutho: What?? Why?

Me: He Said Angela Will Do Anything To Get You Back And Get Her Hands On Your Dad's Inheritance

Lutho: How Is Marrying My Father Gonna Help Her Get Me Back?

Me: I Kinda Had a Word With Her

Lutho: The Fuck?

Me: She Called Me,Threatening Me To End Things Witchu.I Wanted To Put Her In Her Place,I Won't Have Your Ex Bitch Controlling

Me: I May Be Younger Than Her But I Can Bust Her Butt Till She Got Non Left To Be Busted

Lutho Just Chuckled

Me: What?

Lutho: The Way You Said That, Wish I Could Take a Bite Ayt Now

Me: Mxm

Lutho: What Did You Say To Her?

Me: That She Either Leaves Or I Tell You And Your Father The Truth Bout The Baby But I See The Bitch Is Deaf

Lutho: You Know What, Go To Sleep. I'll See You Tomorrow

Me: So Whatchu Gonna Do?

Lutho: I Don't Know Yet But I Have To Have a Word With Mom

Me: Kay Then Good Night

Lutho: Good Night Sugar,Come Here

I Got Closer To Him,I Wrapped My Arms 'Round His Waist While He Put His Hands On My Cheeks.

Lutho: My Butt Busting Queen

Me: Bbe C'mon You Can't Be Calling Me With That Name

Lutho: It's Gonna Be Used By Me Alone

Me: I Don't Like It

Lutho: Kay What Bout Ass Kickin' Queen?

Me: Lutho!

I Hit Him Playfully

Lutho: Okay Okay Just Kiddin'

Me: I Wish You'd Sleep Over

Lutho: That Would Be Takin' Disrespect To A Whole New Level

Me: Dad Likes You

Lutho: But That Doesn't Mean I Should Disrespect Him, Sleepin With His Daughter In His Territory That's a No No

Me: I See You Care Bout What Dad Thinks Bout You

Lutho: If I Wanna Build A Future Witchu, I Have To Be On Your Dad's Good Books. And Ohhh Speakin' Of Good Books, I Told Him Bout My Gang, What Menzi Did And What Anga And The Others Want

Me: And?

Lutho: He Didn't Answer Me, He Just Kept Quiet Till I Started Talkin' Bout Some'ing Else

Me: Ouch!

Lutho: Yeah....I Guess That Was a Sign That I Should Not Include You In Errthing

Me: I'm Sure You'll Make A Plan

Lutho: I'll Try...I'm Sure Olona Is Lookin' All Over For You,It's Time For You To Go Back Inside

Me: But I'm Still Enjoying Your Company [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Bbe You Going To School Tomorrow

Me: Okay Fine Bye Then

We Had a Long Passionate Kiss Then I Went To My Room,I Found Olona Lying On The Bed

Olona: Bhut' Luu Left?

Me: Yes Baby,So Do I Have To Read You a Bed Time Story?

Olona: I'm Too Old For That

Me: Lholho You Still 5

Olona: That's Old

Me: Someone Wants To Be Old I See

Olona: I Also Want To Get Married Like Mom
And Dad And Have My Own Kids

Me: That Will Happen When You're 30

Olona: What??

Me: Yeap You Still Young Now

Olona: How Old Are You?

Me: I'm Bhut' Luu's Agemate

Olona: Then Why Are You Still In School?

Yho :o

Me: Okay You Got Me,I'm 16

I Saw Her Counting,Using Her Fingers

Olona: So Bhut' Luu Is 5 Years Older Than You?

Me: Something Like That

Olona: That's My Age

Me: Yeap.Let's Sleep,I'm Going To School
Tomorrow So I'll Have To Wake Up Early In The
Morning

Someone Knocked On My Door

Olona: Come In

Me: What If It's A Ghost?

Olona: I'll Hide Behind You

Dad Got In

Olona: Sis Esihle Says You're A Ghost

Dad: Yes I Am

Dad Made The Ghostly Sounds And Tickled
Olona While She Laughed Her Lungs Out, I Just
Remembered When I Was Young And Dad Used
To Do That To Me

Dad: Now Run To Owethu's Room Before The
Ghost Eats You

Olona: I'm Scared Of Ghosts!

She Laughed, Got Off The Bed And Ran Out. Dad
Sat On The Bed And Tapped A Space Next To
Him, I Sat On It.

Me: Wassup Dad?

Dad: You Know Your Mother And I Vowed That

We'd Never Let You Know Or Live The Life We Lived

Me: I Know Dad

Dad: But Life Forced Us To Push You Into It

Me: You Had No Choice Dad

He Put His Hand On My Head And Played With My Hair While I Leaned On His Shoulder With My Head

Dad: That Lutho Boy Seems Like The Right Guy For You

Me: Haha You Sayin' That Coz He's Also A Thug Like You

Dad: I Wasn't Talkin' Bout That But That Could Also Be Another Reason,I Don't Want Some Son In Law Who Will Be Singing Me Bible Verses While I Want To Rob A Bank

Me: Dad!

I Hit Him Playfully,Any Moment With Dad Was Priceless

Dad: It's The Honest Truth Princess

Me: So Are You Gonna Help Lutho With Takin' Menzi Out?

Dad: He's Gonna Help Himself,I'll Just Try To Add Some Soldiers On His Team,Teach His Army a Thing Or Two And Leave It There.It's A Boys' War.I'm a Man,I Can't Be Fighting Small Silly Wars.And Since Menzi Decided To Be Some Aviwe Junior,I Don't Mind Lutho Playing Me

Me: Won't Vusi Be Jealous?

Dad: I'm Not Giving Over My Empire To Lutho,I'm Just Gonna Give Him a Lil Support Since He's Also Protecting You In What He's

Doing

Me: Thanks Dad

Dad: Just Make Sure That You And The Baby
Are Okay

Me: I Will Dad

He Got Up And Kissed My Forehead

Dad: Goodnight Bbe

Me: Night Dad

He Walked Out,I Went To Take Olona From
Owethu's Room And We Slept Together.The
Following Day I Woke Up And Olona Woke Up
With Me,We Bathed Together And Washed Each
Other's Backs.

I Lotioned And Dressed Olona And Myself
Too,We Went To Have Breakfast Together With

The Family Then Lutho Picked Her Up.School Was Just School, Nothing Interesting Happened.

After School Lutho Picked Me Up,He Drove Us To His House And Luckily His Mother Wasn't 'Round.I Went To The Kitchen And Made Myself Something To Eat And Sat On The Kitchen Counter,Lutho Got In

Lutho: Some Two Souls Are Hungry

Me: Way Too Hungry

Lutho: Can I Help You With That?

Me: Nope Make Yours

He Just Took The Plate And Put It Aside,He Picked Me Up And Walked To His Room With Me.Jeah We Hit It Off.

After Our Session,I Just Wore Lutho's T-shirt And Went To Watch T.V While Lutho Was On

His Phone. Someone Knocked And I Went To
Open Up

Me: Whatchu Doing Here?

Menzi: I See You And Lil Bro Are Still At It Hard

Me: What Do You Want Menzi?

Lutho: That Was Quick

Menzi: I Was In The Neighborhood And I'm
Thirsty, I Could Use Some Spirit

Lutho: It's On Its Way

Menzi Got In And Sat On a Couch, I Just Stood
Stagnant Where I Was "The Fuck Is Lutho
Doing?"

Just Then Lutho's Mother Got In

L's Mom: Esihle

Me: Hello Ma

Olona: Sis Esihle!

Me: Hey Bbe

Olona: You Wearing Bhut' Luu's T-shirt

Me: Does It Suit Me?

Olona: Yes!

Me: Thanks Bbe

L's Mom: Olona Go To Your Room,Esihle Go
And Get Dressed Or Stay In Lutho's Room

Lutho: She Doesn't Have To Go

Lutho's Father Got In Hand In Hand With Angela

Menzi: You Finally Arrive

L's Dad: Whatever You Wanna Say,Say It Quickly
Coz I'm A Business Man I Don't Have All Day

Lutho: Okay Fine,We All Know That Mom Has

Been Holding You Down Since Forever And She Stayed Even When You Suffocated Her Witcho Bullshit.

L's Dad: What Do You Want To Say Lutho?

Lutho: I Want You To Sign Everything You Own Over To Mom And Olona,I Want You To Give Her All Your Business Shares

L's Dad: Haha This Boy Is Crazy

Lutho: Am I? (Takin a Sip From His Glass)

Menzi: You See Uncle We Have Some Perilous Info That Could Turn Your Business Career Upside Down

L's Dad: I Think You Two Forget That I Know People From High Places Who Could Destroy Your Business Paths In a Blink Of An Eye,Don't Start A War You Won't Win Boys

L's Mom: I've Been Quiet For Years Now,It's Time I Stand Up For Myself.Do What They Ask You To Do Or I Destroy You Myself

L's Dad: My Wife We've Been Together For Years,Overcame Obstacles Together.You Can't Leave My Side No-

L's Mom: Do It

Menzi: And Ohh That Boy Angela Gabe Birth To,Is My Son

L's Dad: WHAT??

Angela: They Are Lying He's Your Son

Menzi: Angela Slept With Me Several Times And She Slept With You Once But She Had Her Periods After Sleeping Witchu And She Slept With Me Again And She Fell Pregnant

L's Dad: Angela Is This True??

Angela:..... [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: Sign Back The Inheritance Back To M-

Lutho: Back To Mom,Give Everything To Her

Menzi: But That Was Not Our Deal

Lutho Took Out A Gun And Pointed It At
Menzi,His Father And Angela

Lutho: A Deal Can Be Broken,Now Leave!

FUCK ME SIDEWAYS

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

📺❤️ CROP TOP 📺❤️

#S2

#INSERT42 ♡

The Room Went Dead,Lutho Was Dead Serious
As A Heart Attack

L's Dad: Can't We Talk Bout This Lutho? We Can Have a Father And Son Talk And Fix All Of This

Lutho: Ohh Really? It's Too Late Dad For That,I've Spent Almost All My Life Seekin' For Your Attention,Wanting You To Love Me,To See Me As Your Son But You Know What? I'm Done With That

Menzi: I Hope You Know You're Making A Big Mistake By Not Giving Me My Share Of The Deal

Lutho: Menzi We Both Know You Were Gonna Backstab Me But I'm Always One Step Ahead Of You BIG BROTHER

Menzi Drank Down His Brandy In One Gulp Then Took His Car Keys And Walked To The Door But Before He Walked Out,He Turned And Looked At Everyone

Menzi: Angela I Want My Son Tomorrow First Thing In The Morning And You Uncle,I Thought You Took Me As Your Son But I See I'll Always Be Nothing But An Orphan Nephew To You.Lutho,Well Played Lil Bro.You Won This Round But Be Warned,I Might Strike Anytime

With That Said,He Walked Out

L's Dad: Lutho My So-

Lutho: Mr Zizwe Please Leave My House And Don't Forget,I Want The Paper Works Signed Tomorrow Morning.Now Leave

Lutho's Dad Got Up And Left Angela Sitting On The Couch

Lutho: And Please Take Your Bitch Witchu

L's Dad: You Get Up!

Angela Wiped Her Tears And Followed Mr Zizwe,They Both Went Out.Lutho Put The Gun Down And Drank The Small Brandy Left In His Glass

L's Mom: Take That Thing Away And Esihle I Told You To Get Dressed

I Got Up And Walked To Lutho's Room,I Took My Clothes And Got Dressed.Lutho Got In And Put His Gun In His Safe Which Happened To Be In His Closet.He Came To Me And Wrapped His Arms 'Round My Waist And Planted Soft Pecks On My Neck

Me: Please Stop Before Your Mom Gets In Here And Kicks Me Me Out

Lutho: She'd Never Do That

Me: Your Mom Hates My Guts

Lutho: She's Just Not Used To You Yet, I'm Sure
Once She Knows The Real You She's Gonna
Love You

Me: Yeah Ayt

Lutho Turned Me And Made Me Look At Him

Lutho: Wassup?

Me: How Is Our Relationship Gonna Work If
Your Mom Doesn't Like Me?

Lutho: Bbe I'm Sure Mom Is Gonna Love You

Me: I Don't See That Coming True

I Bent Down To Tie My Shoes

Lutho: Lemme

He Got Down And Tied My Shoes While I Sat On
The Bed

Lutho: There You Go, From Now On You'll Have
To Ask Someone To Tie Your Shoes Or You'll
Suffocate Our Lil Princess

I Just Looked At Him And Smiled

Lutho: You Finally Smile

Me: I Had To....I Have To Go

Lutho: Can't You Stay Over For Dinner? I'm Sure
Mr Morena Won't Mind As Long As You Gonna
Sleep At His House

Me: I'm Sorry I Can't

Lutho: Please

Me: Lutho

Lutho: Pretty Please

Me: Okay Fine

Lutho: You The Best

He Pecked My Lips.We Both Went To The Kitchen Coz I Said I Was Gonna Help Him With The Cooking,We Found His Mother Peeling Potatoes And Olona Eating

L's Mom: You Still In Your School Uniform

Lutho: I Picked Her Up At School

L's Mom: Do Your Parents Know That You Don't Go Straight Home After School?

Me: Uhhm I-

Lutho: Her Dad Knows,I Called Him.

Lutho Took a Yoghurt From The Fridge Then
Two Spoons

Lutho: We'll Be In My Room If You'll Need Us. We
Were Gonna Prepare Dinner But I See You
Already Doing The Cooking So My Girl And I Are
Just Gonna Watch Movies And Wait For
Grandma To Dish Up Her Delicious Meal

Olona: Can I Join You?

Me: Ye-

Lutho: Nope, Help Mom Out.

Olona: You Suck

Lutho: I Know Sweetie. Let's Go Bbe

We Walked To His Room And Lied On His Bed
While Watching A Rom Com From His
Laptop. His Phone Rang

Lutho: I Gotta Take This

Call Convo

Lutho: My Nikka

.....

Lutho: Yeah And?

.....

Lutho: That's Awesome Bro So I Can Come And
Check Em Out Tonight?

.....

Lutho: Sure Thing

He Hung Up And Came Back To The Bed

Lutho: That Was Anga,Your Dad's Guys Joined Us Today And Taught My Guys a Thing Or Two

Me: That's Great

Lutho: But You Don't Seem Happy

Me: Lutho Your Mother Doesn't Like Me

Lutho: Bbe Are We Still There?

Me: How Am I Supposed To Be Relieved When Your Mother's Gonna Stay Witchu And I'll Have To Visit You While She's Here?

Lutho: Coz I Love You

Me:.....

Lutho: Bbe Stop Worrying Bout Mom,I Love You And Only You.

Me: I Wish We Would Get Along

Lutho: Trust Me Bbe You Will

He Took The Spoon From My Hand And Got On

Top Of Me

Me: Bbe We Just Did It Now

Lutho: It's Not My Fault That I Can't Get Enough
Of You Miss Morena

Me: Ohh?

Lutho: Yes And I Wish I Could Have You
Everyday All Day

Me: Yho No That's Too Much

Lutho: I'd Never Get Enough Of You

He Smashed His Lips On Mine And We Had A
Long Passionate Kiss

Olona: What Are You Doing?

Lutho: Lholho What Do You Want?

Olona: I Wanna Watch a Movie With You

Lutho: We Not Watching a Movie Anymore Now

Olona: Then What Are You Doing?

Lutho: Making Another Bab-

Me: We Playing

Olona: Can I Play With You?

I Give Up!

Lutho: You Know What,Let's Just All Go To The Lounge And Watch T.V

Olona: Okay Let's Go Then

We Got Up And Went To The Lounge,Olona Sat In Between Us And Lutho Was Bored As Fuck [OBJ]:v His Mother Called Us For Dinner And Lutho Sat Next To Me

L's Mom: So Where Are You Going To Study After Your Grade 12 Esihle?

Me: I Don't Know Maybe Outta Town

L's Mom: Out Of Town Wow, So You Think Your Relationship With Lutho Will Work?

Me: We Both Love Each Other, I Don't See Why It Wouldn't Work

Lutho Smiled And Held My Hand

L's Mom: Hope You Know That Lutho Is A Man And Sometimes Love Is Not Enough

Lutho: Mom!

L's Mom: It's The Truth. Lutho Told Me That You Two Were Still Dating When You Started Having An Affair With Menzi, That's a Bit Too Whorish Don't You Think?

Me: Ma When I Dated With Menzi, I Didn't Know

That He Was Related To Lutho

L's Mom: Even If He Wasn't, You Cheated On Lutho. Do You Still Think The Long Distance Relationship Thing Would Work?

Lutho: I'm The First One Who Cheated

L's Mom: Just 'Cause Your Boyfriend Or Anyone You Are In Love With Cheats That Doesn't Mean You Also Have To Cheat, You Have To Have Principles As A Lady And I Don't See You As One

I'M DONE!

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT43 ♡

I Put My Spoon On The Table And Threw The Cloth On The Table

Me: I Guess I Overstayed My Welcome

Lutho: Mom Are You For Real??....Baby Look You Don't Have To Go.Mom Please Apologize To Esihle

L's Mom: I Was Just Speaking My Mind,What's Wrong With That?

I Got Up And Went To Take My Bag From Lutho's Room,Lutho Got In After Me.He Held Me

Lutho: Look Baby I'm Sorry Bout What Mom Said

Me:.....

Lutho: Okay Look I Know The Things She Said
Are So Not On And I'm Sorry For That

Me: Just Drive Me Home Lutho Please

Lutho: I Hate It When You Mad At Me

Me: I Ain't Mad Atchu

Lutho: Bbe Can We Tal-

Me: Please Just Drive Me Home

I Walked Out To His Car And Just Sat
There, Thinking Bout What His Mother Just
Said. I Felt His Hand Wiping Tears Off My Face, I
Didn't Notice That I Was Crying

Lutho: Bbe You Know How Much I Love You
Ayt?!

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle Can You Just Talk To Me?

Me:..... [OBJ]:' (

Lutho: Bbe Don't Do This To Yourself

Me: LUTHO JUST DR- Just Drive Me Home
Please

Lutho: Fine

We Drove In Silence,I Was So Not Okay.He
Parked In Front Of My Gate And It Was Not Dark
Outside.When I Was Bout To Open The
Door,Lutho Held My Hand.I Just Exhaled And
Didn't Look At Him

Lutho: Sugar I Love You.

Me:.....

Lutho: Okay Fine I'll Ask Mom To Move Out To
Somewhere Else

Me: You Don't Have To

Lutho: Then What Do You Want Me To Do?

Me: Nothing

Lutho: Bbe C'mon Don't Be Like That

Me: Can I Go Now?

Lutho:.....

I Just Opened The Door And Got Out,I Got To The House And Found Dad And Olwethu Playing T.V Games While Vusi Sad There Frowning And Typing Something On His Phone

Me: Hi

I Walked Up The Stairs

Dad: You Still Gonna Go Out,Get In Again And Greet Us In An Appropriate Way Right?!

Olwethu: I'm Sure She Will

I Walked Down The Stairs And Walked Out Then Walked In Again,I Knew Dad Would Even Take Me From My Room To Do That So I Just Saved Us Both The Energy.

Me: Evening Dad,Olwethu And Vusi

Dad: Hello Princess

Olwethu: Yeah

Vusi:.....

I Walked To My Room And Threw My Bag On The Bed,I Changed Into My Night Dress And Got In Bed.Vusi Got In

Me: You Should Teach Yourself How To Knock Before Entering Someone Else's Room

Vusi: Mxm

Me: If You Came With That Obnoxious Spirit
Please Do Me A Favor, Turn Your Back, Walk
Forward And Close The Door Behind

He Just Threw Himself On My Bed, Laid On His
Back And Exhaled While Covering His Eyes With
His Arms

Me: Havin' a Bad Day?

Vusi: It's The Worst

Me: What Went Down?

Vusi: I Got Expelled From School, Mom
Grounded Me And Now Dad Just Told Me That
We'll Be Having A Family Reunion This
December And Mom Invited Esihle And Her
Mother

Me: What's Wrong With That?

Vusi: I Can't Have My Ex Staying Here For A

Whole Week

Me: Better Get Used To The Idea Bro

Vusi: So Wassup Witchu? I Can See You Not Okay

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout It

Vusi: So You Wanna Die Young

Me: Okay Fine,Lutho's Mom Doesn't Like Me

Vusi: What Did You Expect? You Dated With Menzi And Lutho At The Same Household

Me: You Ain't Really Helping

Vusi: And Besides Many Mother In Laws Don't Get Along With Their Daughter In Laws

Me: Why?

Vusi: I Should Be Askin' You That Question

Me: That Woman Really Hates My Guts

Vusi: What Did Lutho Say Or Do?

Me: He Told His Mother To Apologize But

Dololo And That He'll Ask Her To Live But That'll Be Another Reason To Top Her Hatred

Vusi: Maybe She'll Like You As The Time Goes By

Me: Like That Makes Any Difference, That Woman Hates Me Vusi

Vusi: You'll Be Fine Lil Sis Don't Worry

He Got Out And I Fell Asleep

-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-

-
-
-
-
-
-

Weeks Went By,I Ignored Lutho Ever Since The Dinner Night With His Mother.I Changed My Sim Card And Since We Were Writing Our End Of Year Exams,He Was Writing His Too So He Really Didn't Get The Chance To Get To See Me Or Catch Me After School Coz We Would Go Home The Minute We're Done Writing.I Was 3 Months Pregnant Then And My Tummy Was Showing,I Had Weird Cravings And All That Pregnancy Ish.This One Hot Day,I Just Wrote My Final Final Paper And I Was So Happy Coz I Was Gonna Be Done With The Studying And Ish.As I Was Walking To The Gate,I Saw Lutho's

Car And Attempted To Walk Back To Wherever I
Could Hide

Lutho: SUGAR!

Dammit! I Turned And Looked At Him,He Got
Closer To Me And Pulled In For A Long Ass
Tight Hug

Lutho: I Missed You

Me:.....

Lutho: I Can't Believe You Ignored Me For A
Whole Month And A Week

Me: I Needed Time To Think

Whoa That Was Long,I Didn't Even Realise That
I Ignored Him For That Long Coz I Was Caught
Up In My Books

Lutho: And?

Me: What?

Lutho: What Did You Think?

Me: Nothing

Lutho: So How's My Princess?

Me: Okay I Guess And The Bump Is Showing

Lutho: WHAT?? Wow Can I See It?

He Picked Me Up And Spun 'round With Me

Me: Okay Okay Now Put Me Down

Lutho: So Can I See It?

Me: Yes But Not Here

He Took Me By My Hand And We Walked To His

Car,He Started It And Drove Us To Town

Lutho: You Even Changed Your Number

Me:.....

Lutho: Do You Know How Much That Hurt Me?

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle I'm Talkin' To You!

Me:.....

Lutho: So Now You Ain't Gonna Answer Me?

Me:.....

Lutho: ESIHLE MORENA I'M TALKIN' TO YOU
HERE!

I Just Started Crying

Lutho: Sugar C'mon I Didn't Mean To Make You
Cry,I'm Just Mad That You Ignored Me That You

Even Changed Your Sum Card

Me: I Just Needed Time To Think,Isn't That Reason Enough For You?

Lutho: Bbe I Didn't Know Whether You And The Baby Were Okay Or Nhaa

Me: As You Can See,We're Perfectly Okay

Lutho: We Should Go For A Scan

Me: Maybe Tomorrow,I'm Tired Now

Lutho: Fine By Me So Where Should We Go And Eat?

Me: Wherever You Wanna Go

Lutho: Baby I Said I'm Sorry Didn't I?

Me: You The One Who's Gonna Pay,You Choose The Place

Lutho: Okay Fine

He Drove Us To This Fast Food Place And We

Made Our Orders,I Ordered A Meal Like His And
He Just Watched Me Eating.Errthing In My Plate
Was Double His,I Was Eating For Two
Remember [OBJ]:)

He Just Watched Me Eating While He Smiled

Lutho: I Missed You

Me: I Missed You Two

Lutho: There Is My Sugar

He Got Up And Touched My Tummy

Lutho: Thank You Princess For Bringing Her
Back

Me: I Was Just Tired And Hungry I Guess

Lutho: So Now Can I Get The New Number?

Me: I'll Put Back My Old Sim

Lutho: Thank You

Menzi Got In And Walked To Us

Menzi: You Still Together? I Thought You Broke Up

Me: And Why Would You Think Like That?

Menzi: Uhhm Not So Long Ago I've Been Seeing Lil Bro Leaving With Different Chicks Errday From Different Clubs And I'm Sure We All Know What Went Down And Don't Worry I've Been More Like Keepin' An Eye On You Not Following You

I Looked At Lutho

Menzi: Oooooops I Didn't Know It Was a Secret,Let's Just Hope They Used Protection.It

Would Be Bad For Lutho To Kill His Child With The Infections He Could've Gotten From Those Girls He Fucked The Last Few Days,It Would Be Understandable If I'd Kill It Myself

Lutho: DARE LAY YOUR DIRTY HANDS ON MY BABY I SWEAR I'LL-

Menzi: You'll What? You Know Sometimes I Don't Have To Get My Hands Dirty.You Don't Know What's In Esihle's Food Right Now,It Helps To Have Connections You Know

Me: WHAT??

Menzi: Don't Worry There's Nothing Yet

With That Said He Walked Away

Lutho: Are You Okay?

Me: You've Been Sleeping 'round

Lutho: You've Been Ignoring Me

Wow [OBJ]:'(

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT44 ♡

I Couldn't Believe What Lutho Just Said, Was He Being For Real?? The Fuck Is Wrong With Him? I Needed Time To Think, I Needed Time To Study, I Needed Time To Evaluate Myself And Instead Of Waiting For Me Or Understanding He Fucked With Different Thotties Every Night. Maybe His Mom Was Right, A Long Distance Relationship Would Be Bad For Us And We So Not For Each Other

Me: The Car Keys? I'll Wait For You In The
Car [OBJ]:(

Lutho: Talkin' Like It's Yours

Me: I See Your Seats Are Tired Of My Big Ass,I'll
Take a Taxi

He Just Snort-laughed And Gave The Keys To
Me

Me: Keep Em

Lutho: Stop Acting Like A Brat

Me: Mxm

I Took The Keys And Walked To The Car,I Got In
And Cried My Lungs Out.I Was Hurting,I Was
Deeply Hurt,I Was Hurt To The Core [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:(

"What Was It That I Wasn't Giving To Lutho?
Was I Not Good Enough? Was I Just Some Baby
Makin' Machine To Him?"

He Opened The Door And Got In,I Didn't Lift My
Head Up To Look At Him,I Just Continued
Crying.

After A While He Pulled Me Into His Arms And
Held Me Tight

Lutho: I'm Sorry

I Pushed Him And Hit His Chest

Me: Your Sorry Won't Fix Anything Lutho! YOUR
DAMN FUCKIN' SORRY WON'T FIX ANYTHING!

He Got Hold Of My Hands And Pulled Me Into
His Arms Again

Me: Lutho Just Drive Me Home! DRIVE M- DRI-
DRIV- DRIVE ME HOME LU- LUTHO!

Lutho: Bbe You Can't Even Talk

Me: DID YOU USE PROTECTION LUTHO?

Lutho:.....

Me: DID YOU??

Lutho: I Care Bout You And Our Baby,I Wouldn't
Risk Your Health Like That

Me: Ahhhhhh!

I Felt A Sharp Pain On My Lower Abdomen

Lutho: Bbe You Okay?

Me: I'm Fin- Aaahhhhh!

Lutho: What's Wrong? Is The Baby Okay?

Me: I DON'T KNOW [OBJ]:'(I Don't Wanna Lose My

Baby Lutho

Lutho: Bbe You Won't, We Ain't Gonna Lose Our Baby

He Started The Car And Made It Fly It's Way To The Hospital, I Didn't Even Mind His Driving Coz Of The Pain I Was In. He Kept Swearing And Cursing On The Way

Lutho: You Still Okay?

Me: DO I LOOK OKAY TO YOU??

Lutho:.....

Lutho Was Panickin' So Was His Driving But He Was Used To Driving In That State He's A Thug After All. We Got To The Hospital, No One Came To Us Except The Receptionist

Lady: What's Wrong With Her?

Lutho: She's Having Pains On Her Lower Abdomen.THE FUCK ARE THOSE BEDS AND NURSES OR DOCTORS 'ROUND HERE?? I SWEAR IF I LOSE MY BABY I'M GONNA MAKE SURE THAT Y'ALL -

Just Then Two Nurses Came With That Hospital Bed,Lutho Picked Me Up And Put Me On It

Lutho: WHAT FUCKIN' TOOK YOU SO LONG?? BLOODY PUBLIC HOSPITAL!

Nurse1: Sir Can You Please Calm D-

Lutho: DON'T FUCKIN' TELL ME TO CALM DOWN WHEN MY GIRLFRIEND IS IN THAT KINDA PAIN,DO YOU KNOW THAT I CAN LOSE HER OR MY BABY? DO YOUR DAMN JOB AND SAVE THEIR LIVES AND STOP ACTING LIKE A

THERAPIST

I Was Rushed To A Room Where The Doctor Checked My Everything,They Gave Me Something To Stop The Pain,They Took Some Tests.

I Fell Asleep Right After They Were Done With Everything.

I Woke Up And Saw Lutho With His Head On The Bed

Me: Lutho

Lutho:.....

I Guess He Was Asleep,I Tried To Sit Up Straight And I Woke Him

Me: What Time Is It?

He Checked His Watch

Lutho: It's 7 pm

Me: Did You Call Mom And Dad?

Lutho: Yeah They Went To Buy Something To Eat,How Are You?

Me: I'm Fine

Lutho: The Pain?

Me: I Don't Feel It Anymore

Lutho: I Thought I Was Gonna Lose You Two.I Can't Lose You Guys

I Just Looked At Him And Thought Of What He Did

Me: I Think You Should Go

Lutho: I'll Spend The Night Here

Me: You Writing Your Exams, You Need All The Sleep You Can Get

Lutho: You And Princess Come First

Me: But I'm Sure You Didn't Think Of That When You Fucked With Those Thousand Bitches

Just Then Mom And Dad Got In

Mom: My Baby, I'm Glad You Okay

Dad: How Are You Princess?

Me: I'm Okay Now Dad

Mom: Thank Goodness You Were With Lutho

Dad: I Think You Should Go Now Son

Lutho: I Don't Mind Spending The Night Here

Mom: You Don't Have To Bbe, Go Home, Take A Shower And Sleep. You Need It

Lutho: Okay Then Bye Sugar

He Came To Me And Kissed My Forehead Then Said Goodbye To Mom And Dad Then Left. I Ate What The Rents Bought Me

Mom: What Happened?

Me: I Was Having A- The Pain Just Started I Don't Know What Happened

Dad: You Were Havin' A What?

Me: Uhhm I Was Havin' A Lil Lunch With Lutho And Uhhh My Lower Abdomen Just Started Hurtin'

Mom: I'm Sure It's Nothing. It's Normal To Have Abdominal Pains When Pregnant

Dad: You Need To Rest And Now That You Done Witcho Exams, You Can Get All The Rest You Need

Me: Thanks Dad

He Kissed My Forehead And We Talked And
Talked Bout Anything And Errthing. My Doctor
Got In

Mom: Is Everything Okay Doctor?

Dad: Is She And The Baby Okay?

Doc: They Are Both Fine But Esihle Has Been
Stressing Too Much Lately, That's What Caused
The Pain

Mom: What Does That Mean Doctor?

Doc: She's Going To Be Okay As Long As She
Comes For Her Checkups

Dad: Thanks Doc

The Doctor Walked Out

Dad: Is There Something You Ain't Tellin' Us Princess?

Me: No

Mom: We're Your Parents Esihle

Me: I'm Fine Ma,I Guess The Exams Were A Bit Hard

Dad: Thankfully You Done With Them,You Can Relax Now

Me: I Guess So

Mom: We Should Get Going,I'm Sure My Babies Are Hungry.Your Brother Went Out With Inam Today,I'm Sure They Ain't Back Yet

Me: Whoa What?

Dad: Yes They Back Together For The Millionth Time

Mom And I Laughed

Dad: Bye Princess

Me: Bye Dad

Mom: I'm Sure You'll Be Discharged
Tomorrow,Your Dad Will Come And Pick You Up.

Me: Okay See You Tomorrow Then

They Both Kissed My Forehead And Left,I Tried
To Fall Asleep But Couldn't.My Phone Rang,It
Was a Call From Thobela

Call Convo

Me: Hello Stranger

Thobela: Haha Really?

Me: Yes I Don't Know You Anymore

Thobela: Just After The Saga Between Your

Brother And Litha,I Thought I Should Give You
Some Time To Cool Off

Me: You Weren't Part Of It

Thobela: But I Tried To Defend Litha

Me: You Were Just Being A Good Friend

Thobela: So Does That Mean You Ain't Mad At
Me?

Me: Why Would I Be?

Thobela: I Swear You The Best,So Whatchu
Doing?

Me: Lying On a Hospital Bed?

Thobela: Haa What Happened?

Me: Just Had Lower Abdomenal Pains

Thobela: You Pregnant?

Me: Yeap

Thobela: Wow I Didn't Even Notice That The
Last Time I Saw You

Me: You Didn't Have To

Thobela: So Is The Baby Okay?

Me: Yeah The Baby Is Okay

Thobela: So Is The Father In The Picture?

Me: It's Complicated

Thobela: Then Let's Not Talk Bout That,Uhnm
So When Can I See You?

Me: I'll Tell You When My Body Has Fully
Recovered

Thobela: I'll Hear From You Then

Me: Sure Thing

Thobela: You Should Get Your Sleep Then

Me: Bye

Thobela: Good Night

Me: Night To You Too Hun

He Hung Up And I Tried To Sleep And Finally

Did.I Woke Up The Following Day To Lutho
Kissing My Hand Which Was In His

Me: Hi

Lutho: Hey Sugar,How You Feeling?

Me: 10 Times Better Than Yesterday

He Smiled And Pecked My Lips

Lutho: I'm Glad You And Princess Are Okay,I
Was Worried And Sick.I Really Can't Lose You
Guys

Me: We're Fine

Lutho: How Bout We Do That Scan Here,Today?

Me: Fine By Me.Do You Think We Can Know The
Gender At This Period?

Lutho: I Don't Know Bbe We'll Ask The Doctor

Me: The Doctor Came Back With The Results
Last Night

Lutho: And?

Me: Too Much Stressed Caused The Pain

Lutho: Uhhm I'm So Sorry Sugar, This Is All My
Fau-

Me: No It's Not

He Kissed My Forehead And Laid Next To Me

Lutho: I've Been Thinking

Me: Bout What?

Lutho: You And Princess Mean A Lot To Me And
I Want To Spend The Rest Of My Life With
You And I Don't Want Princess To Grow Up Without
Her Father Present In Her Life

Me: What If It's Gonna Be A He?

Lutho: I Told You That I Can Feel It In My Blood
That It's Gonna Be A Girl

Me: You Seem So Sure

Lutho: I Am.As I Was Sayin',I Want Our Kids To
Know How It's Like To Be Loved By A Father.I
Want To Have The Kinda Relationship You Have
Witcho Father With Princess

Me: You Gonna Make Me Cry

Lutho Kissed My Forehead

Lutho: I Love You Sugar.I Know I Didn't Have
The Right To Do What I Did The Last Few
Weeks But I Was Lonely,I Blamed Myself For
Errthing.I Just Wanted To Get My Mind Off
Things

Me: But Sleepin' With Every Girl You Met Lutho??

Lutho: I Know It Was Wrong Of Me And I'm

Gonna Do Everything In My Power To Make
Things Right

Me: I Don't Think I Can Do This Anymore Lutho

He Sat Up Straight And Looked At Me

Lutho: What Do You Mean?

Me: Lutho Our Relationship Is Toxic, We Always
Fightin' And Everytime We Seem Happy
Something Always Comes Up

Lutho: Everyone Is Always Fightin' In Their
Relationships And That's How Relationships Are

Me: This Is Too Much For Me Lutho

Lutho: Esihle Are You Breakin' Up With Me?

Me: All I Need Is A Break

Lutho: A Break?? You Fuckin' Kiddin' Me?

An Old Lady Got In,We Both Looked At Her

Lutho: Ain't You Lost Ma?

Lady: I'm Looking For My Granddaughter

Me: I Think You Lost

Lady: Aren't You Esihle?

Me: I Am Esihle,Who Are You?

She Came To Me And Hugged The Living Shit
Outta Me While She Sobbed

Lady: Ohh My Child OBJ: '(

Me: Sorry Ma But I Don't Know You

Lady: Your Mother Left With You When You
Were Young,I'm Your Father's Mother.

Me: Sorry Ma But I Still Don't Know You

Lady: I'm Lonwabo's Mother,Your Grandmother



THE FUCK????

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT45 ♡

Me: WHAT???? :o

WHAT?? :o :o

Lady: I Know You Probably Shocked To See Me

Me: Hell Yes I Am! Why Did You Come Now??

Lady: I Didn't Know How To Approach You Or
Your Mother, I Was Scared Of Your Mother's

Husband

Me: Why?

Lady: He's The One Who Killed Your Father

Lutho Looked At Me In Shock

Lutho: Uhhm I Think I Should Get Going,I'll See You Later Sugar

Me: Bye

He Kissed My Forehead Then Walked Out

Me: He Did It To Protect Mom

Lady: So You Know?

Me: They Told Me.Your Son Treated Mom Like Trash,I'm Glad She Found Someone Else Who Treated Me As His Own Daughter

Lady: He Had A Heart You Know,He Loved Your Mother

Me: He Beat Her Up In My Presence,He Left Her With Nothing When He Found Something Better [OBJ]:'(Where Is His Wife And Child Now? The Ones He Left Us For? [OBJ]:'(

Lady: But He Didn't Have To Die

Me:.....

Lady: I Know He Wasn't A Saint But He Loved You And Your Mother

Me: WOULD YOU BEAT UP SOMEONE YOU LOVE?

Lady: That Was Wrong Of Him And He Wanted To Right That Wrong But Your Mother Didn't Give Him The Chance To,She Just Sent Out Her Gangster Husband To Kill My Son,My One And Only Child [OBJ]:'(

Okay It Was Sad To See An Old Lady Cry But

That Was My Father She Was Talkin' Bout

Me: That's My Father You Talkin' Bout And He Killed My Rea- He Killed Your Son Coz He Wanted To Protect Me And Mom. Clearly You Don't Know Everything That Went Down

Lady: He Was Your Father Esihle, He Loved You

Me: Then He Had A Funny Way Of Showing It. How Did You Find Me?

Lady: Your Mother Told Me Where I Could Find You

Me: WHAT??

Lady: She Knew How Much This Would Mean To Me

Me: What Do You Want?

Lady: I Didn't Wanna Die Without Seeing You My Child, I Wanna Go To My Grave Knowing That You're Well Fed And Treated Well

Me: As You Can See,I'm Perfectly Perfect

Lady: Your Mother Told Me That You're Pregnant

Me: I Am

Lady: Is He The Father? (Pointing At The Door)

Me: He Who?

Lady: The Young Man I Found You Here With

Me: Yes He Is

Lady: Don't You Think You're Too Young To Have A Chi-

Me: I Think You Should Go

Lady: Esihle I'm-

Me: Please Leave

Lady: Okay I'm Going But We Still Need To Talk

Me: If You Gonna Lecture Me Bout My Pregnancy Then Keep It To Yourself

Lady: I'll Go To Your Mother's House,I Need To

Talk To Them Too

Me: Good Luck On Gettin' Inside Dad's Yard

She Kissed My Hand And Left,I Got Up And
Went To Take A Bath.Dad Arrived And Signed
Papers For My Discharge And He Drove Us
Home

Dad: Wassup Princess?

Me: Nothing Dad Why?

Dad: You've Been Quiet

Me: I'm Just Thinkin'

Dad: Care To Share?

Me: Nhaa I'm Fine Dad

Dad: You Know You Can Tell Me Everything
Right?

I Nodded And He Rubbed His Hand On Mine

Me: So Vusi Is Really Back With Inam?

Dad: Yes And I'm Kinda Happy They Solved Things

Me: Ohh?

Dad: Your Brother Hasn't Been Himself Ever Since They Broke Things Off,Even Though He Fucks 'Round,He Loves Her

Me: Just Like You Love Mom?

Dad: Your Mom's My Everything

Me: Can I Ask You Somethin'?

Dad: Shoot

Me: You Haven't Given Me My Own Gun Yet

Dad: And I Won't Anytime Soon,I'm Not Ready To Spend Millions In Court Rooms Yet

Me: Dad!

Dad: For Real

Me: Only Vusi Would Make You Do That

Dad: So Whatchu Wanna Talk Bout?

Me: Uhhhm Was My Rea- Was Lonwabo By Any
Chance A Good Man?

I Saw Dad's Face Changing,I Touched A No Go
Thingy

Dad: Why You Askin' Me That?

Me: It's Just That I Uhhm I-

Dad: You What?

Me: You Know What? Never Mind

Dad: Esihle!

Me: Let's Let It Slide Dad

Dad: Cool

We Both Kept Quiet,We Got Home And I Went To My Room And Tried To Sleep.Dad Went Back To Work,Vusi Wasn't 'round So I Was All Alone.

I Went Back To The Lounge And Watched a Movie,Vusi Got In With Elethu

Elethu: Esihle!

Me: Hi

Vusi: Pregnancy Moods,Don't Mind Her

Elethu: You Still Beautiful

Me: Thanks

Vusi: We'll Be In My Room

Me:.....

Elethu: So I Won't Be Gettin' No Hello Hug Or Kiss?

Me: I Ain't Your Friend Elethu

Vusi: Ouch!

Elethu: O-kay

Me: Just Leave Already

Vusi Laughed And They Walked To His Room, I
Fell Asleep On The Couch And Woke Up To
Someone Touchin' My Face. It Was Lutho

Lutho: Hey

Me: Hi, Whatchu Doing Here?

Lutho: Just Knocked Off At Work And I Thought
I Should Come And Check Up On You

Me: You Saw That I Was Okay This Morning

Lutho: I Guess I Missed You

Me: I See

Lutho: I've Got Good News

Me: Oh?

He Put My Head On His Lap

Lutho: Dad Signed Over The Shares To Mom

Me: That's Good I Guess

Lutho: And Guess What?

Me: What?

Lutho: I Said Guess

Me: I Can't, Just Talk Already

Lutho: You're Lookin' At The Company's New
Major Share Holder

Me: WHAT???? :D

Lutho: Yeap

Me: Wow Congratulations

Lutho: Thanks Bbe

I Hugged Him,I Was Really Happy For Him Like Really Really Happy.It Was Always His Dream To Own A Company That Big

Me: So Did Your Mom Give The Shares To You?

Lutho: I Bought Them

Me: And Your Father?

Lutho: Who Cares Bout Him?

Me: Lutho!

Lutho: Bbe This Is My Day So We Should Go And Celebrate,The Guys Are Throwing A Party For Me

Me: I'm Sorry I Can't Go,I Still Need To Take It Easy And Relax

Lutho: Okay Whatever Is Good For Princess And Her Mommy....This Is A Big Step In My Life And Now I'll Be Able To Take Care Of You,Princess And The Tons Of Other Babies We Gonna Make

Me: Lutho Look I Meant What I Said At The Hospital

He Looked At Me And I Could See His Jaw Tightening

Lutho: Am I Boring You Or Not Good Enough For You Esihle?

Me: Lutho You Perfect Bu-

Lutho: But What? What's Your Problem?

Me: You Cheated On Me Lutho!

Lutho: Are You Being For Real Right Now? I Apologized Didn't I? Esihle You Ignored Me, You Changed Your Number, What Did You Expect?

Me: I Expected My Boyfriend To Understand And Stick 'Round

Lutho: When You Were Pushing Me Away?

Me: If You Loved Me You Wouldn't Have Done

What You Did

Lutho: What? Esihle Are You Listening To Yourself?

Me: You Cheated Lutho

Lutho: If I'd Ignore Your Calls And Change My Number How Would You Feel?

Me:..... [OBJ]:'

Lutho: Exactly

He Took His Car Keys And Left,Vusi Came To The Lounge

Vusi: You Okay?

Me: You Heard That?

Vusi: You Were A Bit Too Loud

Me: Why Am I Like This To Him Vusi?

Vusi: Probably Pregnancy

Me: I'm A Bad Girlfriend Aren't I?

Vusi: I'm Sure It's Just Your Pregnancy

He Hugged Me

Elethu: I Wouldn't Hurt You Like He Does If You Gave Me The Chance To Love You

Me: Fuck You Elethu

Vusi: You For Real Dude?

Elethu: Just Kiddin' But I Would've Treated Her Like The Queen She Is

Vusi: Psssh A Player Like You?

Elethu: I'd Turn From Bad To Good For Her

He Sat Down And Put His Feet On The Table

Elethu: Lemme Search For A Rom Com For

You,Vusi Get Her Some Ice Cream.I Heard That This Is The Best Mood Booster For Most Girls

Me: You For Real?

Elethu: Even Though You Broke My Heart By Turning My Date Offer Down,I Still Care

Me: Haha Thanks

Elethu: Vusi Did You See That? I Made Her Smile

Vusi: Yeah Ayt

Vusi Came With An Ice Cream Tub And We All Ate From It While They Sandwiched Me In Between Them.Mom,Dad And The Twins Got In With "Lonwabo's Mom"

Me: What Is She Doing Here?

Dad: Ask Sisanda Morena

I Could See The Irritation And Anger On Dad's Face

Dad: I Can't Believe You Didn't Tell Me The Truth When I Asked You Why You Asked Me Bout Lonwabo Princess

Me: I Just Saw How Angry My Question Made You

Mom: Bbe Look I Was J-

Dad: Sis and a Don't Talk To Me

Vusi: We'll Be In My Room,Let's Go Twins

They Left,The Old Lady Sat Down So Did My Parents

Dad: What Do You Want?

Lady: I Know You Scared We Might Want To Take Esihle Away

Dad: Haha Scared? Why Would I Be Scared?
Even If You'd Try To, My Daughter Wouldn't
Leave This House

Mom: Bbe Plea-

Dad: Sisanda I Said Don't Talk To Me

Mom: Fine!

Lady: Before We Talk Bout What I Came Here
For, I'm A Bit Disappointed In The Way You
Raised My Granddaughter

Dad: I Beg Your Pardon?

Lady: How Could You Let a 16 Year Old Get
Pregnant? It's Clear You Can't Raise Kids Well

Mom: I Think That's Too Much

Lady: I Knew The Minute You Left My Son That
Nothing Would Ever Go Right And You Let This
Thug Of Yours Kill My Son And Steal His
Daughter

Dad: Say Whatchu Came Here To Say Or Take

Your Flat Ass Off My Couch And Outta My House

Lady: Before Lonwabo Died,He Signed Half Of His Business Shares To Esihle.I Think It's Time I Give Everything Over To Her

Dad: I Think It's Time You Go,Esihle Ain't Takin' Anything From You Or Anyone From Your Family.She's My Daughter And She Doesn't Need Anything From You.Now Out!

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT46 ♡

The Room Went Dead

Dad: We're Done Here!

Dad Walked Up The Stairs To His Room And Banged The Door Behind

Lady: And You Think It Is Good For My Grandchild To Stay In A House With Someone Like That

Mom: Musa Loves Esihle

Lady: Loves Her? He Ain't His Real Father Sisanda

Me: For Your Information,He Loves Me Like His Own Daughter.Sometimes To Get Along With Someone,You Don't Need To Be Connected By Blood.He Loves Me Even With Zero Drops Of His Blood In My Blood,Unlike Your Son Who Happened To Be My Real Father.Someone Who Ejaculated His Sperm Insida Mom To Fertilize The Egg I Was In

Lady: Mind Your Language Young Lady! You See, You Can't Even Teach Kids The Appropriate Language To Use With This Husband Of Yours Sisanda

Mom: You Know What? I Think It's Time For You To Go

Dad Came Back, Shirtless, Exposing All His Tattoos

Dad: You're Still Here?

Lady: Who On Earth Did You Marry Sisanda?

Me: My Dad, She Married A Person Who Became The Father Your Son Couldn't Be, The Man Who Raised Me And Loved Me All These Years, I Don't Know Why You Even Wasted The Energy Left In You By Coming Here OBJ: '(

I Got Up And Went To My Room,I Threw Myself
On The Bed.

I Was Mad At The Lady For Diggin' Up An
Ancient Grave And Acting All Holy,Makin' My
Father Look Bad.

Someone Opened My Door

Dad: Princess

Me:.....

He Came To Sit On The Bed

Dad: Sit Up

Me: I Just Want To Be Alone

Dad: I'm Not Leavin' Till We Talk

I Got Up And Looked At Him,He Wiped My Tears

And Kissed My Forehead

Dad: Was I Wrong For Throwing Your Grandma Out?

Me: She's Not My Grandmother, Both Of My Grandmothers Are Back In The Eastern Cape

Dad: Look You Don't Have To Act Like You Don't Want Her Just To Please Me, You Can Also Have Your Word In This But I Was Just Angry Back There

Me: Are You Mad At Mom?

Dad:.....

Me: She Thought What She Was Doing Was Best For Everyone

Dad: Your Mom And I Will Fix Our Issues Like We Always Do

Me: I Hope Divorce Won't Be No Solution

Dad: It Won't Bbe

Me: Thanks Dad

I Hugged Him

Dad: Your Grandmas Will Be Here For The Reunion

Me: REALLY? :D :)

Dad: Yes

Me: I Can't Wait To Spend Some Time With Them,EspeciallyGranny From Your Side

Dad: You And Vusi Are Weird Though

Me: Huh?

Dad: Vusi Is More Fond Of Your Mother Than Me While It's The Opposite To You,The Same Thing Goes To Your Grandmothers

Me: Your Marriage With Mom Was Meant To Be

Dad: Trust Me I Know.Look Get Some Rest,We'll

Call You When Dinner Is Ready

Me: I Also Don't Want Those Shares, You Gave Me My Own Share From Yours Which Is Absolutely Perfect For Me, I Don't Need Lonwabo's Money

Dad: Get Some Rest Okay?!

He Kissed My Cheek And Got Up

Me: Have You Told The Grannies Bout My Pregnancy?

Dad: Pumpkin And I Planned On Tellin' Them When They Are Here

Me: They Gonna Kill Me

Dad: They Gonna Kill Us First

Me: Haha I Can Imagine Grandma Toasting Your Asses

Dad: We Should Get Our Asses Ready, Maybe

Do The Seasoning For Them

Me: Haha Dad You Crazy

Dad: I Took After Your Grandmother

Me: I Love You Daddy

Dad: I Love You Too Princess

He Walked And Closed The Door.I Just Played
Some Games On My Phone Till Thobela Called

Call Convo

Thobela: Hello Beautiful

Me: You Makin' Me Blush,Hello

Thobela: You Really Beautiful,So How Are You
Today?

Me: Better Than The Day You Called And You?

Thobela: Now That You're Good,I'm Good

Too. When Can We Go Out?

Me: Tomorrow I Guess, I'm Okay Now

Thobela: I'll Pick You Up At 9

Me: Don't Be Late

Thobela: I'd Never Be Late If It's For A Lady Like You

Me: You Makin' Me Blush

Thobela: I'm Glad I'm Makin' You Blush, I'll See You Tomorrow

Me: Bye

Vusi Got In And Sat On The Bed Next To Me

Vusi: Mom Is Done With Dinner They Said I Should Call You

Me: Let's Go Down Then

Vusi: Wassup With Mom And Dad?

Me: It's A Long Story

Vusi: Make It Short

Me: Mom Told Lonwabo's Mom Where To Find Me

Vusi: Was That Your Grandma?

Me: She's Not My Grandmother

Vusi: O-kay,So What Did She Come Here For?

Me: To Give Me Half Of Lonwabo's Shares That He Left For Me

Vusi: Bitch You Rich As Hell

Me: Ohh Please

Vusi: So How Much Do They Worth?

Me: I Don't Know And I Don't Care

Vusi: Whoa Are You Tryna Tell Me That You Won't Be Takin' Those Shares?

Me: I Can't Take Them

Vusi: What?? Why?

Me: Coz I Don't Want Them

Vusi: Is This All Bout Dad?

Me: What?

Vusi: I Saw How Mad He Was Back There,Look
Lil Sis

Me: I Ain't Younger Than You

Vusi: Whatever,But You Should Do What You
Want For Yourself Not Anyone Else,Do What's
Best For You Not Dad.That's Your Future,It's
What's Rightfully Yours.I'm Sure Dad Will
Understand,Dad Is Just Scared Of Losing You
To Your Real Family.Just Take The Money,That
Doesn't Mean You're Disrespecting His Love For
You,You're Just Doing What's Good For Yourself

Me: I Can't Believe You Can Day Something So
Saneful

Vusi: Bitch Don't Start

Me: Okay Fine Sorry

We Both Went To Eat With The Family

Me: I Have Something To Say To You Mom And Dad

Dad: What Is It Princess?

Me: You Know That I Love You Right Dad?! And I'm Grateful For Your Love, For Raising Me And Being The Best Father Anyone Could Ever Wish For

Dad: What Is It Princess?

Me: I'm Gonna Take That 50% Share From Lonwabo

Dad:..... [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

Mom: What? But I Thou-

Me: It's What's Rightfully Mine

Mom: Are You Sure?

Me: Yes I'm Sure,I Know You Didn't Want Me To
Take It Dad But It's For My Future

Dad: Do What You Wanna Do Esihle

With That Said,He Got Up

Me: Dad I-

Dad: I'm Going To Bed

Me: But Da-

Vusi: Just Let Him Be

Mom: Musa Can You Please Just Hear The Kid
Out

Dad Just Walked To His Room Without Lookin'
Back

Mom: I'll Call Your Grandma And Tell Her That

You Changed Your Mind

Me: She's Not My Grandma

Mom: Okay Sorry

We Finished Eating And Mom Washed The
Dishes,I Went To Knock On Dad's Door

Me: Dad It's Me

Dad:.....

Me: Can We Please Talk?

Dad: Go To Sleep Princess

At Least He Called Me Princess

Me: Please Dad

Dad: We'll Talk Tomorrow,I Wanna Sleep Now

I Walked To Vusi's Room And Found Him Only
In His Boxers,Listening To F*ck Witchu By Pia
Mia And G Eazy

Me: Who Do You Wanna Fuck With?

Vusi: And What If I Say It's You?

Me: Then Fuck You

I Got In And Sat On His Bed

Vusi: So Wassup?

Me: Dad Is Mad At Me

Vusi: Just Give Him Time,He'll Calm Down

Me: You Know I Can't Take A Day With Dad Mad
At Me

Vusi: Then You'll Have To Take These Few

Comin' Days

Me: Arg I Hate My Life,Dad's Mad At Me,Lutho Is Also Mad

Vusi: Have You Tried Callin' Him?

Me: Do I Have To?

Vusi: Esihle

Me: He Also Cheated Vusi

Vusi: You Love Him Ayt?

Me:.....

Vusi: Fix Things For The Baby

Me:.....

He Came To Me And Hugged Me

Me: Thanks Bro

Vusi: Now Get Your Big Ass Outta My Room

Me: Mxm

I Went To My Room And Fell Asleep,The Following Day The Rents Went To Work And Dad Left Earlier Than Usual Without Even Eating Breakfast With Us.The Twins Left For School,Vusi Went Out With Inam.I Gave Thobela Directions To My House And He Arrived.We Had To Walk To The Rank Coz He Didn't Have A Car But That Didn't Bother Me Coz I Enjoyed The Walk.

He Got To A Taxi To His Street

Me: I Thought You Were Takin' Me Out

Thobela: Change Of Plans,We're Going To My House

Me: Your House?

Thobela: Mom Wants To See You And She's Cookin'

Me: Thobela Your Mom? Why Didn't you Tell Me This Before??

Everyone In The Taxi Looked At Us

Thobela: Don't Worry Mom Likes You Already

Me: She Doesn't Know Me Thobela

Thobela: She Knows Everything There Is To Know

Me: Bu-

Thobela: Just Trust Me

We Got Off And Walked To His House,I Was Freakin' Out.We Got In And Found A Lady Cookin' In The Kitchen

Thobela: Mom We're Here

She Came To Us And Hugged Me

T's Mom: She's Beautiful

Thobela: I Know Hey

Me: Thanks Ma

T's Mom: The Food Is Almost Ready, Pour Some Drink For Both Of You

Thobela: Don't Those People From Suburbs Drink Wine Or Champagne?

T's Mom: Pregnant Women Don't, There's Juice In The Fridge

Me: What?? You Told Her?

T's Mom: He Had To Tell Me Everything, So How Far Are You With The Pregnancy?

Me: Three Months

T's Mom: What Happened Between You And

The Father?

Me: Uhhm Things Are A Bit Complicated

T's Mom: That's What Happened Between Me
And Thobela's Father,He Even Wanted Me To
Abort The Baby

Thobela: But She Didn't And I'll Forever Be
Grateful For That

T's Mom: It's Like I Knew That My Boy Boy
Would Grow Up To Be This Loving And Kind Big
Boy

Thobela: Mom Stop Callin' Me Boy Boy

T's Mom: You'll Forever Be Young To Me

We All Sat Down And Ate Together,I Must Say
Thobela's Mom Was A Nice,Loving Soul.My
Phone Rang,It Was A Call From a Number

Call Convo

Me: Hi

Caller: Hey Esihle, Your Mother Told Me That You Changed Your Mind And I Want You To Sign The Papers Today Witcho Partner

Me: Where?

She Told Me Where To Meet Her And I Said Goodbye To T's Mom And Caught A Taxi To Where We Had To Meet.

The Old Lady Was With A Guy But I Couldn't See Him Coz He Was Facing The Other Side. I Got To Them And Sat Down

"Hey Partner"

THE FUCK?? FUCK ME SIDE WAY!! THE HELL??

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT47 ♡

YOU GATTA BE KIDDIN' ME!! MENZI?? OUTTA ALL THE PEOPLE IN THE WORLD BUT MENZI?? THE HELL?? This Guy Is Really Determined To Become The Biggest Business Tycoon, First He Worked For Dad, Got His Uncle's Inheritance And Now He's My Partner

Menzi: Esihle

Me: Menzi

Lonwabo's Mom: You Know Each Other?

Menzi: Ohh We Do, We Do Very Well

L's Mom: Then I Guess You'll Work Well Together, Esihle This Is Your Partner. The Other Person Who Owns The Other 50% Of Your Father's Empire

Me: But How?

Menzi: I Bought It, Esihle Business Means Everything To Me So I Found Out That They Were Selling That 50% So I Went After It. I'm Sure We'll Work Perfectly Fine Together Ma, Her Father's A Business Man, I'm Sure She Learnt A Thing Or Two From Him

L's Mom: In That Case Sign The Papers Then Esihle

Me: I Need To Go Through The Contract First And I Still Need To Think So Gimme The Papers Then I'll Give Em To You When I've Signed Them

Menzi: And When Will That Be?

Me: When I've Made Up My Mind, I Said I Need To Think First

L's Mom: Let's Order Something Then And Celebrate Your Partnership

Me: I Have Somewhere To Go To

Menzi: Lemme Walk You Out Then

Me: Menzi I'll Be F-

Menzi: We Need To Get To Know Each Other Better Than Before Now That We'll Be Partners

L's Mom: Menzi Is Right,I'll Order Something For Myself While You Walk Her Out Menzi

Dammit! Now I Had To Work With The Idiot!
And I Knew He Was Rejoicing Inside

Menzi: I Thought Maybe Lutho Drove You Here

Me: He Ain't My Driver

Menzi: O-kay

Me: What Do You Want Menzi?

Menzi: We Both Know You Know Nothing Bout Business

Me: So?

Menzi: Just Sell Your 50% To Me

Me: WHAT??

Menzi: We Both Know We Can't Work Together Unless You Want Us To Be Up On Each Other's Throats Everyday Or Start Some Office Romance

Me: You So Full Of Yourself

Menzi: Aren't I The Full Package?

Me: Bye Menzi

I Made My Way To Few Baby Shops And Did Some Window Shopping While I Waited For Vusi To Pick Me Up.He Finally Arrived And He Was With Inam.I Sat At The Back Of The Ford While They Played Lovey Dovey At The Front,I

Was Just Too Stressed Out, Had A Lot On My Mind To Think Bout Their Relationship

Vusi: What Do You Think Lil Sis?

Me: Uhhm?

Inam: Where Are You?

Me: At The Back Of Vusi's Car With Some Love Birds

Vusi: Inam And I Wanna Go On A One Day Or Two Day Vacation After The Reunion, Where Do You Think We Should Go?

Me: I Don't Know, I'm Really Not The Right Person To Ask For Advice Right Now

Vusi: I Can See, Maybe Elethu Can Help Me Out

Me: Please Don't Invite Him Over

Vusi: FYI Mom Invited Him Over For The Reunion

Me: I Hate Your Mother

Vusi: I'm So Telling

Me: Elethu Is Boring

Vusi: Then You'll Have To Learn To Live With Him 'Round For A Whole Week

Me: Then Get Ready To Bury Me

Inam: He Ain't That Bad

Me: To You

We Got Home And I Just Sat In The Lounge And Watched T.V While Inam And Vusi Went To Make Love In Vusi's Room.Elethu Got In

Elethu: Miss Morena

Me: He's In His Room,Fuckin With His Girlfriend

Elethu: Girlfriend Or Side Bitch?

Me: So He Still Got Some Dishes On The Side?

Elethu: Any Man Needs One

Me: Ohh Really?

Elethu: But I Wouldn't Need Em If I'd Have You

Me: Mxm

Elethu: You Really Don't Want Me Don't You?

Me: What Am I Gonna Do Witchu Elethu?

Elethu: Fuck Me Good,Rock My Bed,Make My-

Me: Stop Right There

Elethu: I'd Rock Your World You Know

Me: VUSI!

Elethu: Vusi's Busy

Me: He'll Throw You Out And Get Back To Work

Elethu: Yho You Really Hate Me

Me: You Have No Idea How Much

Elethu: Lemme Go And Get Me Some Ice
Cream,Do You Have Some Yoghurt In Here?

Me: You Have Your Own Home You Know?

Elethu: Mrs Morena Said I Should Feel At Home Here And I'm Sure She'd Be Happy If I'd Be Her Son In Law

Me: You So Full Of Yourself

He Chuckled And Went To The Kitchen,He Came Back With A Full Ice Cream Bowl With Ice Cream And Yoghurt.He Sat In Front Of Me And Ate The Ice Cream

Me: It's Rude To Eat In Front Of a Lady

Elethu: Want Some?

Me: Isn't That Blatant?

Elethu: Gimme A Kiss Then I'll Share Witchu

Me: Gross

Elethu: I'm A Good Kisser Baby

Me: Jeah Ayt

Elethu: So I've Been Told.I've Kissed Thousands Of Girls And They All Told Me How Good I Was

Me: I'm Sure You Got Thousands of Infections As Well

Elethu: I Go To A Dentist Sweetheart

Me: I Forgot That Your Parents Are Stinkin' Rich

Elethu: And Their Empire Will Be Mine,Don't You Want Me To Share It With You

Me: No Thanks I'm Fine With What I Have

Elethu: I Wonder What I Have To Do To Get You,Baby You Really Don't Want Me

Me: Finally You Get It Into Your Thin Skull

Elethu: Enough Bout Me,Did You Fix Things Witcho Baby Daddy?

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout That

Ekethu: I Guess You Really Need This Ice Cream

He Took Out a Spoon From His Pocket And
Came To Sit Next To Me

Me: How Did You Know That I Was Gonna Want
It?

Elethu: Lemme Say I Can Read Minds

Me: Yeah Ayt So Tell Me,Who's Your Perfect
One?

Elethu: Perfect One?

Me: Your Mrs

Elethu: I Got Non Yet,I'm Still Waiting For You

Me: You Gonna Wait For Eternity

Elethu: Yho

Me: Yeah

Elethu: I Haven't Met The Main Chick Material
So I'm Just Tappin' And Passin' Ayt Now

Me: You And Vusi Though

Elethu: What Do We Do When Our Chosen Ones Don't Want Us?

Me: Chosen Ones?

Elethu: Don't You Know You My Chosen One?

Me: Yeah Right

Vusi And Inam Also Joined Us,Mom And Dad Came Back From Work And I Went To Dad's Office,Brought Him Some Coffee And Biscuits.I Knocked

Dad: I'm Busy

Me: It Won't Take Long Dad

Dad: Okay Come In

I Got In

Dad: Just What I Needed

Me: Extra Sugar With Eat Some More On The Side

Dad: You The Best

Me: Anything For The Best Dad In The World

I Put The Tray On The Table

Dad: Come Here (Tappin' His Lap)

I Sat On His Lap And Hugged Him First

Dad: You Know Daddy Loves You Right?!

Me: And Princess Loves Daddy Too

Dad: So Tell Me,Whatchu Gonna Do With So Much Money In Your Hands? I Hope You Won't Be Buying Dresses Or Dolls

Me: Dad!

Dad: Haha What? You Still A Baby

Me: I'm Soon Gonna Be A Mom Dad

Dad: That's Why I Want You To Make A Wise
Grown Up Decision

Me: I'll Just Sell The Shares,You Won't Believe
Who Own The Other Half

Dad: Who?

Me: Menzi

Dad: Whoa

Me: Yeap

Dad: That Boy Is Smart

Me: And He Irritates Me

Dad: He Takes Every Business Opportunity
Presenting Itself

Me: Don't Tell Me You Fallin' In Love With Him

Dad: Ohh Please,I Just Like His Business Mind

Me: He Really Got The Mind

Dad: Don't Sell Your Shares, You Also Should Build Something For You On The Side. I Don't Want You And Vusi To Think I Don't Want You To Explore

Me: Thanks Daddy

Dad: Everything For My Princess

Me: So You Not Mad At Me?

Dad: Not At All

I Kissed His Cheek And Went To Sign The Contract, I Texted L's Mom And Told Her To Fetch It The Following Day. I Had A Check Up The Following Day So I Texted Lutho And Asked Him To Accompany Me, He Really Came To Fetch Me The Following Day And Drove Us To My Doctor

Me: I'm Sorry Bout My Attitude Towards You

Lutho: Fede

Me: I'm Really Sorry Bbe

Lutho: Whatever Esihle

We Got To The Doctor And She Checked My Everything,My Blood Pressure Was Still High But Not Higher Than When I Went To The Hospital.Lutho Asked For The Doctor To Do Our First Scan,She Applied Some Gel On My Tummy And Did Her Thing.Lutho Held My Hand

Doc: There's Our Lil Munchkin

Lutho And I Both Looked At Each Other Then At The Screen

Doc: The Baby Is Perfectly Fine,Keep On

Maintaining Your Blood Pressure Levels

Lutho: She Will Doc

Me: Thanks Doctor

The Doctor Gave Me A Tissue To Wipe The Gel

Lutho: Let Me

He Wiped It And Kept Stealing Glances At Me

Lutho: Thanks For This Beautiful Gift Bbe

Me: [OBJ]:)

Lutho: I Can't Wait To Hold Her In My Hands

Me: You Will Soon Soon

He Pecked My Lips And We Both Walked To His

Car After The Doctor Gave Us The Scan Picture

Me: I Missed You

Lutho:.....

Me: Lutho Can We Please Fix Things? I Can't Stand This Tension

My Phone Rang,It Was Thobela

Call Convo

Me: Hey I'm Kinda Busy So Call Some Other Time

Thobela: I Can't Hear You But Mom Said She Enjoyed Your Company And Wants You To Visit Again

Me: Uhhm Really?

Thobela: Yes She Likes You And I Also Wanna Spend Some Time With That Beautiful You

Me: Uhhm Kay Then But I Gotta Go So Bye

I Hung Up

Lutho: It's Rude To Hang Up On Someone

Me:.....

Lutho: You Want Us To Fix Things While You've Moved On,Who Is He?

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT48 ♡

I Just Kept Quiet And Played With My Hands

Lutho: So You Found A Step Father For Princess?

Me: Thobela Is Not My Boyfriend

Lutho: So His Name Is Thobela...I'm Sure You
Two Have Kissed

Me: No!

Lutho:.....

Me: Lutho Am I Really Have To Be The One
Running After You,Askin' For Us To Fix Things
While You The One Who Fucked Up?? The Way I
See This,This Relationship Is Lopsided

Lutho: It's Good To Know That There's Still A
Relationship

The Fuck?? OBJ:o OBJ:'(Did He Just Say What He
Said?

Me: Wow

Lutho: If You Really Want Us To Fix Things, Act Like It!

Me: While You Act As The Saint, Pinning Errthing On Me While You Were The One Fuckin' Different Bitches Errday?? FORGET IT LUTHO!

Lutho: Esihle Are You For Real?

Me: Just Stop Talkin' To Me Lutho

Lutho: Fine

Me: FINE!

We Both Kept Quiet Till We Got To My House, I Took My Bag And Opened The Door

Me: Thanks For The Ride

Lutho:.....

Me: O-kay

Lutho: I Know You Said I Should Not Talk To You But Mom Said I Should Bring Her The Scan

Me: Last Time I Checked She Had A Stinkin' Attitude Towards Me

Lutho: Yeah You,Not The Baby

Me: If She Wants It,Tell Her To Come And Get It From Me

Lutho: Just Close The Door I Wanna Go Esihle

Me: FINE!

I Banged The Door

Lutho: Esihle! ESIHLE MORENA!

I Showed Him Both Of My Middle Fingers And Walked To My House,He Sped Away And Drove Like He Wanted To Kill Himself Or Maybe Someone.

I Found Everyone In The Lounge,Including
Elethu

Mom: So Much Drama In Front Of My Yard

Vusi: You And Lutho Need To Have Your Own
Reality Show,You'd Make Bucks

Dad: So Can We See The Scan?

Me: Yeah Sure

I Took It Out Of My Bag And And Gave It To Dad

Me: I'll Be In My Room

Elethu: Need Some Massage? I'd Do That For
Free

Me: Thanks For The Offer But I'm Cool

Ithandile: I Want You To Do Something With My
Hair

Me: Something?

Ithandile: Anything, I Can't Spend This Holiday With This Sponge On My Head

Mom: Aren't You The One Who Wanted This Much Afro?

Ithandile: I Am But Mom Afro Is Running Outta Trend

Dad: Yho

Ithandile: Dad You're A Business Man, Mom Is a...What Are You Mom?

Asithandile: Yhoo You Don't Even Know How Your Mother Gets Her Money

Ithandile: As If You Do

Asithandile: Ohh FYI I Do And I've Been To Her Work So Many Times

Ithandile: Whatever

Me: I'll See What I Can Do When I've Had My Rest

Dad: I See The Sugarplum Is Growing

Me: Yeah And The Doctor Said The Baby Is
Okay And Healthy

Dad: It's Good To Hear That

I Walked To My Room And Threw Myself On My
Bed,I Took My Phone And Looked At My
Pictures With Lutho,Our Crazy Joyful Times
Together.I Just Found Myself Crying,Someone
Knocked On My Door

Inam: It's Me Baby Open Up

Me: It's Opened

She Got In Jumping Up And Down,I Just Looked
At Her

Inam: Wassup?

Me: Lutho And I Fought

Inam: Did You Start The Fight Or?

Me: Really??

Inam: You Can Also Be Hard On People Bbe You Know That

Me: You Not Helping

Inam: Just Swallow Your Pride And Go And Talk Things Through Witcho Man

Me: Lutho Is The One Who Fucked Up

Inam: And You're The One Who Has To Bring Peace In Your Relationship,Baby There's Also A Baby On The Way Involved In This

Me: I Ain't Gonna Say Sorry To Someone Who Cheated On Me,Lutho Should've Thought Bout Our Baby Before Fuckin' Other Bitches

Inam: So What's Gonna Happen Now?

Me: A Huge Ass Big Gigantic Break Up

I Broke Down After Saying That [OBJ]:'(The
Thought Of Losing Lutho Tore Me Into Tiny
Fragments,I Was Inflicted Big Time [OBJ]:'(

Inam: Come Here

She Hugged Me,I Cried Till I Had Enough

Inam: I Know You Don't Want Lutho To Think
You Can't Live Without Him And Walk All Over
You Like Your Brother Does To Me But Baby
You Really Can't Live Without Him,Fix Things
For Your Baby

Me: Maybe Lutho And I Ain't Meant To
Be,Maybe I'll Find A Man Like Dad Who Will
Love My Child Like His Own And Start a Family
With Him

Inam: That Wouldn't Be Bad Too But Not Every
Man Will Be Like Mr Morena

Me: Yeah I Know,I Just Wanted To Make Myself Feel Better

Inam: Take Your Phone And Call Lutho And Fix Things Witcho Man,You Two Have To Work Things Out

Me: No!

Inam: No?

Me: If Lutho Loves Me,He'll Come Back

Inam: He Loves You But What If He Doesn't Come Back?

Me: Then I'll Know He Was Never The One For Me

Inam: Uhhm Okay Fine Do What You Wanna Do,I'll Just Be A Good Friend And Support You In Whatever

Me: Thanks Bbe....There's This Guy I-

Inam: Is He The Reason You Don't Wanna Fix Things With Lutho?

Me: No!

Inam: Who's This Guy?

Me: His Name Is Thobela,He's 19 And a Deejay.He Took a Gap Year,He Stays With His Mother Who's A Single Mom.Yesterday I Had Lunch With Him And His Mother And She's So Sweet And Kind-Hearted

Inam: Thobela,Litha's Friend?

Me: Yeap

Inam: Yho

Me: I Liked Him Way Before I Knew He Was Friends Witcho Ex

Inam: Does His Mother Know You Pregnant?

Me: Yeah

Inam: With Another Guy's Child Not Her Son's?

Me: Yeap

Inam: Wow

Me: My Expression Exactly

Inam: But This Is Not The Right Time To Be Starting New Relationships With Other Guys

Me: Inam I'm Sure Lutho Has Already Moved On

Inam: So What?

Me: So What?? Did You Just Ask Me That?

Inam: What If You And Lutho Fix Things?

Me: Then We Fix Em

Inam: What Bout Thobela? The Guy Introduced You To His Mother,They Accepted You Together With Lutho's Child So What Will You Say To Them When You And Your Baby's Father Get Back Together?

Me:.....

Inam: Exactly

Me: I Like Him Inam

Inam: And If You Do Like Him,Save Him The Heartache.You Know Your Father Would Never

Let You Marry Or Date Another Guy While Pregnant With Another's Child.He'll Make Sure That You And Lutho Fix Things

Me: [OBJ]:'(I Wish Dad Would Just Let Me Make My Own Decisions

Inam: He'd Never Let You Make Selfish Ones,Think Bout Your Baby.Do You Think Thobela Will Be Happy To See Lutho Coming To His House Everyday To See His Child?

Me: Okay Fine Stop!

Inam: I Just Want You To See Every Side Of This

Me: But I'm Still Not Going To Be The One To Fix Things With Lutho

Inam: Okay Fine Then But Make Sure You Makin' The Right Decision

Me: So What Did You Come Here To Tell Me? I Saw You Comin' Here Jumpin' Up And Down

Inam: Vusi Gave Me a Promise Ring [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:)

Me: A WHAT??

Inam: I Know Hey :) :D

Me: Wow Uhhm I'm Happy For You

Inam: At Least This Shows How Much Our Relationship Means To Him

Me: So He Was Serious When He Said You're Mom's Future Daughter In Law

Inam: You Don't Know How Much This Means To Me

Me: I Know Baby

Inam: I'm Just Glad That He Realised How Much He Means To Me :'(

Me: Hey Don't Cry

Inam: I'm Just Too Happy

Me: I'm Sure You Cried In Front Of Him Too

Inam: I Couldn't Help It

Me: Let's Hope This Means He'll Never Fuck Up

Ever Again

Inam: I Hope So Too

Me: This Deserves A Big Ass Hug

We Hugged And Just Lied On My Bed And Had Our Girl Talk. Later On I Went To Help Mom With Dinner Then We Ate Together. Elethu Was Gonna Spend The Whole Week At Our House OBJ
-_- Great!

Everyone Went To Their Rooms While I Just Watched Some Movies

Elethu: A Pregnant Woman Has To Have Her Beauty Sleep

Me: I Guess I Ain't A Woman Then

Elethu: Can I Join You?

Me: No

He Sat Down And Took The Remote

Me: I Said No

Elethu: I Knew You Were Gonna Say That

Me: Mxm

Elethu: Wanna Talk Bout It?

Me: No

Elethu: Who's The One On The Wrong?

Me: On What?

Elethu: You And Your Baby Daddy

Me: I Said I Don't Wanna Talk Bout It

Elethu: You Have To Talk Bout It,You'll Transfer
Your Bad Spirit To The Innocent Soul Insida You

Me: You So Persistent You Know?

Elethu: So I've Been Told Million Times

Me: We Just Don't See Eye To Eye

Elethu: With Who?

Me: Who Were You Askin' Me Bout?

Elethu: Ohh Baby Daddy

Me: Just Call Him Lutho

Elethu: I Just Love The Word Baby Daddy

Me: Mxm

Elethu: Are You Planning On Fixing Things?

Me: I Dunno Why?

Elethu: I'm Ready To Play Stepdaddy

Me: Dude Just Give Up Already

Elethu: And If I Don't?

Me: I'm Gonna Kill You

Ekethu: I Wouldn't Mind Being Killed By You,I'm Sure I'd Rest In Peace And Wouldn't Have To Work As An Ancestor

Me: Haha Nikka You Crazy

I Laughed And Hit Him Playfully

Elethu: It's Good To See You Smiling And The Fact That I'm The Reason For That Tops It Up

Me: Dude Tomorrow Borrow Vusi's Car And We'll Go On Some 'Girl' Hunt

Elethu: For What?

Me: To Look For A Girlfriend For You

Elethu: The Person I Want Is Sitting Right Next To Me

Me: Forget It

Elethu: Okay So We'll Also Have Some Lunch And Shit

Me: Maybe

Elethu: Then Let's Call It a Date

Me: It's Not a Date

Elethu: Call It What You Wanna Call It But To Me

It Is

I Yawned

Elethu: Go To Bed

Me: I'm Not Sleepy

Elethu: Then Sugarplum Is

Me: Okay Fine Goodnight

Elethu: Not Even A Goodnight Kiss?

Me: Night Elethu

I Went To My Room And Fell Asleep
Immediately. The Following Day I Woke Up And
Found, Vusi, Elethu And The Twins Eating Cereal
In The Lounge

Me: Ain't We Having Some English Breakfast

Today?

Asithandile: Mom Left Early Today So No

Me: Yho

I Went To Make Myself Some Cereal Too And
Joined Them

Elethu: Vusi Bro Can You Borrow Me Your Car?

Vusi: Going To Pick Up Some Bitch For Today?

Elethu: Nhaa I'm Takin' Some Princess Out On a
Date

Me: It's Not a Date

Vusi: Hollup! You Two Are Going Out?

Me: Not Really,I'm Just Going To Show Your
Friend That There Are Other Girls He Could Date
And Stop Bothering Me

Vusi: Can I Tag Along?

Me & Elethu: NO!

Vusi: Then It's A Date,Take The Car Boy It's All Yours

Elethu: Dankie Bro

We Spent Half Of The Day Watching Movies In Pyjamas,Later On Elethu And I Went To Bath Then He Drove Us To Town.I Kept Pointing At Different Girls But Elethu Would Turn Em All Down,He'd Say Some Have Big Heads,Big Ears Or Are Too Thin Or Too Big For Him.We Finally Went To Sit Down And Ordered Something To Eat

Voice: So Is She The Reason You Left Me?

Elethu: Sinazo

Sinazo: Is She The Bitch You Left Me For?

Elethu: And We're Expecting OUR First Child

Together,She's Pregnant With My Real Baby
Unlike Someone I Know.If You Don't Mind,Can
You Excuse Us? My Girlfriend Is Allergic To
Bullshit,She Might Puke On You.Thank you

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT49 ♡

The Girl Looked At My Belly And Fortunately For
Elethu,I Was Wearing Something That Showed
My Tummy

Elethu: You Still Standing Here?

Sinazo: I See Your Tummy Is Big Which Means
Your Boyfriend Was Fuckin' With Me While With

You On The Other Side

I Just Kept Quiet And Looked At Elethu,He
Stomped On My Foot Under The Table [OBJ] - - So I
Had To Say Something

Me: He Ain't Fuckin' Witchu Anymore Now,Let's
Focus On That Darling

Sinazo: And I'm Not The Only Girl He Was
Fuckin' With

Me: Like I Said,That's In The Past Now.We're
Happy And Want To Welcome Our Baby As A
Happy Family So We Don't Need Hoes Like You
To Bring Up The Past And Like Elethu Said,I'm
Allergic To Bullshit So I Might Just Puke On You
Ayt Now

I Saw Defeat In Her Eyes,She Fixed Herself And
Walked Away.I Looked At Elethu

Elethu: I Know Know,Name Your Price

Me: You Owe Me Big Time

Elethu: I Said I Know,Just Name Your Price

Me: Lemme Think

Elethu: No'ing Above R500

Me: 8

Elethu: I Said Five

Me: Then I'll Call That Girl And Tell Her That
This Was Acting

Elethu: Okay Fine

Me: I Need New Sneakers So We Might As Well
Just Buy Em Now Since We're Already Here

We Walked To Some Shoe Shop And He Helped
Me With Picking Up The Shoe I Wanted And It
Costed 9

Me: I Want This One

Elethu: We Agreed On 8

Me: Please

Elethu: No

Me: Pretty Please

Elethu: Thank Goodness You Didn't Agree To Being My Girlfriend, Maybe By Now I Wouldn't Even Have A Cent In My Account

Me: You Said It Yourself That You Rich As Hell

Elethu: Sweetheart I'm Saving For Future Purposes

Me: Gonna Pay Lobola?

Elethu: Do I Look Like I'm Gonna Get Married?

Me: Elethu!

Elethu: What? Look I Always Fantasized Marrying You But Now That You Keep

Hammerring It In My Head That We'll Never Be,
Might As Well Play 'round

Me: At Least Vusi Changed

Elethu: Vusi Changed?

Me: He Gave Inam Some Promise Ring

Elethu Chuckled And Paid

Me: What?

Elethu: Nhaa No'ing

Me: It's Something

Elethu: It's Just That I Can't Imagine Vusi
Settling Down With One Chick

Me: He Will Now

Elethu: We'll See

Me: Don't Influence Him Back To This Player
Life Of Yours

Elethu: If He Wanna Come Back,He's More Than Welcome To.Bbe Vusi Is Only 16 To Be Settling Down,I'm Tellin' You In Few Weeks He'll Go Back To His Old Ways

Me: You're Something Else

Elethu: I'm Just Tellin' You The Truth,Inam Shouldn't Expect A Lot And Above From Vusi At This Age.There's No Tying A Nikka Like Him At This Age

Me: You Need To Grow Your Ass Up

Elethu: Let's Bet On It

Me: I Ain't Gonna Do That Ish

He Took The Plastic And We Walked Out

Me: Thanks

Elethu: I Feel Sorry For Whoever Moron Is Gonna Marry You

Me: Didn't You Say You Wanna Marry Me?

Elethu: Not Anymore.After Today Nhaaa Thanks

Me: But I Was Lookin' Forward To Being Your
Wife

Elethu: And Spendin' My Money Like There's No
Tomorrow,No Thanks

Me: Your Loss

We Got To The Car And He Drove Us Back
Home,Thobela Called Me

Call Convo

Thobela: Hey Beautiful

Me: Hey You

Thobela: Are My Favorite Two People Okay?

Me: Huh?

Thobela: Are You And The Baby Okay?

Me: Ohhh Uhhm We're Okay Thanks, How Are You?

Thobela: I'm Good I Just Miss You,Are You Gonna Be Free Tonight?

Me: Yeah Why?

Thobela: How About I Take You Two To The Movies?

Me: Look Thobela You Don't Have T-

Thobela: I Want To,I'll Pick You Up At 5

Me: Do You Think We'll Be Able To Get A Taxi At Night?

Elethu Laughed,I Hit Him With My Elbow

Thobela: You Don't Have To Worry Bout That

Me: Why?

Thobela: I Got Everything Covered,Just Be Ready At 5

Me: Ohh Owky

Thobela: I'll See You Then

He Hung Up,Elethu Looked At Me And Laughed

Me: What?

Elethu: Don't Tell Me You Left Your Baby Daddy For Someone Who Uses Taxis

Me: That Ain't Funny

Elethu: You Downgradin' Big Time

Me: Love Ain't Bout Money

Elethu: I See You Want Mr Morena To Disown You

Me: Dad Knows Love Ain't Bout What A Person Has,It's Bout Two People Lovin' Each Other

Elethu: So You Love This Guy?

I Just Kept Quiet And Thought Bout What Elethu Was Askin' Me

Elethu: Or He's Just Some Rebound Till You And Your Baby Daddy Get Back Together?

Me: I Like Him

Elethu: This Guy Talks Like He's Ready To Play Step Daddy

Me: He's A Nice Guy

Elethu: Who's Gonna Get His Heart Squashed By You

Me: Why You Sayin' That?

Elethu: Coz Sooner Or Later You And Lutho Will Get Back Together So What Will Happen To This New Guy?

Me: Who Said Anything Bout Lutho And I Gettin'

Back Together?

Elethu: So You'll Never Get Back With Him?

Me:.....

Elethu: Exactly.Look You Still Confused With What You Want Coz You Just Fought With Baby Daddy,You Still Angry At Him For Whatever He Did And Starting A New Relationship With This Other Guy Will Just Complicate Things More.You Just Take Some Time Off,Evaluate Yourself And Figure Out What You Want

Me: I Didn't Know You Could Be This Sane

Elethu: Don't Start

Me: I Like Thobela,He's A Nice Guy And His Mother Is An Angel.They Never Judged Me

Elethu: Then Fix Yourself For Them So You Could All Start On A Clean Slate

Me: For Once You Act Like The Big Brother I Always Wanted From You

Elethu: I Hope This Doesn't Mean We Won't Hit It Off When I Want Us To

Me: I Was Still Enjoyin' Being With The Sane Elethu

Elethu: Too Bad He's Gone. So How Do You And Vusi Do It?

Me: Do What?

Elethu: I Mean You Ain't Biologically Related, You Hot And My Nikka Is The Whole Package Too But You Just Take Each Other As Real Siblings Like You Share The Same Blood, If I Were Vusi I'm Sure You And I Would've Hit It Off a Long Time Ago. I Wouldn't Let Such Yummy Thing Off That Easily

Me: I Hope You Ain't Feeding Vusi Those Thoughts

Elethu: He'd Kill Me, Like I Said Vusi Takes You As His Real Sis, He'd Kill For You Sweetheart

Me: Thank Goodness You Ain't My Brother

Elethu: Haha Otherwise We Would Have Made Tons Of Babies Straight

Me: Haha Nikka You Really Sick

We Got Home And We Found The Twins And Vusi Still In PJ's And They Were Still Watching Movies

Asithandile: So How Was The Date?

Me: It Wasn't A Date

Elethu: It Was Great Boy

Vusi: I See You Even Bought Each Other Shoes

Me: Elethu Just Owed Me

Vusi: I See OBJ:)

Me: For Real

Vusi: I Didn't Say Anything

Ithandile: So What Did You Get For Us?

Elethu: I Didn't Know We Had To Get You
Something

Ithandile: You So Stingy Elethu

Elethu: You Have Your Own Money Sweetheart

Ithandile And I Went To Prepare Something To
Eat Then I Waited For Thobela,I Texted Mom
And Told Her That I Had To Go Somewhere.
Thobela Called And Elethu Jumped And
Answered My Phone

Call Convo

Thobela: Are You Done? I'm Already Here

Elethu: She's Still Gettin' Ready,Come Inside
And Wait For Her

Thobela: Okay Then

Elethu Hung Up And Everyone Was Lookin' At Me

Vusi: So You Finally Fixed Things With Lutho?

Elethu: That Wasn't Baby Daddy,Your Sister's A Hoe Bro,She's Going Out With Some Guy Named Thabile,Thobil- What's His Name Again?

Me: It's T-H-O-B-E-L-A

Vusi: Ain't He The Guy Who's Friends With That Moron Litha?

Me: He Is

Vusi: Are You Fuckin' Kiddin' Me?

Me: I'm Not Up For This

Someone Knocked

Asithandile: Go To Your Room

Me: To Do What?

Ithandile: Put On Some Makeup Is Something

Me: I Don-

Ithandile: Just Go!

Me: Okay Fine

I Walked To My Room And I Heard The Door
Being Opened,I Slowly Walked Down The Stairs
And Thobela Looked At Me Smiling

Elethu: I Thought You Didn't Have A Car

Thobela: Yeah I Don't Have It I Ju-

Elethu: Are You a Gangster? Do You Steal Cars?
Do You Want To Involve My Sister In Your Illegal
Activities? I Swear If-

Me: Hey Thobela,Let's Go Before We Run Outta
Time

Vusi: She Should Be Home By 9

Thobela: Roger That My Nigga

Vusi: I'm Glad We're On The Same Page And I
Ain't Your Nigga

Me: O-kay Let's Go

We Walked Out, There Was A BMW 7 Series
Outside

Me: Whoa What's Going On?

Thobela: It's Mom's Boss's, He Borrowed Me
Since Mom Couldn't Keep Her Mouth Shut Bout
Me Takin' The Most Beautiful Girl Out

Me: Is This All For Me?

Thobela: And The Lil Soul Inside Of You

Me: Thank You So Much

Thobela: Let's Go Before We Arrive Late Where

We Going

We Got Inside The Car Then Thobela Drove Us To The Cinema And We Watched a Rom Com, I Laid My Head On His Shoulder While We Watched The Movie. We Went To Grab Something To Eat After The Movie

Me: Thanks For Tonight

Thobela: Anything For You

Me: I Enjoyed Myself

Thobela: But It Wasn't A Big Deal Like Dinner With Candles And Stuff

Me: Being With You Is Enough For Me And You Holding My Hand Through Out The Movie Was Romantic Enough For Me

Thobela: You're Too Simple For A Suburban

Me: You Should Stop Callin' Me That

Thobela: Your House Is Beautiful,It's The Kinda House I Always Dream Bout

Me: Ohh?

Thobela: It's The Kinda House I Wanna Buy For Mom

Me: You So Fond Of Your Mother

Thobela: She's All I Have

Me: You Have Me Too Now

We Both Smiled,He Grabbed My Hand And Kissed It

Thobela: I Love You More Each And Every Time I Spend Time With You Or Think Bout You

O-W-K-Y That Was Kinda A Bomb Shell,I Just Looked At Him And Smiled

Thobela: You're Just A Wonderful Soul

Me: But Not More Than You

Thobela: I'm Flattered

Me: You're Really Wonderful

We Kept Having Chats While Eating, Thobela Settled The Bill Then He Drove Me Home. He Stopped At The Robots, There Was A Black Car In Front Of Us And Another One At The Back. My Soul Wasn't At Ease, The Doors On Both Cars Opened At The Same Car And Two Guys Wearing All Black With Masks Came To The Car We Were In, One Broke The Glass On Thobela's Side

Guy1: Let's Do This Nice And Easy, Get Your Asses Outta The Car

Thobela: Bra Please Don't Take The Car It Ain't Mine,I'll Be In Big Trouble If I Lose The Car

Guy2: Dude We Don't Give a Fuck Bout Your Story,Get Your Flat Ass Outta The Car

Thobela: Bros I Can Give You The Money I Have But Please Don't Take The Car.Please Have Mercy On Us,God Will Reward You For That

Guy2: Haha Nikka Listen To This Boy, Dude We Don't Have Time For Your Prayers,Get Out Now!

The Voice! The Voice!

Me: Siya!

Siya: Fuck Me Sideways!

[05/19, 18:19] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT50 ♡

I Opened The Door And Got Out,Siya Took Off His Mask And Anga Took Off His Too

Thobela: Esihle Don't Go Out,What If They Kill You?

Me: Don't Worry I Got This

I Went To Their Side And Siya Was Laughin' His Ass Off While I Could See Irritation In Anga's Face

Anga: So You Left My Nikka For This Coward Cheese Boy?

Me: He Ain't No Cheese Boy

Siya: " I Can Give You The Money I Have Please Don't Take The Car,Have Mercy On Us.God Will Reward You For That" Haha This Boy Is Crazy

Me: That Ain't Funny

Siya: So Tell Us,Did You Really Leave Our Boy For This Piece Of Crap?

Me: That Is My Boyfriend You Talkin' Bout And I Won't Let You Disrespect Him Or Make Fun Of Him That Way

Thobela Got Out Of The Car

Thobela: Esihle You Know These People?

Me: Please Stay In The Car

Siya: Just Hear That,You Even Control This Moron

Thobela Kept Lookin' At The Broken Window

And Finally Got Inside The Car

Anga: What A Downgrade

Me: Now That's An Insult

Anga: So What? Is He Gonna Come And Give Me Punches Of Prayers?

Siya: Haha I Bet That's What He's Good At My Nikka

Me: I Think You Two Should Leave

Anga: My Nikka Has To Hear This

Siya: How He Got Replaced With a Mediocre

Me: Mxm

I Walked Back Into The Car, Siya Went To Stand Next To Thobela's Side

Siya: Your Ass Got Saved Coz Of Your Girlfriend

Thobela:.....

Siya: Is He Mute?

Me: Siya Just Leave

Siya: Haha Boy I Don't Even Have To Watch
Comedy Tonight, You Made My Day Big Time

Me: Siyamthanda Just Do Us All A Favor And
Go!

Siya: Okay Girlfriend To The Rescue, I'm Leavin'
But We Need To Talk To You

Me: I Will When I Have Time

Siya: Okay Cool Bye Mrs Zizwe And Of Course
You Too Pastor

He Laughed And Walked Back To His Car, I
Almost Laughed Too

Thobela: Mrs Zizwe?

Me: I Don't Wanna Talk Bout That

Thobela: You So Chilled While Those Guys Broke This Damn Window,How The Hell Am I Going To Pay For This? DO YOU KNOW HOW EXPENSIVE EVERYTHING OF THIS CAR IS?

Me: Dude Chill It's Only a Window,It's Not Like They Took The Car Or Broke Every Part Of It

Thobela: CHILL?? DID YOU JUST ASK ME TO CHILL?? ESIHLE YOUR FRIENDS BROKE MY MOM'S BOSS'S CAR WINDOW WHICH COSTS THOUSANDS,HOW THE HELL AM I SUPPOSED TO GET THAT KINDA MONEY FROM?? LOOK HERE ESIHLE,I AIN'T LIKE YOU,MONEY AIN'T EVERYWHERE IN MY HOUSE.MY MOM IS A DOMESTIC WORKER AND I DON'T HAVE A FATHER WHO OWNS A BIG MULTI MILLION RAND COMPANY IN THE CITY SO DON'T TELL ME TO CHILL!

Me: [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'('

Thobela: Look I'm Sorry I Didn't Mean To Las-

Me: Just Drive Me Home Please And I'll Make Sure The Car Is Fixed

Thobela: Look I'm Really Sor-

Me: Just Save It

He Started The Car And We Drove In Silence,He Dropped Me Off And I Just Got Out Without Sayin' Goodnight Or Whatever.I Went Straight To My Room And Got In Bed And Slept Immediately.

The Following Day Was a Saturday So I Woke Up,Did My Bed And Went To Bath.Thobela Sent Me A Message,Apologizing.I Just Read It And Didn't Reply,I Went To Join The Family For Breakfast

Me: Morning Everyone

Mom: Morning Baby

Dad: Morning Princess

Elethu: You Don't Look Happy For Someone Who Went On a Date

Mom: She Just Told Me She Was Going Out And Didn't Tell Me That It Was A Date,So Tell Us,Where Did Lutho Take You?

Ithandile: It Wasn't Lutho

Dad: Huh?

Asithandile: It Was Some Guy Named Th-
What's His Name?

Elethu: Thobela

Mom: What Happened Between You And Lutho?

Me: Life Happened And I Don't Talk Bout That,Can I Have Breakfast In Peace?

Mom: Mhmhm

The Twins Said Grace And We Started Digging
In

Dad: Today Is Vusi's Biggest Match,Are You Comin' With Us?

Me: So This Is The Day You've Been Trainin' And Workin' For?

Vusi: You Said It Yourself

Me: I Wouldn't Miss It For The World

Vusi: Dankie Lil Sis

Me: I Ain't Younger Than You

Mom: It's Too Early To Be Arguing Bout That

Vusi: But I'm Still Older Than You

Me: No Yo-

Mom: I Said Stop It

Vusi: I'm Older Than You (Whisperin')

Me: Mom Vusi Ain't Stoppin'

Mom: Vusi!

Vusi: But Mom I'm Older Than Her

Dad: Pumpkin It's Still Too Early To Get Yourself Worked Up By These Two

Elethu: You Still Call Mrs Morena Pumpkin?

Dad: She'll Always Be My Pumpkin

Elethu: You Two Should Adopt Me

Me: Please Don't,Vusi Is Too Much Himself.I Can't Have A Second One,I'd Die.

Mom: Elethu Is A Good Boy And It's Great Havin' Him 'round

Me: Coz You Don't Spend All Day With Him

Elethu: I Ain't That Bad Right Family?!

Asithandile: I Wouldn't Mind Having You As A Second Brother,I'm In Need Of One

Me: Vusi Is Enough,Having Elethu As A Brother That'd Be A Nightmare

Ithandile: I Like Havin' Him 'round Too

Me: Yho

Elethu: You're Outnumbered Baby So Soon I'll Be Your Older Brother

Me: Dad Please Start Preparing For My Funeral

Dad: Give Birth To My Grandchild First Then You Can Die

Me: I Thought You Were Just Gonna Disagree With This Madness But I See You Supporting It,I See I'm Dadless

Elethu: On A Serious Note I Really Love Being Here,I Just Feel More At Home Than At My Own House.Sometimes I Even Wonder If My Parents Are Really My Real Parents.In My House You'd Never Find Family Times Like These Or Everyone This Happy And Talkin' To Each Other Over Dinner Or Breakfast.Ever Since Dad Got A Raise At Work,It's Always Business And Business To Him So I Appreciate Every Minute Under Your Roof Mr Morena

Me: Someone's Gonna Cry

Elethu: A Man Doesn't Cry Sweetheart

Me: You Call Yourself A Man While You Have Tears Forming In Your Eyes?

Mom: You Two Mara

Vusi: Let's Finish Eatin' Before We Become Late For Vusi's Game Guys

We All Finished Up Eating And Got Ready To Go,Mom Rode With Dad While The Twins,Elethu And I Rode With Vusi.

Vusi Went To Join His Team While We Settled Down And Bought Some Junk To Eat While Watching The Match,Ekethu Sat Next To Me As We Watched The Game.

Ekethu: You See That Girl Two Seats Down From Us?

Me: Yeah

Elethu: Now Back To The Field,See Those Three Guys There? (Pointin' At Vusi's Team)

Me: Yeap Those Hot,Not To Tall Ones

Elethu Looked At Me

Me: What? They Are Hot

Elethu: Mxaa Girls.....That Girl Has Dated With All Three Of Them,Vusi And I

Me: I Bet She's A Mine Hole

Elethu: A Deserted One,They Ain't No Machines Or Even Genarators Down There

Me: Haha Dude You Crazy

Elethu: Vusi And I Called Her Over To My House One Day And Feasted On Her At The Same Time,Bitch Didn't Even Let Out a Slight Moan

Me: You Lying

Elethu: For Rae Raes,I'm Sure The Whole Team Has Feasted On Her

Vusi Scored,We All Got Up And Cheered For Him.I Saw Inam Arriving But She Couldn't Sit Next To Us Coz All The Seats 'round Us Were Full.The Girl Elethu Showed Me,Got Up And Pulled Up Her Vest And Showed Her Boobs And Trust Me They Were Big

Me: Whoa

Elethu: Whoring Tendencies

Me: She's Gonna Distract Vusi From The Game

Elethu: Don't Worry She Won't,My Nikka Wouldn't Go Back To That Empty Haunted House

The Game Was Great And Elethu's Jokes

Topped It Up,Vusi's Team Won.I Asked Vusi To Borrow Me His Car Coz He Had To Go To Some Party With His Teammates And Elethu Tagged Along So I Asked The Twins To Ride With The Rents.I Drove To Lutho's House,I Was Just Still Mad At What His Friends Did.I Knocked And A Girl Wearing His T-shirt Opened The Door

Great! I Knew That Lutho Moved On Long Ass Ages Ago But It Still Hurt

Girl: Can I Help You?

Me: I'm Lookin' For Lutho

Girl: He's Still Busy Upstairs

Me: I Can Wait For Him

I Pushed Her Outta The Way And Got In

Girl: Who Are You?

Me: You Don't Have To Know Everyone That Comes In Here, All You're Here For Is To Be Fucked By Lutho So Do Us All A Favor And Stop Talkin' To Me

Girl: O-kay

Lutho Walked Down The Stairs With Anga And Two Girls With Only Their Panties On

Lutho: Came To Join The Party? But I Don't Remember Myself Inviting You

Me: You Drunk

Lutho: I'm Just Enjoying Life, I Have Every Reason To Celebrate Everyday

Me: We Need To Talk

Lutho: Let's Go To My Study

Girls: Be Quick, We Haven't Finished What We Were Doing Yet

I Just Walked Faster,We Got To His Study Then
Lutho Closed The Door

Me: Did You Send Your Friends To Hijack
Thobela?

Lutho: You Talkin' Bout That Pastor Of Yours?

Me: Lutho Did You?

Lutho: I Don't Even Know That Boy

Me: Stop Lying To Me Lutho

Lutho: My Nikkas Just Wanted Something To
Warm Up On And Unfortunately It Happened To
Be That Moron Of Yours,I Don't Even Know Why
I Have To Explain Myself To You,It's Not Like
We're Still Dating.Please Leave,I Have Asses
Waiting For Me To tap

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT51 ♡ ↓↓

My Heart Was Torn Into Smaller
Fragments, Even The Best Mender In The Whole
World Wouldn't Be Able To Fix It. Tears
Threatened My Eyes, I Quickly Wiped Em

Me: I See, Have a Good Life Lutho

I Walked To The Door

Lutho: Esihle Wait!

I Turned And Looked At Him, He Just Looked At

Me And Didn't Say a Word

Me: Bye Lutho

I Found Anga Kissing All Three Of The Girls In
The Kitchen

Anga: You're Free To Join Us

Me: Arg!

Lutho: Don't Forget Who You Talkin' To Boy

Anga: My Apologies Mister

I Walked Out And Banged The Door,I Stood
Outside And Couldn't Stop The Tears From
Escaping My Eyes Anymore.I Just Let Them
Be,I Sat On The Lawn And Cried My Lungs Out.I
Felt A Hand On My Shoulder

Me: Lutho Just Leave Me Alone! Didn't You Say
You Have Asses To Tap? Go And Tap Them
Then

Menzi: I Ain't That Moron Marn

I Jumped And Stood Up

Menzi: I Don't Bite Jeez

Me:.....

Menzi: So Lil Bro Broke Your Heart For The
Millionth Time?

Me: That's Non Your Business

Menzi: I Need An Ally Like You,You Know?!

Me: What Makes You Think I'd Join Forces
Witchu?

Menzi: After Being Played This Way,If I Were

You I'd Do Anything To Avenge My
Tears.Sweetheart You've Wasted A Lotta Tears
On That Douche Bag I Call My Cousin

Me: Even If You Were The Last Man With An
Army On Earth,I'd Never Ally Witchu

Menzi: I Think You Forgot That We Partners Ayt
Now

Me: Just Business Partners,It Ends There

Menzi: O-kay...I Had To Bring You Some Papers
But Since You're Already Here,Lemme Go And
Get Them From The Car

Me: What Kinda Papers?

Menzi: There's A New Contract I'm Workin' On
But Since I'm Not The Only Boss Anymore,You
Have To Have Your Say Too In Everything.I
Need You To Go Through The Contract,Tell Me
What You Don't Like Then Sign Or Don't

Me: Is It Anything Illegal?

Menzi: When It Comes To Business I'm Legit

Baby

Me: I'll Just Sign The Papers Now

We Walked To His Car And He Took Out The Papers,I Just Perused Through Them And Then Signed.It Wasn't Anything Illegal Or That Would Backfire On Me.

Lutho Got Out And Walked To Us

Lutho: Don't Tell Me You Two Are Back Together

Menzi: That Wouldn't Be A Bad Idea,Would It?

Lutho: Sugar?

Me: Menzi And I Ain't Back Together And I Don't Have To Explain Myself To You,We Ain't Dating Anymore Remember?!

Menzi: This Is Good To Watch

Me: Mxm

Lutho: Then What Are You Doing In My Yard?

Menzi: I Came To Talk To You But I Bumped Into Miss Morena And I Had Some Papers She Had To Sign So I Asked Her To Sign Em Now Since She's Already Here

Lutho: Papers?

Menzi: Didn't She Tell You? We Own A Business Together, We're Partners

Lutho: WHAT??

Menzi: I Guess You Didn't Have To Know

Lutho: Esihle?

Me: I Don't Have Time For This

I Gave The Papers To Menzi And Walked To Vusi's Car, I Got In And Cried Again Inside [OBJ]:'(I Started The Car And Drove Away. I Got Home And Went To My Room, Mom Got In

Mom: Wassup?

Me: My Life's Just a Mess Ma

Mom: What Happened Between You And Lutho?

Me: He Cheated

Mom: And You Moved On

Me: He Moved On Too Ma

Mom: Have You Tried To Fix Things With Him?

Me: Mom He Pins Everything To Me Just Coz I Ignored Him

Mom: Did You Ignore Him Before Or After He Cheated?

Me: I Just Needed Time To Think,His Mother Called Me Names

Mom: Esihle?

Me: Before He Cheated

Mom: Baby What Did You Expect When You Ignored Him,That He'll Wait For You? Men Ain't

Like Us Women Baby,They Think Differently And We're The Ones To Fix Things

Me: They Are Too Broken To Be Fixed

Mom: Tell Me Bout This Thobeka Guy

Me: It's Thobela Ma

Mom: Yes Do You Love Him?

Me: I Like Him

Mom: The Baby?

Me: He Knows Bout The Baby And His Mother Knows Too,They Both Didn't Judge Me.His Mother Was Also In My State When She Was Pregnant With Thobela So She Understands What I'm Going Through

Mom: Do You Think You And Lutho Will Never Fix Things?

Me: Mom Like I Said,They Can't Be Fixed

Mom: You Know My Stories Witcho Dad,We Always Had Issues Too But We Fixed Our

Issues

Me: Lutho Ain't Dad And I Ain't You Mom

Mom: Sweetheart There's No Mr Right In The Universe, You As A Woman Have To Take Whatever Idiot You Love And Teach Him To Be Right For You. If I Left Your Father The First Time He Screwed Up, We Wouldn't Have This Beautiful, Lovely Family And Who Knows?

Maybe I Would've Found The Worst Step Father For You. Please Don't Be The Reason This Baby Won't Grow Up With Both Parents 'round

Me: Mom Lutho Doesn't Want Us To Fix Things

Mom: Men Hide Their Feelings, What I Know Is That Boy Loves You And It's Up To You To Build Or Destroy What You Two Had

Me: Lutho Is Too Much Mom But Thobela Is Just A Simple Loving Guy

Mom: You Just Gonna Break This Guy's Heart

Me: Why Is Everyone Sayin' That?

Mom: Coz You Will.Tomorrow You Going For Your Checkup?

Me: Jeap

Mom: You Going With Lutho?

Me: I Have No Choice

Mom: Please Talk To Him

She Kissed My Forehead And Left.The Following Day I Woke Up And Bathed,I Ate Breakfast With The Family And Walked To My Favorite Fast Food Restaurant,I Texted Lutho And Told Him Where To Pick Me Up Coz We Were Gonna Go Together.I Got To The Rastaurant,Sat Down And Put My Phone And My Bag On The Table,A Waitress Came To Me

Her: Hey Bbe

Me: Hey Love,How Are You Today?

Her: I'm Good,Can't Complain And How Is You
And The Lil Soul?

Me: We're Good,We're Just Hungry

Her: So Whatchu Gonna Order?

Me: The Usual Baby

Her: Coming Right Up

Me: Thank You

She Left To The Kitchen,Some Guy Came To Sit
On My Table

Guy: Hope You Don't Mind

Me: We Live In a Free Country You Know

He Snort-laughed,I Must Say His Laugh Was
Seductive And Strangely He Just Reminded Me
Of Lutho.

Guy: I'm Not The Eavesdropin' Typa Nikka But I Heard You Talkin' To That Waitress And You Said You Want The Usual, Meaning You Used To This Place

Me: Dude I Stay 'round Here

Guy: I Guess You The Angel I've Been Lookin' For

Me: Huh?

Guy: I'm Here Lookin' For Some Business Tycoon Who Happens To Be My Real Father

Me: Huh?

Guy: It's A Long Story. Are You Gonna Help Me Find Him?

Me: Make The Story Short So I Can Help You

Guy: Okay First Let's Know Each Other

Me: Esihle Morena

Guy: Raymond Lulutho Mr Troublesome Wilson

Me: Mr Troublesome?

Ray: Let's Just Say I Love Gettin' Myself Into Trouble Or Lemme Rephrase That, Trouble Loves Gettin' Into Me

Me: Haha Nikka You Mad

Ray: The Thing Is I Got Into Lotta Trouble Back At Home So My Adoptive Dad Or Ex Dad Got Tired Of Cleaning After My Mess So He Disowned Me

Me: Ouch

Ray: So He Told Me To Come Back Here And Look For My Real Dad Maybe I Need Some African Ritual To Be On The Right Track

Me: Haha I Bet You Really Do, So Where You From Exactly?

Ray: My Real Parents Happen To Be From Here, My Adoptive Mom Is American While My Ex Dad Is English

Me: Ex Dad?

Ray: He Disowned Me Duh,So Tell Me Where Do You Think I'm From?

Me: Dude You African,Can't You See You Black?

Ray: Maybe I Really Need The African Ritual

My Food Came

Ray: Ain't That Too Much For A Girl?

Me: I'm Eating For Two

Ray: Ohh So We're Expecting?

Me: I'm Expecting Not You

Ray: I'd Love To Play Some Step Dad While I'm Still Here

Me: Dude You Crazy My Baby Ain't Fatherless

Ray: I Would've Been The Best Step Dad

Me: Thanks For The Offer But We're Cool

Ray: So Tell Me,How Old Are You? You Look

Young To Be Starting Your Own Family

Me: Haha Yeah Ayt,I'm 16

Ray: Wow

Me: I Know So How Old Are You?

Ray: 21 And That's a Secret

Me: Secret?

Ray: I Can't Have People Knowing My Real Age,Especially The Ladies

Me: Seems Like Someone's A Ladies' Man

Ray: I Am,Aren't I? So Tell Me Do You Know A Guy Who Is Known As Xolelani Zi-

Lutho: This Looks Cosy (Standing Next To Me)

Me: Hi Lutho

Ray: Is This Your Baby Daddy?

Lutho: You Another Step Daddy?

Me: I Think We Should Go

Ray: Can I Get Your Number So That I Can Call

You To Get The Information I Needed?

Lutho: I'll Be In The Car

With That Said He Left

Ray: Your Boyfriend Is Obnoxious

Me: Ex

Ray: Ohh I Didn't Know

Me: Yeah Uhhm Gimme Your Phone

He Passed Me His Phone And I Dialed My
Number

Ray: He Still Loves You

Me: Huh?

Ray: That Guy Still Loves You

Me: He's In Love With Someone Else,He Moved On So Did I.

Ray: You Still Love Him,I Can See It In Your Eyes And Trust Me He Still Loves You Too

Me: I Should Get Going,Call Me Later On So We Can Finish Our Conversation

Ray: Owky Cool,It Was Nice Meeting You Esihle

Me: And It Was Nice Meeting You Too

I Hugged Him And Walked Out After Settling My Bill.I Found Lutho In The Car,Typing Something On His Phone.I Got In

Me: We Can Go

Lutho Put His Phone Aside And Looked At Me

Lutho: Are You That Desperate?

Me: Excuse Me?

Lutho: Why Are You Lookin' For Thousand Step Fathers For My Baby While I'm Still Alive??

Me: I'm Not In The Mood For This Lutho

Lutho: So That Thobela Guy Ain't Enough, You Adding Another One On The Line. Esihle Are Fuckin' Sleeping With These Guys??

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: ARE YOU FUCKIN' SLEEPING WITH THESE GUYS??

Me: I Can't Believe This

Lutho: ARE YOU DAMMIT??

Me: HOW IS THAT ANY OF YOUR CONCERN??

Lutho: ARE YOU FUCKIN' KIDDIN' ME?? THAT'S MY BABY IN THERE AND YOU CAN'T BE SPREADING YOUR LEGS FOR EVER- FOR ANY DICK WHILE PREGNANT WITH MY BABY!!

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: You Heard Me, Esihle You Won't Sleep With Another Man While Pregnant With My Child!

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT52 ♡ ↓

Me: Okay Lutho

I Looked Outside The Window And Tears Just Rolled Down My Cheeks

Lutho: Esihle I Swear If I-

Me: I Said Okay! What More Do You Want Me To Say Lutho?

I Turned And Looked At Him,I Saw The Anger That Was On His Face Fading Away.

Lutho: Sugar Look I-

Me: Just Drive Lutho,Drive

I Wiped My Tears And Looked Outside The Window Again.He Started The Car And We Drove To My Doctor In Silence.There Was Still a Patient Inside So We Just Sat Outside The Office

Lutho: Look I'm Sorry For Lashin' Out On You

Me:.....

Lutho: Esihle I'm Talkin' To You

Me: And I'm Not Lutho, Please Don't Ever Talk To Me Ever Again Unless It's Bout The Baby!

Voice: That's Not a Right Atmosphere For The Baby

Lutho And I Both Looked Up And It Was My Doctor

Doc: Please Come In

We Both Got Up And Got Inside, We Both Sat Down

Doc: How Have You Been Doing?

Lutho: Great And You Doc?

Doc: What I Saw Out There Didn't Look Like Great, Is Everything Okay?

Me:.....

Lutho: Yeah Everything Is Perfect

Doc: Esihle?

Me: Everything's Fine,Can We Please Just Get Over And Done With Everything? I'm Tired,I Wanna Rest

Doc: Okay Then Let's Check Your Blood Pressure First

Me: Cool

She Checked My Blood Pressure

Doc: It's Higher Than The Last Time You Came Here,I Thought I Told You Not To Stress Too Much

Me:.....

Lutho: A Lot Has Been Going On

Doc: I Know I'm Not Your Therapist But If You Both Want This Baby To Live You'll Fix Your Issues.This Bad Spirit I See Between The Two Of You Might Take This Precious Soul From Us Me:.....

Lutho: I'll Make Sure She Doesn't Stress Too Much

Doc: That's The Same Thing You Said The Last Time You Were Here

Lutho: I Promise This Time 'round

Doc: I'm Glad To Hear That

She Did Another Scan And Fortunately My Sugarplum Was Still Okay,Lutho Took The Scan And I Walked In Front To His Car.I Got In,Laid On The Seat And Looked The Opposite Way.He Got In And Closed The Door,He Sat For A While And I Felt His Hand On My Back

Lutho: I'm Sorry Sugar

Me:.....

Lutho: Look I've Been Letting My Pride Get In
The Way Of Apologizing To You,What I Did Was
Pure Wrong

Me:.....

Lutho: I Got Jealous Earlier On Coz I Still Care,I
Still Love You And I'll Never Stop Lovin' You

Me:..... [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:([OBJ]:'(

Lutho: All I Ever Do Is Hurt You,The Past Few
Days Have Been Torture Coz I'm No'ing Without
You.I Drank And Partied A Lot,I Thought I Was
Gonna Forget You But Fate Proved Me Wrong

I Found Myself Chuckling On The Fate Word
Coz That's The Same Word I Used When We
First Met And I Didn't Wanna Give Him My
Number.I Wiped My Tears But Didn't Look At
Him

Lutho: I See You Love This Thobela Guy,If He Makes You Happy Then I'm Happy For You.I Know It Will Be Hard For Me To See You With Another Guy But I Won't Force You To Stay With Me,Someone Who Hurts You All The Time While There's A Guy Who Makes You Happy

[OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(Tears Just Rolled Down My Cheeks,One After The Other Then A Flood.I Couldn't Help It,I Just Cried Out Loud.Lutho Pulled Me To Face Him,He Looked At Me And Pulled Me Into His Arms.

I Won't Say I Didn't Miss The Warmth And Comfort Of His Arms,I Just Let It All Out.

Lutho: I'm Sorry Sugar

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

He Kept Kissing My Forehead And Rubbing My Back. When I've Had Enough, I Pulled Myself Away And Wiped My Tears From My Eyes

Me: Please Drive Me Home

Lutho: I Mean Every Word I've Just Said

Me:.....

Lutho: Look I Don't Want You To Lose Our Baby Coz Of My Stupid Ways, We're In This Together

He Held My Hand

Me: So You Ain't Mad That I'm Dating With Thobela?

Lutho: If He Makes You Happy Then I'm Cool With Whatever, Your Happiness Is The Most Important Thing Right Now If We Want Our Baby To Live

Me: Thank You

I Hugged Him Then He Started The Car

Me: Can We Grab Something To Eat First Before You Drive Me Home?

Lutho: Anything For The Queen And The Princess

Me: Thanks And Uhhm I'm Sorry For Not Tellin' You That I'm Partners With Menzi

Lutho: Speakin' Of That,How Did It Come To Be?

Me: Remember That Old Lady Who Came To See Me At The Hospital When I Was With You There?

Lutho: Your Grandma?

Me: She Ain't My Grandma

Lutho: Haha Okay What Bout Her?

Me: She Told Me That Lonwabo Left Me 50%
Share Of His Company

Lutho: Wow Baby That's Huge And Great

Me: But I Didn't Want It

Lutho: What? Why?

Me: It Looked Like Disrespect Towards Dad

Lutho: It Isn't,It's Just Securing Your Future

Me: Yeah I Know

Lutho: I'm Sure Mr Morena Understood

Me: Yeah He Did And He's Supporting Me

We Got To The Restaurant And Made Our
Orders,Our Food Quickly Came

Lutho: So Whatchu Gonna Do With So Much
Money At This Age?

Me: Build Princess A Castle In The Air

Lutho: Haha Yeah Ayt And Please Build Me One Too

Me: Honestly I Dunno What I'm Gonna Do With The Money,Maybe I'll Just Sell Some Of The 50% To Someone Who Wants It

Lutho: Don't Wanna Face My Evil Cousin?

Me: You Can Say That Again,I Wouldn't Survive A Day With Him

Lutho: You'd Have Nightmares For A Whole Week

I Chuckled And Hit His Shoulder

Lutho: I Missed Your Smile

Me:.....

Lutho: Uhhm Mom Said I Should Invite You Over For Dinner Tonight

Me: Your Mom??

Lutho: I Was Shocked Too

Me: I Hope She Ain't Planning On Poisoning My Food Or Drink

Lutho: She Ain't That Kinda Monster In Law....I'm Sure She Just Wants You Two To Fix Things

Me: The Way She Looked At Me That Day Atcho House,One Would Swear That She'd Drink A Whole Bucket Of Water In Front Of Me While I'm On Fire

Lutho: You Making Her Look So Evil

Me: I Even Imagined Her Grumpy Face On Our Wedding Day

Lutho Put Everything On The Table And Looked At Me

Me: What?

Lutho: You Just Said Our Wedding Day

Me:.....

Lutho: It's Good To Know That You'd Want Us To Have Our Lil Family One Day

Me: Uhhm We're Both Done Eating,I Think We Should Go

Lutho: Uhhm Cool

He Settled The Bill Then We Left,He Dropped Me In Front Of My Yard

Me: Thanks For Accompanying Me To The Doctor And Buying Me Lunch

Lutho: Anything For You...I Enjoyed Spending Time With You Too,We Should Go For Some Baby Shopping Soon

Me: I'm Sure Our Munchkin Would Love That

Lutho: Please Be Happy Okay?! Your Happiness

Is All That Matters Now Even If I Have To See
You With Another Guy

Me: Thanks

Lutho: Daddy Ain't Gonna Cause Any Trouble As
Long As Princess And Mommy Are Happy

Me: Thanks Daddy

I Kissed His Cheek And Got Out,I Found
Ithandile Dancing And Singing In The Lounge

Me: Where's Everybody?

Ithandile: They Are Playin' Soccer At The
Back,You Smilin'

Me: Can't A Girl Just Smile?

Ithandile: Are You And Bhut' Lutho Back
Together?

Me: No

Ithandile: Then Why You Smilin'?

Me: Coz Life Is Good

Ithandile: But Y-

Me: I'll Be In My Room

I Went To My Room And My Phone Rang

Call Convo

Me: Thobela

Thobela: I've Been Tryna Call You The Whole Day

Me: When Someone Ignores Your Calls That Means They Don't Wanna Talk To You

Thobela: Look I'm Sorry For Everything I Said Yesterday, I Was Just Mad

Me: You Meant Every Word You Said Thobela

And Just Gimme Your Account Number,I
Wanna Send You The Money For The Window
Repair

Thobela: That Won't Be Necessary,The Owner
Said He'll Fix It Himself

Me: Okay Then Bye

Thobela: Esihle I'm Really Sorry,Can I Make It Up
To You? I'll Take You Out To Your Favorite
Restaurant,For Your Favorite Meal

Me: No Thanks

Thobela: Please

Me: Okay Fine But Tomorrow Coz I'm Tired Now

Thobela: Does That Mean I'm Forgiven?

Me: Not Yet Mister,I Have To Have My Meal
First

Thobela: But I Have a Good Feeling That You
Already Know You've Forgiven Me,Goodnight
Beautiful

Me: Night To You Too

He Hung Up,I Saw A Missed Call From A
Number So I Decided To Call It

Call Convo

Me: I Saw A Missed Call From This
Number,Who Are You?

Caller: Your Worst Nightmare

Me: Dude I'm For Real,Who Are You?

Caller: I Said Your Worst Nightmare,I'll Be The
Last Person You Talk To.Too Bad You'll Be
Takin' With You That Soul Inside Of You

Me: Dare Touch My Baby I Swear I'll-

Caller: You'll What? Open Your Closet And You'll
See Me

Me: Who Are You?

Caller: Haha I Didn't Know You Could Be Creeped Out So Easily

Me: Raymond

Caller: Yes Sweetheart

Me: Dude That Wasn't Funny

Ray: I Bet You Even Peed On Your Self Haha

Me: Nikka This Ain't Funny

Ray: Haha Okay Sorry Then,Just Wanted To Tell You That I Found My Father And I'm Having Dinner With Him And My Mom Tomorrow And Thanks For Tryna Help

Me: I'm Glad I Could Help

Ray: I Hope We'll Go Out For Some Drinks While I'm Still Here

Me: Yeah Why Not?

Ray: Cool Then,Thanks Again

He Hung Up,I Went To Watch T.V With Ithandle
Till Mom And Dad Got Back From Work,They
Bought Take Aways So I Dished Up For
Everyone And Lutho Called To Tell Me That He
Was Outside.I Just Changed Into a
Dress,Sandals And A Jacket.I Found Him In His
Car,Texting Someone

Lutho: You Look Hot

Me: With This Big Belly On? Ohh Please

Lutho: You're Hotter To Me Especially With That
Belly On

Me: Coz You're The Reason It Is This Big

Lutho: It Was Too Flat So I Thought I Should
Feed You Something To Make You Full For Nine
Months

I Chuckled And Hit Him Playfully,He Started The Car And Drove Us To His House.Olona Ran To Me The Minute She Saw Me

Olona: SIS ESIHLE!

Me: Hey Baby

Olona: I Missed You

Me: I Missed You Too Babe...Hi Ma

L's Mom: Hi Dear

O-W-K-Y

L's Mom: You Can Go And Sit On The Table,I'm Gonna Come With The Food In Few Minutes

Me: O-kay

She Came With The Food,Lutho Dished Up For

Me And Himself

Olona: Can You Please Dish Up For Me Too?

Lutho: I Ain't Your Maid Lil Sis

Me: Let Me

I Dished Up For Her And Gave Her Her
Plate,Luu's Mom Said Grace And We Started
Digging In

Luu's Mom: Uuhm Esihle I Know I Didn't
Welcome You In a Good Way The First Day We
Met

Lutho: That's True

L's Mom: And Uhhm I Shouldn't Have Said The
Things I Said

Lutho: Yes You Shouldn't Have

Me And His Mom: Just Shut Up Lutho!

Lutho: You Already Ganging Up On Me, That's A Good Start

We All Laughed

L's Mom: As An Elder I Have To Be The One To Fix Things Between Us Since You're Carrying My Grandchild And Might Be My Future Daughter In Law

Lutho Held My Hand But I Pulled It Away

L's Mom: So Please Forgive Me For My Behaviour

Me: I'm Sorry Too Ma

There Was A Knock On The Door,Luu's Father
Got In With Ray

Ray: I Couldn't Wait Any Longer To Meet You
Mother,Hello Family

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT53 ♡ ↓

We All Turned And Looked At Them,Ray's Smile
Turned Into A Frown When He Saw Me And
Lutho

Lutho: What Is Going On Here?

Luu's Mom: Can We All Sit Down And Talk?
Xolelani Didn't I Ask You To Bring This Child
Tomorrow??

Luu's Dad: He's Too Persistent, There Was No
Way I Could Change His Mind

Lutho: WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE??

Ray: Uhhm That's What I Also Wanna Know

Lutho: Mom This Boy Called You Mother, The
Fuck Is Going On Here? And You Dad, Didn't I
Tell You Not To Set Your Filthy Feet In Here
Again??

Ray: So He's My Brother?

Luu's Mom: Can Everyone Please Sit Down?
Olona Please Go To Your Room And Esihle You
Should Also Excuse Us

Ray: So Esihle We Meet Again

Fuck You Ray! Luu's Mom Looked At Me

Luu's Mom: You Know Each Other?

Ray: Yeah We've Met Whe-

Lutho: CAN ANYONE TELL ME THE HELL IS THIS?

Luu's Mom: Olona Go

Olona Left To Her Room

Me: Uhhm I Think I Should Leave

Lutho: You Ain't Going Anywhere Sugar

Ray: Nikka So She's That Good In Bed?

Lutho: Who The Fuck Is This Crazy Idiot?

Luu's Mom Sat Down

Luu's Mom: He's Your Twin Brother

Lutho: THE FUCK??

Ray: I HAVE A TWIN BROTHER?? That's Great

Lutho: HE'S MY WHAT??

WHOA!! THE FUCK?? But It Was Non My
Business

Lutho: MOM WHAT THE HELL DID YOU JUST
SAY??

Luu's Dad: Son Please List-

Lutho: DON'T YOU EVER TALK TO ME, I AIN'T
YOUR SON REMEMBER?

Ray: This Family Got Issues I See

Me: Lutho I Think I Should Really Leave

Lutho: You Know What? All Of You Get Outta My
House

Ray: Yho

Luu's Mom: Can You Just Let Me Expl-

Lutho: EXPLAIN MY THIRD PARALYZED FOOT,OUT!!

Luu's Dad: See How Disrespectful This B-

Lutho: XOLELANI ZIZWE GET OUT OF MY HOUSE!

Ray: Uhhm Before You Kick All Of Our Butts Out,I Don't Have Anywhere To Go To So Where Am I Gonna Crash At?

Lutho: Don't You Have Your Own Money? Go To A Hotel Or Some'ing,Y'all Just Get Out Of My House

Luu's Mom: Lutho Can-

Lutho: Mom I Think You Should Leave Too

Ray: Dude Are You Givin' Me This Room To Sleep Or What?

Lutho: Do I Look Like Your Friend Dude?

Ray: No You Look Like My Twin Coz You're My Twin

Lutho: Dude I Ain't Your Twin!

Ray: Nikka We've Got The Same DNA,Please Show Me Where I'm Gonna Sleep

I Couldn't Help But Chuckle At How Angry Lutho Was While Ray Was Just Chilled With a Smile On His Face

Luu's Mom: I'll Come Back Tomorrow So That We Can Talk

Lutho:.....

Ray: We'll Be Waiting For You Mommy Dearest

Luu's Mom And Dad Walked Out,Lutho Just Walked To His Room And Left Ray And I In The Lounge

Ray: What Happened To Him Being Your Ex?

Me: He Still Is

Ray: So My Twin Brother Is The Father To The Kid I Wanted To Father And He's Datin' With My Crush

Me: Ohh Please, Follow Me

Ray: To Where?

Me: Didn't You Want A Place To Sleep?

Ray: So We Going To Your Place? OBJ:p (Bitin' His Lower Lip)

Me: No Idiot, I'm Going To Show You Where You Gonna Sleep

Ray: Ain't The Man Of The House Going To Be Mad Atchu?

Me: I'm Sure He'll Understand, He's Still Shocked That's All

Ray: He's A Lucky Guy To Have You Hey

Me: Yeah Whatever, Follow Me

I Walked Him To One Of The Guest Rooms

Ray: Thanks

Me: Pleasure

Ray: So I Was Right When I Called You The
Angel I Was Lookin' For, I Had To Meet You
Sister In Law

Me: Sister In Law?

Ray: Yes Skwiza

Me: Good Night Raymond Lulutho Mr
Troublesome Wilson

We Both Laughed

Ray: Good Night Dear

I Walked To Lutho's Room And Found Him
Sitting On The Bed With His Face Buried In His
Hands

Me: I Showed Ray Where To Sleep

Lutho: I Told Him To Take His Flat Ass Outta
My House

Me: He Needs A Place To Stay Luu

Lutho: Then Let Him Go To His Father Or
Mother's Place

Me: While He's Got A Caring And Lovin' Brother
Who Got a Big Ass House?

Lutho Lifted His Head Up And Looked At
Me,Smiling

Me: What?

Lutho: I'm Only Givin' Him Tonight,He Better Find Another Place

Me: I Knew Deep Down In There You Care

I Sat Next To Him,He Took My Hand And Brushed It

Lutho: Do You Think I'm Being Unfair To Mom,Dad Or Ray?

Me: Bout?

Lutho: Bout What I Just Did

Me: You're Just Shocked,I Mean You've Spent 21 Years Not Knowing You Had a Twin Brother.And To Top It Up,He Turned Out To Be The Guy You Found Witcho Baby Mama And Got Mad And Jealous

We Both Laughed,I Looked At Him And He Was

Also Lookin' At Me.

My Heart Just Started To Beat Fast,His Eyes,His Face,His Lips,His Smell,Just Everything Looked So Perfect And I Just Realized How Much I Missed All Of It.The Next Thing His Lips Were Smashed On Mine,We Kissed For A While And I Could Feel My Body Going Warm.Lutho Put Me On His Lap And We Continued Kissing

"Thobela"

Me: Uhhm Lutho This Is Wro-

He Smashed His Lips On Mine Again,I Couldn't Resist The Connection,The Heat,The Love.I'd Be Lying If I'd Say I Didn't Want Lutho To Make Love With Me On That Very Same Spot.

I Pushed Him And Got Off

Me: This Is Wrong! I've Moved On,I'm With
Someone Else Now

I Walked To The Door,Lutho's Hand Got To It
First And He Closed It.He Put Another One On
My Waist And Turned Me To Face Him

Lutho: If You Love Him Then Make Me Stop

He Smashed His Lips On Mine Again,Put My
Hands Together And Pulled Em Up,He Pinned
Me Against The Door And We Kissed Each
Other Hungrily.

He Took My Jacket Off And Threw It To
Wherever It Landed,I Took Off His.He Unzipped
My Dress And Let It Go Down My Body As He
Watched It Fall,I Pulled Off His T-shirt And Ohh
How I Missed His Hot Body OBJ:p

He Went Down To My Neck And Placed Wet

Kisses All 'round It As Soft Moans Escaped From My Mouth.He Touched My Belly With Both Of His Hands And Pecked My Lips,He Moved One Down To My Panty And Made His Way To The Honey Pot.He Rubbed My Clit First In a Soft And Nice Way

Me: Mhmhm

The Kissing Got Stronger And Harder,So Was His Rubbing On The Honey Pot

Me: Mhmhm Lutho Ahh

My Teeth Kept Biting My Lower Lip,Fuck Knows How Much I Missed Lutho Doing Those Things To My Body.He Finally Slid One Finger In And Explored My Inside,My Moaning Got Louder As He Sucked And Kissed On My Neck.He Finally

Pulled Out And I Got Down And Unzipped His Pants,Pulling Em Down.The Shaft Was Already Up On Its Feet,Ready To Do Some Working Out And Have An Adventure.I Played With It Few Times Using My Hand Then Lutho Pulled Me Up And Put Me On The Bed While Kickin' Off His Pants And Boxers.He Pulled Down My Panties And Opened My Legs Wider,He First Played With My Clit And Hungrily Feasted On It.I Could Feel My Legs Going All Wobbly Dubbly On Me And I Felt The Juices Comin' Out.He Cleaned His House ([OBJ]:v Don't Look At Me That Way,It's His House)

He Laid Behind Me And We Did The Did,Y'all Know What Went Down [OBJ]:)

After That Hot,Breathtakin' Session We Laid On The Bed Tryna Catch Our Breathes.Lutho Put My Head On His Chest And Played With My Hair

Lutho: That Was Great

Me: And I'm Tired

Lutho: Should Let Me Help You Work Out More Often So You'll Get Used To It

Me: No Thanks,I'd Die Sir

He Chuckled And Kissed My Forehead

Lutho: I Missed You Baby

Me: I Just Wanna Sleep

Lutho: Go Ahead,I'm Sure This Bed Also Missed You

Me: Please Text Mom And Tell Her I'm Gonna Sleep Over

Lutho: Kay I Will,Good Night

Me: Night

I Smiled And Pecked His Lips Then Drifted To

Sleep.I Woke Up To The Lights On,I Sat Up
Straight And Looked At Lutho Who Was Getting
Dressed In An All Black Attire

Me: Going Somewhere?

Lutho: Got a Mission With The Guys

Me: Can I Tag Along?

He Chuckled And Came To Peck My Lips

Lutho: I Still Need You And Princess Alive

Me: You Talkin' Like You Gonna Die

Lutho: I Might

Me: Then Please Don't Go

Lutho: Sorry Bbe I Can't Cancel Now

He Took Out His Gun And Tried To Load It

Me: Lemme

Lutho: My Gangster Queen

Me: Please Don't

Lutho: I'm Glad You Had Your Periods And
Never Saw It That Day We First Met

Me: You Evil Piece Of Shit

I Threw A Bullet At Him But He Ducked,He
Opened His Wall Closet And Came Out With a
Big Black Bag While I Loaded His Gun For Him

Me: Guess I'm Gonna Get A Lamborghini For
Helpin' You Out Here

Lutho: Anything You Want Sugar Boom
Boom,It's All Yours

He Took The Gun Then We Had A Not So Long
Kiss Then Lutho Broke It When His Phone
Rang.He Picked It Up And Talked To Whoever
Called

Lutho: I Gotta Go Bbe

Me: Wish I Could Do Some'ing To Make You
Stay

Lutho: Don't You Want Your Lamborghini?

Me: I Do

Lutho: Then Let Daddy Go And Make Money

He Pecked My Lips,Pulled Down The Blankets
From Me

Me: Lutho It's Cold! Nikka Can't You See I'm
Naked?

Lutho: Wanna Kiss My Princess Before I Leave

He Kissed My Tummy Then Moved Down To My
Cookie,He Took Few Bites From It.When I Was
Already Gettin' In The Mood,He Stopped

Me: That Ain't Fair

Lutho: I'll Be Back To Give You More

Me: My Last Kiss Before You Leave Then

He Pecked My Lips Then Left,I Tried To Fall
Asleep But I Just Kept Havin' Flashbacks Of
What Went Down.I Drifted Away While In My
Thoughts.

I Woke Up To Someone Knockin' At The Door,I
First Checked The Time It Was 5 In The Morn.I
Just Put On Lutho's Big Jacket On My Naked
Body And Walked To The Front To Open The
Door,It Was Siya With Blood On His Hands,He
Looked Freaked Out

Me: Siya What's Wrong Witchu? Can't You See
It's Still 5 In The Morning? What Do You Want?
Lutho Ain't Here

Siya: Can We Get Inside?

Me: You Got Blood All Over Your Hands

We Got In

Siya: Uhhm I Don't Know How To Tell You
This...Eish

Me: Wassup?

Siya: Look Please Don't Stress Too Much Coz
You'll Hurt The Baby

Me: Siya You Creepin' Me Out

Siya: Uhhm Lutho Got Shot

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT54 ♡ ↓

I Couldn't Breathe Properly, My Whole Body Just
Got Warm. I Couldn't Think

'It Can't Be Real, He Said He'll Come Back For
Me. He Can't Die, Princess And I Need Him'

Tears Just Started To Blur Everything

Siya: Drink Up

I Didn't Even See Siya Going To The Kitchen, He
Helped Me Drink Up

Me: Tell Me He's Okay Siya! Tell Me He's Going To Live.I Need Him,Princess Needs Him [OBJ]:'(

Siya: I'm Sure He'll Be Fine

Me: Promise Me He's Gonna Be Okay

Siya: Esihle I Don't Wanna Make That Kinda Promise,He's Badly Injured And He Los-

Me: NO NO! SIYA NO! [OBJ]:'(LUTHO CAN'T DIE,HE CAN'T LEAVE ME LIKE THIS [OBJ]:'(HE CAN'T,SIYA HE CAN'T [OBJ]:'(HE CAN'T DIE,HE SHOULDN'T DIE.He Can't He He He-

I Just Lost My Breath

Siya: Esihle Don't Do This To Yourself,You Gonna Lose The Baby

He Hugged Me While Brushing My Back

Ray: Wassup?

Siya: So You The Newly Found Brother Who Fell From Heaven

Ray: Nikka I Dunno You,You Don't Know Me,Let's Keep It At That.What's Wrong Esihle?

Me: Lutho Is He He No No!

Ray: Hey Lutho Is What?

Siya: He Got Shot

Ray: WHAT? WHEN? HOW?

Siya: That's Not For You To Know

Ray: You For Real?

Siya Took The Glass Of Water And Helped Me Drink Up Again,From The Blood On Siya's Hands,Lutho Lost A Lotta Blood.

I Tried To Calm Down But It Was Hard

"He Said He Was Gonna Come Back,I Should've

Stopped Him"

[OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

Siya: We Drove Him To His Doctor,I Left Him
Trying All His Best To Save Him

Me: How Did This All Happen?

Siya: It Was A Setup But We Didn't Get The
Chance To See Who Shot Him

Me: Could It Be The Police?

Siya: Nhaa It's Probably Someone Who's Got
Some Beef With Us

Me: Who Else Got Shot?

Siya: Only Luu

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Siya: Don't Stress Too Much,You Might
Endanger The Child's Life

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Siya: Uhhm I Should Get Going,I'm Gonna Go And Take A Shower Then Drive Back To The Doctor

Me: Can I Go Witchu?

Siya: I Don't Think That's A Good Idea

Me: HE'S THE FATHER OF MY CHILD DAMN IT!!

Ray: Uhhm I Also Think It's Not A Good Idea To See Him Now,It's A Bit Too Soon

Me: I Didn't Ask For Your Opinion Raymond,I'm Going To See Lutho Whether You Like It Or Not!

Ray: Look What You Gonna See There Might Bring You To Labour In A Minute

Siya Chuckled,I Just Looked At Him

Ray: Do It For The Baby,Wait Till His Condition Gets Better (Looks At Siya) Can I Talk To You Dude Before You Go?

Siya: Yeah Sure

They Both Walked Out While I Just Sat On a Couch And Thought Bout The Good Time He Gave Me The Previous Night,I Wouldn't Be Able To Live Without All Of That,He Was My All.I Wouldn't Be Able To Live Without Him.I Just Crouched On The Couch And Sobbed

Ray: Should I Make You Something To Eat?

Me: I Don't Want Food Ray,I Want Lutho,He's All I Want.I Want Nothing More,I Only Want Him,Only Him!

He Came To Sit Next To Me

Ray: I'm Sure He's Gonna Be Okay

Me: He Has To Be,Princess Needs Him,I Need

Him [OBJ]:'

Ray: He'll Come Back For You And Princess

He Hugged Me And I Sobbed On His Chest
While He Tried To Calm Me Down

Ray: So You Know Bout The Life He Lives?

Me: I Know,How Do You Know Bout The Life
Lutho Lives?

Ray: The Nikka Who Was Here,Siya Ayt?! He
Told Me.Don't Worry It's The Same Shit That
Made Ex Dad To Disown Me

Me: And Mr Zizwe Thinks Lutho Is The Black
Sheep Of The Family While You All Zizwe Boys
Are Nothing But Trouble

Ray: Is There Another One?

Me: Yeah,Lutho's- Your Cousin Brother,He's
Name Is Menzi And There's Some Bad Blood

Between Him And Lutho

Ray: What Happened?

Me: It's A Long Story

Ray: I See,Lemme Make You Some Cup Of Tea

Me: I Don't Want Anything Ray

Ray: You Eatin' For Two Remember?! I'll Make
You Something To Eat Too

Me: You Don't Have To

Ray: I Want To

He Left To The Kitchen Then Cape Back With a
Bowl Of Cereal

Ray: I Don't Know Where Other Things Are So I
Thought I Should Make You This

Me: Uhhm Thanks

He Gave Me The Bowl And I Ate A Lil

Ray: So Are You Gonna Go To Your House Or
You Gonna Stay Here?

Me: I Dunno But I Just Wanna Go And Lie Down
Now

Ray: Okay Cool

I Gave Him The Bowl And Walked To Lutho's
Room,Just The Smell Of Him In The Room
Made Me Break Down All Over Again.

I Sat On The Bed And Cried Again,The Smell Of
His Jacket Just Reminded Me Of The Way He
Made Love To Me The Previous Night.I Dunno
Why But The Night Kept Playing Itself In My
Head.

I Fell Asleep On The Bed,I Woke Up Being
Covered By a Fleece.

I Went To Bath Then Wore My Clothes,I Found
Ray Typing Something On His Laptop In
Different Clothes

Me: Brought Your Clothes Too?

Ray: Yeap

Me: Uhhm Do You Have a Car?

Ray: Jeah Want Me To Drive You Somewhere?

Me: Jeah

Ray: Okay Lemme Finish Here

He Was Typing An Email And He Wrote Dr
Wilson

Me: You're A Doctor?

He Chuckled And Nodded

Me: Why Didn't You Tell Me When We Met?

Ray: Didn't Think I Had To

Me: Ain't You Young To Be A Doctor?

Ray: I'm Still Studying Sweetheart

Me: So Now That You Here,What Will Happen To Your Studies?

Ray: I'm Done For This Year,Next Year Imma Be Starting My 4 Year Period At a Medical School

Me: That's Too Much

Ray: It's Perfect For Me

Me: You Love Helping People Don't You?

Ray: Kinda....Done! Let's Go

Me: Thanks

Ray: Anything For My Brother's Wife

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Ray: I'm Sorry

Me: It's Fine

Ray: I'll Go And See Him And See What I Can Do

Me: Thanks

Olona Got Out Of Hee Room Yawning

Olona: Good Morning Sis Esihle,Hello Bhut?

Ray: Ray Call Me Bhut' Ray

Olona: Where's Bhut' Luu

Ray And I Looked At Each Other

Olona: Is He Okay Sis Esihle?

Me: Lutho Is Sick Bbe,He's At The Hospital

Olona: What Happened? Is He Gonna Be Okay?

Me: I'm Sure He'll Be Okay Bye,Come Here

I Hugged Her And Kissed Her Forehead

Me: Will You Be Able To Stay With Her?

Ray: I Still Have To Go To Luu So I Don't Think I'll Be Able To

Me: Do You Mind Comin' To My House Lholho?

Olona: Is Bhut' Luu Gonna Pick Me Up?

Me: Yes Baby He Will

Olona: Then Let's Go

I Made Some Cereal For Her,Bathed Her And Took Her Lil Bag With Her Clothes In Her Room Then Ray Drove Us To My House.I Found Mom,Dad And Owethu In The Lounge

Owethu: You Brought The Chipmunk With You

Olona Ran To Owethu And Hugged Her,Dad Got Up And Came To Me.He Hugged Me

Dad: I'm So Sorry Baby

Me: You Know? [OBJ]:'('

Dad: The Guys I Asked To Help Lutho Out With Heists And Eerrthing Told Me What Went Down

Me: What If He Doesn't Make It Daddy? [OBJ]:'('

Dad: Let's Think Positive Princess

Owethu: Is Everything Okay Big Sis?

Mom: Lutho Is Not Well

Owethu: I'm So Sorry

Vusi, Elethu And Olwethu Got In

Elethu: Baby Daddy Fucked Up Again?

Me:..... [OBJ]:' (

Vusi: Hey Wassup?

Mom: This Is No Time To Make Jokes, You Two
Just Go To Your Room

Elethu: So It's That Serious?

Mom: Just Go!

Me: I Think I Should Go And Lie Down

Owethu: I'll Take Care Of Lholho

Me: Thanks

I Walked To My Room And Crouched Myself On
The Bed While I Cried My Lungs Out, I Couldn't
Sleep, I Just Kept Having Flashbacks Of The
Good Times I Had With Lutho. My Phone Rang, It
Was Ray

Call Convo

Ray: Hey I Just Checked Him Out And I'm Sorry
But There's Nothing I Can Do

Me: How's He?

Ray: Look Just Be Strong For The Baby And
Olona,I Called Dad And Mom And Told Them
Everything.Maybe They Might Come And Pick
Olona Up

Me: How Is He Ray?

Ray: I'm Sorry But His Condition Is Critical But
Let's Keep On Being Optimistic,He's Strong

Me: Will He Ever Make It Ray?

Ray: Look I Gotta Go Take Care

He Hung Up [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

Mom Got In With A Plate With Food

Mom: I Brought You Something

Me: I Ain't Hungry Ma

Mom: Baby You're Eating For The Baby Too

Me: The Baby Ain't Hungry Too

Mom: Till When Will You Starve Yourself?

Me: Till Lutho Comes Back

Mom Put The Plate Aside And Sat On The Bed

Mom: I Also Got This Devastated The Times
Your Father Got Shot

Me: How Did You Hold Up?

Mom: By Not Losing Hope,By Believing That
He'd Come Back For Me And You Kids

Me: Mom It Ain't That Easy,Lutho Ain't Dad

Mom: I Know....Look Don't Stress Too
Much,You Might End Up Hurting The Baby

I Nodded

Mom: Your Grandma's Are Arriving Tomorrow

Me: Really? At Least They Will Make Me Smile

Mom: You'll Be Fine Baby, Eat Up And Get Some Rest

Owethu Got In

Owethu: Lutho's Mom Is Here To See You

Mom: Go Bbe

I Got Up And Went To The Lounge

Me: Hey Ma

Luu's Mom: What Happened?

Me: I Shouldn't Have Let Him Leave

Ma OBJ: '(This Is All My Fault

Luu's Mom: Of Course It's Your Fault, Ever Since
Lutho Met You Nothing Has Been Going Good
For Him

What The What?? OBJ OBJ

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT55 ♡ ↓

Like Really?? Was This Woman For Real??

Mom: Sorry Madam Did You Come Here To Insult My Daughter? (Standing Behind Me)

Luu's Mom: I Wasn't Talkin' To You!

Mom: If That's How You Treat People In Their Houses,I Ain't One Of Them Sweetheart.If You Got Nothing Sane To Say,Get Your Flat Bloody Ass Outta My House

Luu's Mom: Now I See Where Your Daughter Got Her Whoring Tendencies

Me: WHAT??

Mom: The Fuck Did You Just Say??

Luu's Mom: You Heard Me,Esihle Is A Bitch Just Like You

The Next Thing I Saw Luu's Mom Fumbling Backwards With Mom Biting Her Lower Lip

Mom: Call Me Or My Daughter A Bitch One

More Time,I'll Kill Your Ass And Throw You To
Dogs And Live My Life Like I Did Nothing

The Gangster Queen [OBJ]:v Whoop Whoop!

Mom: Get Out Of My House Before I Do
Something Really Bad To You!

Olona: Mommy (Runnin' To Her)

Luu's Mom: Let's Get Out Of Here Baby,You
Shouldn't Stay Here

Olona: But Ma I Wa-

Luu's Mom: I SAID LET'S GET OUT OF HERE!
YOUR HOME DIDN'T BURN DOWN

Olona: I Wanna Stay Here! [OBJ]:'(!

Her Mother Pulled Her By Her Hand

Olona: My Clothes OBJ: '(

Luu's Mom: Go And Fetch Them! We're Going Home

Olona: Sis Esihle Please Talk To Mom

Me: I'm Sorry Bbe Bu-

Mom: If The Kid Wants To Stay, Let Her

Luu's Mom: I Won't Let My Child Stay In a Pigsty

Mom: I See You Still Crave For My Slaps, This Kid Wants To Stay Here And She's Going To. YOU! Get Out Of My House

Luu's Mom: She's My Child Woman!

Mom: She Wants To Stay Here In My House Woman And I Don't Blame Her

Dad: That's Enough Now! (Gettin' In The Lounge) What's Going On Here?

Mom: This Woman Insults Me And Esihle In My House Musa! Can You Believe That?

Dad: I Think You Should Leave Madam

Luu's Mom: This Ain't Over Yet

Mom: Wait Till It Begins Sweetheart

Dad: Pumpkin!

Luu's Mom Walked Out And Banged The Door

Mom: Was I Hard Core?

Dad: You Were Hot

They Kissed

Me: Euww

Olona Laughed And We Went To My
Room,Owethu Took Her To Her Room While I
Just Lied On My Bed And Tried Not To Cry.My
Phone Rang,It Was Thobela

* Call Convo*

Thobela: Can I Pick You Up Now?

Me: What? For What?

Thobela: We Had a Date Today

Me: Ohh That,I'm Sorry I'm Not In The Right Mood For Going Out

Thobela: Then We'll Just Stay In My House For Movies

Me: I'm Not Feeling Well Thobela I'm Sorry

Thobela: You Okay?

Me: Honestly No I'm Not OBJ: '(

Thobela: Wassup Bbe?

Me: We'd Rather Not Talk Bout It

Thobela: You Can Talk Bout Anything And Everything With Me

Me: Lutho Got Shot [OBJ]:'(

Thobela: Lutho?

Me: Uhhm The Father Of My Child

Thobela: Ohh...Uhhm What Happened?

Me: Uhhm I Think It Was Robbery Or Something

Thobela: I See...So Things Ain't Complicated
Between The Two Of You Anymore?

Me: Bout That,We Need To Talk

Thobela: You're Back With Him,Aren't You?

Me: Thobela He's The Father Of My Child

Thobela: Bye Esihle

Me: Dude Can We-

The Phone Went Tititi

Great! [OBJ]:'(I Just Started Crying All Over
Again.Vusi Got In

Vusi: You Okay?!

I Shooked My Head While Tears Rolled Down
My Cheeks

Vusi: Come Here

He Hugged The Living Hell Outta Me

Vusi: I'm Sure Lutho's Going To Be Okay

Me: What If He Doesn't? What If He Dies And
Leaves Me And Princess? OBJ: '(

Vusi: Negative Thoughts Are Toxic Sis, Let's
Hope For The Best

Me: Can You Borrow Me Your Car?

Vusi: Where You Going?

Me: Just To Clear My Head

Vusi: You Can't Drive In This State

Me: Staying In This House Is Not Good For Me,I
Need Some Air

Vusi: Can I Drive You?

Me: I Need To Be Alone

Vusi: Please Drive Safely And Be Careful Kay?!

Me: I Will

He Gave Me His Keys,I Thanked Him And Went
Out To His Car.I Drove Myself To The Park And
Sat On The Bench And Cried All Over Again,It
Felt Like My Heart Was Being Ripped Off My
Chest OBJ: '(

I Rubbed My Tummy And Decided To Talk To
My Baby

Me: Daddy's Gonna Be Okay Right? He'll Come
Back For Mommy And You,We Gonna Be A

Happy Family.Dad's Loves You Okay?! He Loves You And Mommy So Much

I Felt Some Kickin',My Baby Kicked [OBJ]:'(I Just Wished Lutho Was There To Feel Our Baby Kickin'.

I Took Out My Phone And Called Anga

* Call Convo *

Anga: MaZizwe

Me:... [OBJ]:'(

Anga: You Okay?

Me: How Can I Be Okay When I Don't Know If Lutho Is Alive Or Dead? [OBJ]:v

Anga: He's Condition Is Critical

Me: FUCK That Anga I Wanna See Him!

Anga: I'm Sorry You Can't

Me: ANGA I WANNA SEE LUTHO NOW! DO YOU WANT HIM TO DIE BEFORE I EVEN SAW HIM??

Anga: Stop Exaggera-

Me: ANGA JUST GIMME THE DAMN DOCTOR'S ADDRESS

Anga: Okay Okay Calm Down

He Gave Me The Address Then I Drove To The Doctor,I Sat In The Car For A While And Just Kept Imagining How He Could Be.I Cried And Cried Then Finally Collected Myself Together And Went In,I Bumped Into Siya

Siya: Whatchu Doing Here?

Me: Same Reason You're Here

Siya: You Shouldn-

Me: Save Me That Crap! Where Is He?

Siya: Esihke Plea-

Me: WHERE'S HE SIYA??

Siya: Okay Okay Calm Down

He Walked Me To The Room Lutho Was In,He
Lied There With So Many Machines 'round Him,I
Couldn't Hold Back The Tears.Siya Caught Me
And Hugged Me

Siya: I Think You Should Leave

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Siya: Let's Go

Me: NO!

Siya: No?

Me: I Wanna Talk To Him First

Siya: Okay Then

He Wiped My Tears And Walked Out,I Sat On a
Chair Next To His Bed And Took His Hand.I
Tried Not To Cry,I Kissed His Hand

Me: Hey Mr Zizwe [OBJ:] (Uhhm Princess Kicked
Today,I'm Sure She Would've Loved For You To
Be There On Her First Time But I'm Sure You'll
Be There Next Time [OBJ:] [OBJ:] (Last Night When
You Left,You Took a Bite Of The Cookie And
Said You'll Be Back For More,You Didn't Come
Back.I Should've Stopped You But I Didn't.It
Pains My Heart To Think Of How Awesome You
Made Love To Me Last Night But Now You're In
a Hospital Bed.Please Come Back For Me,For
Princess,For Lholho,For Ray,We Need You [OBJ:] (

Voice: Hey You Shouldn't Be Here

I Turned And Saw Ray Gettin' Inside The Room

Me: How Many Times Did They Shoot Him?

Ray: I Think You Should Go

Me: Please Tell Me

Ray: The Doctor Will Be Here For His
Operation,It's Time For You To Leave

Me: I Have The Right To Know Ray

Ray: I'll Check Up On You Later

It Was Clear That He Wasn't Going To Tell Me,I
Got Up And Walked Out

Ray: We'll Do All We Can To Save His Life

I Just Walked And Didn't Look Back,I Got In The
Car And Drove Back Home.I First Went To Buy
Myself Something To Eat,I Saw Zona Walkin'
Hand In Hand With Menzi.I Walked To Them

Me: The Hell Is This?

Menzi: Shame Your Eyes Are Even Swollen And Red

Me: Zona What The Hell Is This??

Zona: What?

Me: You Walkin' Hand In Hand With Lutho's Enemy

Zona: In Case You Didn't Know,I Ain't Bowin' Down To Your Boyfriend Who's Gonna Be Dead Anytime Soon

Menzi: I Knew Three Bullets Would Send Him Straight To Hell,Where He Belongs

Me: WHAT?? YOU SHOT HIM??

Menzi: With My Queen's Help

They Kissed

Zona: I Gotta Go Babe,I'll See You Tonight

Me: YOU BITCH!

Zona: I See You Wanna Die Witcho

Boyfriend,That's So Sweet But We're In A Public Place,I'll Fulfill Your Wish Some Other Time

With That Said,She Left

Me: Menzi How Could You Be So Cruel?? Lutho Is Your Damn Cousin!! You Even Turned His Friend Against Him! You'll Go To Hell

Menzi: He Started The War And I Told You Before,I Vacate To Hell,It's Almost Like A Home To Me And Ohhh Bout Zona,My Dick Can Make Any Woman Do Anything For Me Too Bad You Never Got The Chance To Get A Taste Of It

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT56 ♡ ↓

I Couldn't Help But Release A Slap Across His Face, People Turned And Looked At Us. Menzi Just Snort-Laughed And Held His Cheek

Menzi: Fightin' Hubby's Battle I See

Me: You're Nothing But a Soulless Monster
Menzi, You're The Devil Himself!

I Just Lost My Appetite For Food, I Turned Back And Got In The Car. I Sobbed A Lil And Finally Drove Off.

I Drove To Thobela's House,I Needed To Make Things Right With Him.

I Parked In Front Of His House Then Knocked On The Door,Litha Opened Up

Litha: What A Lovely Surprise

Thobela: Who Is It?

Me: Can I Talk To Thobela?

Litha: Come In

He Opened The Door For Me,I Got In.Thobela Was Already Up On His Feet,Facing The Door

Me: Hi

Thobela: Sure

Me: Can We Talk?

Litha: I'll Be Back Bro

Thobela: Sure

Litha Walked Out

Me: Thanks

Thobela: Be Quick

Me: Can I Have A Glass Of Water First Please?

Thobela: Sure

He Disappeared To The Kitchen Then Came
Back With A Glass Of Water

Me: Thanks

I Drank Up

Thobela: Sit Down

Me: Thanks

We Both Sat Down

Me: First Of All Thobela You're A Good Guy a Loving One At That

Thobela: Just Not Good Or Loving Enough For You

Me: Lutho And I Have Been Through A Lot Thobela And I-

Thobela: If You Came Here To Tell Me How Much You Love Him Then I Ain't Interested

Me: [OBJ]:'(I'm Sorry For Breakin' Your Heart But I Was Just Confused,Hurt.I Just Needed Someone To Make Me Feel Loved

Thobela: And That Someone Happened To Be Me

Me: I'm Sorry

Thobela: Your Sorry Won't Mend My Heart
Esihle

Me: I'm Really Sorry

Someone Opened The Door

Girl: Bbe Look What I Go- Who The Hell Is She?

Thobela: Baby This Is Esihle,Esihle This Is My
Girlfriend Lerato

Me: Girlfriend??

Lerato: Yes Girlfriend,His Girlfriend Of 3 Years

Me: Wow

Thobela Just Stood There Like Nothing Was
Happening,So He Sat There,Makin' Me Feel Bad
Of Gettin' Back With Lutho While He Knew I Was

Just His Side Plate

Me: Okay Girlfriend Of Three Years,I Think It's
My Cue To Leave

Thobela: Jean I Think You Should Really Leave

I Must Say,I Was Really Relieved That Thobela
Wasn't In Love With Me Coz I Wouldn't Forgive
Myself For Breakin' His Heart.Ray Called

* Call Convo *

Me: Raymond

Ray: The Operation Went Well

Me: I Hope You Found All Three Of The Bullets

Ray: How Did Yo-

Me: If Siya Is There,Tell Him That I Want To

Meet With All Of Them Maybe At Anga's Crib
ASAP

Ray: It Sounds Urgent

Me: It Is Urgent

Ray: Should I Come Too?

Me: Yeah Sure

I Hung Up And Drove To Anga's Crib,Just When
I Parked Three Cars Arrived Speeding Like They
Racing.

I Got Outta The Car.Siya,Ray,Bonele And Onele
Came Outta The Cars.They Came To Me

Siya: Is Errthing Okay?

Me: We Should Get Inside

We Went In And Damn We Found Anga Fuckin

With Two Bitches In The Kitchen. When He Saw Us, He Took a Plate And Covered His Front. I Must Say His Body Was All Built Up And The Full Package

Anga: Jeez Dudes Why Didn't You Call?

Siya: Really Dude??

Anga: I Needed To Fuck My Stress Away Marn

Siya: You Two Hoes Get Dressed And Leave

Girl1: What Bout Our Money?

Anga: Siya Take It Outta My Wallet

Siya Did As He Was Told Then The Bitches Left, Anga Walked To His Room To Get Dressed

Ray: I Think Imma Love Life Here

Onele: Where You From Nikka?

Ray: From The States

Onele: How Did You Get There Nikka While Your Real Parents Are This Side?

Ray: Adoption, They Gave Me Up For Adoption To Some White Folks

Anga Came Back All Dressed Up

Anga: So Wassup?

Me: I Met With Menzi And Zona Today

Ray: Menzi The Cousin?

Me: Yeah...They Seemed Cosy So I Went To Them

Onele: But I Thought What They Had Going On Ended A Long Time Ago

Me: It Seems Serious This Time 'round

Siya: Whoa If Zona Is Fuckin' With Menzi That

Means She Ain't On Our Side Anymore

Bonele: Guys

We All Looked At Him

Bonele: She's The One Who Sold Us Out To
Menzi

Onele: But She Wasn't 'round When We Were
Plannin' The Heist

Bonele: I Told Her Bout It

Siya: WHAT??

Anga Went To Bonele And Gave Him Two
Punches,When He Was Bout To Throw A Third
One,Ray Pulled Him Away

Anga: BONELE ARE YOU CRAZY DUDE??

Bonele: Nikka That Wasn't Necessary,How Was I Supposed To Know That She Was Suckin' Menzi's Dick?

Anga: YOU CAN BE DUMB SOMETIMES BONEL-

Ray: Let's All Calm Down

Anga: You Don't Know Shit Bout Us So Shut Up Dude And Don't You Ever Do What You Just Did Ever Again Or Else I'll-

Me: For Your Own Information Anga,Ray Knows A Lot Bout You And The Shit Life Y'all Live Coz It's The Same Shit That Brought Him Here.

I Looked At All Of Them

Me: Menzi And Zona Admitted It Themselves That They Shot Lutho

Siya: THAT BITCH!

Anga: We Should Avenge Every Shit Today

Ray: Wait Wait

Anga: WHAT? Look Here Boy Just Coz You're
Luu's Twin That Doesn't Mean You'll Be Takin'
His Position

Ray: You Talk Too Much Nikka Like You're A
Bitch

Siya: Finally Someone Else Sees That Anga Ain't
Straight

Anga: Siya I'll Kick Your Ass So Hard That You'll
Never Be Able To Sit Ever Again

Siya: Gonna Kick It Or Gonna Tap It? And Ohh
Nikka I'm Straight

Anga: Siya!

He Walked To Him But Siya Got Up And Stood
Few Feet Away From Us

Me: Can We Be Serious Guys And Gays

Anga: Not You Too!

I Just Chuckled And Shrugged My Shoulders

Ray: This Menzi Guy Sounds Dangerous

Onele: He Is

Ray: Then Seekin' Your Revenge Now Will Only Complicate Things, He's Expecting You To Fire Now But Don't

Anga: What? Why?

Ray: Aren't You Listening To Me? I'm Tellin' You That The Nikka Is Expectin' Y'all To Fire Back Now And He's Already Waiting For You With A Very Tight Army That I Know

Siya: And How Do You Know That?

Ray: Nikka I Was The Leader Of My Gang, I Know Everything Bout Enemy Gangs And This Menzi Guy Is Nothing Compared To The Nikka's I Was

Fighting

Anga: In Case You Forgot, This Ain't The States

Ray: Which Makes It Easy To Defeat Him

Bonele: So Do You Have a Plan?

Ray: I Still Have To Think First But We Ain't
Firing Back Now

Anga: We?

Ray: Yes I Want To Help Out Too

Anga: You Can Help But Don't Think You'll-

Ray: I Don't Wanna Take Anyone's Position, I
Just Want To Help Out

Anga: Good

I Left The Guys And Drove Home, I Found The
Family Watching T.V

Me: Dad Can I Talk To You?

Dad: Okay

We Went To My Room

Me: Menzi Is The One Who Shot Lutho

Dad: That Ain't No Surprise To Me

Me: OBJ: '(With Help From A Member Of Lutho's Gang

Dad: It's a Girl?

Me: How Did You Know?

Dad: Ladies Are The Less Cohensed Parts Of a Big Hill

Me: Meaning?

Dad: They Shouldn't Know A Lot Bout What's Going In The Game Besides The Queen,It's Easy For The Enemy To Get Through Them

Me: I See

Dad: You Still Have a Lot To Learn And Lutho Too

Me: Can You Teach Us Then?

Dad: I Still Have My Own Army That I Have To Pull Together But I'll Be More Than Willing To Help Him Out Coz He's With You And I Want Nothing But a Safe Environment For You

Me: Can I Also Be Part Of The Army You Pulling Together?

Dad: You Datin' With Lutho,You Can't Have Both Worlds

Me: Does That Mean I'll Have T-

Dad: Yes Sweetheart

Me: But I-

Dad: You Have No Choice Princess,If You Gonna Be With Him,You'll Have To

Me: You Have No Problem With That?

Dad: Not At All

Me: Thanks Dad

Dad: I Knew The Minute That I Found Out Bout Lutho That I Was Gonna Lose You To Him And Hi World.He's a Strong Young Man And He Has A GoodPotent Thing Going On But I'll Strengthen Him And His Team A Lil And Teach Them a Thing Or Two Coz They Have Few Things Lackin'

Me: Menzi Still Got Unresolved Issues Witchu Too

Dad: Vusi Will Take Care Of That

Me: So He's Ready?

Dad: For Menzi? No But He's Almost There.We Also Got Some Other Old Enemies On Our Trail,If You Weren't Pregnant I Would've Asked You To Help Your Brother Out But I Can't So Elethu We'll Help Him Out

Me: So He Knows?

Dad: Yeah

We Went To Eat Supper Then Went To
Sleep,The Following Day We All Woke Up And
Went To Eat Breakfast

Voice: Where Are My Mouses

[OBJ:] [OBJ:] [OBJ:]D [OBJ:]D That Was Grandma From
Dad's Side,We All Got Up And Ran To The
Door.She Got In And We All Hugged Her

Granny: The Twins Have Grown Up I See,Heee I
Think Soon I'm Gonna Come This Side For A
Wedding Vusi Is a Big Boy Now (Looks At Me)
She's Pregnant Isn't She Sisanda?

[OBJ] [OBJ]

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT57 ♡ ↓

I Felt Like I Was Gonna Pee On Myself, We Were All Shocked Heck We Were Stunned. Mom Looked At Dad, They Both Looked At Me Then Back At Grandma

Granny: I'm Old Enough To See These Things, Kids Take My Bags To My Room

Owethu: Bought Sweets For Us?

Granny: Of Course

Vusi, Elethu And I Took The Bags To Her Room

Elethu: Someone's In Deep Shit

Me: Elethu Please Not Now

Vusi: Grandma Didn't Seem Angered Or
Some'ing

Me: You Know She Never Shows Any Emotion
When She's Gonna Whip Someone's Ass

Elethu: Haha I Can't Wait To Sew Her Whipping
Yours

Vusi: She Might Whip Mom Or Dad's For Lettin'
This Happen. That's How Twisted Grandma's
Mind Is

Elethu: I Swear I Ain't Going Back Home

Vusi: I See You Want Your Dad To Drag You By
Your Ass Outta Here

Elethu: I Hate That Nikka

Me: The Fact That He's Your Father Will Never
Change

Elethu: Arg Please Don't Remind Me

Me: Dad Told Me That You Workin' On Takin'
Some Few Old Enemies Out

Vusi: And I'm Scared As Fuck,Some Of Those
Dudes Are Older Than Dad

Me: That Should Be Interesting,I'm Sure Some
Are Using Walkin' Sticks Now

Vusi: Have You Ever Seen An Old Gangster?

Elethu: They Just Die Without Even Reaching
The Age Of 50 Years

Me: Dad Will

Vusi: You Sure?

Me: Unless You Gonna Kill Him Yourself

Vusi: Thank You I Don't Wanna Kill Grandma
With a Heart Attack

Olwethu Got In With Two Sweets In His Hand

Olwethu: Granny Said I Should Call You

Me: I'm Gonna Get Fried

Elethu: Don't Worry I'll Eat You

Me: Mxm

We Went To The Lounge And Found Granny
Talkin' With Mom And Dad Bout Her Journey.

Granny: Don't You Want My Sweets?

Vusi: We Want Them Grandma

She Gave Three To Vusi And Elethu Then One
To Me

Me: You Taught Me Not To Question An Adult's
Decision Or Doing But Why One To Me?

Granny: Pregnant Ladies Don't Eat Too Much Of Sweet Things Unless You Want To Give Birth To a Diabetic Child

I Looked At Mom And Dad,They Just Shrugged Their Shoulders

Granny: Sit Here,You Others Go To Your Room

Vusi: Should I Warm Up The Pan?

Granny: What Pan?

Vusi: To Fry Up Her Ass

Granny: (Chuckles) Vusi Go

They Laughed And Left,I Sat Next To Grandma Scared As I Was

Granny: So Now You Want To Be a Woman

Me: Grandma It Was A Mis-

Granny: A Mistake? That's What You All Say. There Are Only Two Or Three Girls Of Your Age Who Don't Have Children Back At Home, I Always Imagined You Getting Married, Still Pure To A Young Good Man Who'll Love You

Me: Grandma I'm Sorry [OBJ]:'(

Granny: Will Your Sorry Turn That Baby Inside Of You Back To An Egg?

Me: No [OBJ]:'(

Granny: Stop Saying I'm Sorry Coz It Won't Fix Anything! Sisanda! Musa! Why On Earth Didn't You Give These Kids The Teachings You Got From Us Huh?? Where Do You Think This World Is Going When We'll Be Bumping Chests With 16 Year Old Pregnant Girls Huh?? Didn't We Raise You Well??

Dad: You Did Ma Bu-

Granny: But What Musa?? You And Sisanda

Should Be The Ones Birthing Here Not Her!!

OBJ: '(OBJ: '(I Couldn't Help Myself But Cry,I Got Up
And Ran To My Room.I Got There And Cried
Again,Mom Got In And Came To Me.She
Hugged Me

Mom: It's Okay Baby,It's Gonna Be Okay

Me: Grandma Hates Me Mom OBJ: '(

Mom: You Know That's Not True

Me: She Hates Me Mama She Hates Me OBJ: '(

Mom: She's Just Shocked,Angry And
Disappointed.She Trusted You

Me: So What Now? Should I Abort The Baby?

Mom: WHAT? NO! You Ain't Aborting No
Baby.Your Grandma Will Come 'round

Me: When Ma? I Won't Even Be Able To Enjoy
This Family Reunion Coz Granny And I Don't Be

On Good Terms,Maybe Your Mom We'll Be
Angry Too

Mom: I Told Her,She Was Mad At First But She's
Cool Now.

Me: Is She?

Mom: She's Not Mad At You Baby And She Told
Me Yesterday That She Went To Do Some Baby
Shoppin'

Me: But We Don't Know The Sex Yet

Mom: Which Is Why You Should Do Another
Scan,You're Four Months Pregnant Now

Me: Okay I Will

Mom: See? Not Everyone Is Angry At You And
You Know Your Grandma Can't Stay Mad Atchu
For Eternity

Me: What If She Does?

Mom: She'll Never Do That...Come Let's Go And
Wash The Dishes

She Wiped My Tears Then We Went To The Kitchen

Grandma: Esihle Make Me My Tea

Me: Yes Grandma

Mom: See?

Me: She's Still Mad Ma

I Made Her Her Tea Then Went To Give It To Her,She Thanked Me And Patted A Space Next To Her

Granny: Does The Father Know?

Me: Yes Grandma

Granny: And?

Me: He's More Than Willing To Take Full

Responsibility Of Everything

Granny: How Old Is He?

I Looked At Dad And He Nodded

Me: He's 21

Granny: By Full Responsibility Do You Mean
Marrying You?

Me: Maybe

Granny: I Want To See Him Today

Me: You Can't

Granny: Why? Is He a Hobo?

Dad: No Ma He Ain't No Tramp

Granny: Then Why Can't I See Him?

Me: He He He Got Shot So Now He He

He [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

I Just Broke Down And Cried,Granny Put Her
Tea On The Table And Hugged Me

Granny: Is He Dead?

Me: He He He's At- He's At The Ho- [OBJ]:'(

Granny: Shhhh Shhh,What Happened Musa?

Dad: He Got Shot Now He's Still Gettin' Some
Medical Care And He Hasn't Woken Up Yet

Granny: Ohh My Baby,Everything Will Be Okay

Me: What If What If He Doesn't Make It
Grandma? What If He Doesn't Get The Chance
To See His Child? What If My Baby Grows Up
Not Having a Father? What If- [OBJ]:'(

Granny: Shhh

Granny Tried To Calm Me Down,Dad Brought
Me a Glass Of Water And They Helped Me Drink
It Up.Granny Laid My Head On Her Lap And

Brushed My Back

Granny: She Really Loves This Boy Doesn't She?

Dad: He's Her First Love

Granny: Is He A Good Boy?

Dad: He's Not Bad

Granny: What Do You Mean He's Not Bad?

Dad: He Has His Flaws Like Everyone

Granny: This Stress Is Not Good For The Baby

Dad: Yeah Her Doctor Told Her That But We Can't Tell Her To Keep Everything Inside Either

Granny: Yeah She Has To Let It All Out

I Fell Asleep In Between Their Conversation, I Woke Up To My Phone Ringing. I Was On The Couch With My Head On a Pillow And My Body Covered With a Fleece

Call Convo

Me: Raymond

Ray: How Is You Feeling Today?

Me: Better I Guess,You?

Ray: I'm Good,Got Any Plans For The Day?

Me: Nhaa Why?

Ray: Just Wanted To Take You And The Lil One Out So You Could Clear Your Head And Can Olona Come Back? It's Lonely In That House

Me: Okay Cool,You Can Pick Her Up With Me

Ray: Sure Thing

Me: And Ohh Ray,Can You Take Me To My Doctor For My Check Up?

Ray: Okay No Problem

Me: Thanks

Ray: Cool

He Hung Up,Granny Got In

Granny: How Are You Feeling Now Sweetie?

Me: I'm Good Grandma

Granny: Your Dad Told Me About The Father Of
The Baby And He Sounds Like a Good Young
Man

Me: He Is Grandma

Granny: That's Why You Love Him So Much?

I Nodded And Smiled

Granny: I Should Take You Out Some Time,Just
The Two Of Us

Me: It's Three

Granny: Ohh The Baby Too

Me: I'd Love That, Thank You Grandma

She Kissed My Forehead And Went To The Kitchen, Owethu Got In With Olona Already Dressed Up

Me: Thanks Wethu

Owethu: Pleasure

Me: Lholho?

Olona: Sis Esihle

Me: Come And Sit Here

She Came To Sit On My Lap

Me: Bhut' Ray Wants You To Go And Stay With Him

Olona: Is Bhut' Luu Back Now?

Me: No Baby He's Not

Olona: When Is He Coming Back?

Me: Soon Baby Soon. Bhut' Ray Is Gonna Take Us Out Then You Gonna Go And Stay With Him

Olona: Will You Go And See Me Everyday?

Me: I Will Baby

She Nodded. I Took Her Bag Then Texted Ray To Pick Us Up.

We First Went To My Doctor And She Wasn't Happy At All, My Blood Pressure Was Still Dangerously Increasing.

She Did The Scan And Guess What? Lutho And I Were Really Gonna Have a Princess [OBJ]:' (I Just Wished He Was There

Me: I Just Wish Lutho Was Here [OBJ]:' (

Ray: Esihle Stop Beatin' Yourself Up With This

Me: He Wanted a Girl And Our Baby Is A Girl,His Princess [OBJ]:'(

Ray: Come Here

He Hugged Me

Olona: So The Baby Is Gonna Be a Girl?

Me: Yes Baby,You're Going To Play Dolls With Her Right?

Olona: Yes,She's Gonna Sleep With Me In My Room.Bhut' Luu Told Me That The Baby Is Gonna Be A Girl

Me: [OBJ]:'(

Olona: Why Is Sis Esihle Crying? When Bhut' Luu Is Back,I'm Gonna Tell Him You Were Crying

Me: [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

Ray Hugged Me And Tried To Calm Me Down,We Left The Doctor And Went To Grab Something To Eat.I Asked Ray To Drive Me To Lutho,He Did With Some Hesitation First.We Left Olona In The Car And Went In,Seeing Lutho Lying There,Looking Dead Just Tore My Heart Into Pieces.I Sat On The Chair Next To His Bed And Held His Hand

Me: Ray Drove Me To My Doctor Today And The Doctor Is Not Happy Coz My Pressure Is Still High But One Thing Good Happened.We Did Another Scan And We're Having a Princess,Your Baby Is A Girl,Our Baby Is A Girl [OBJ]:'([[OBJ]:'('

His Machine Went Titititi

I Got Up And Called Ray And His Doctor

Me: Ray!! DOCTOR!! RAYMOND!!

They Came Running To Me

Ray: What?? Is Everything Okay?

Me: His His Machine Just Went Tititi

They Ran To The Room And Closed The Door, Minutes Passed With Me Walkin' Down, Thinking Bout What Might Have Happened.

Ray Got Out And Came To Me

Me: Is He Okay?

Ray: He's Fine

Me: Does That Mean He's Awake?

Ray: He Was Just Responding To Whatever You

Were Saying

Me: What Does That Mean Ray?

Ray: He Heard Whatever You Were Saying And I Think It Will Do Him Good For You To Visit Him Regularly

Me: So He's Not Awake?

Ray: I'm afraid not

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT58 ♡ ↓

Days Passed But There Was Still No Difference In Lutho's Condition, Ray Tried By All Means To Cheer Me Up By Takin' Me Out For Lunch, Dinner Or Even Breakfast Sometimes. Olona Still Asked

A Lotta Questions Bout Lutho's Whereabouts
So Ray Took Her Back To Their Mom.Luu's
Mom And I Were Still Not On Talkin' Terms,I
Always Postponed Everytime Menzi Wanted To
Have a Business Meeting With Me,I Wasn't
Ready To Face Him,I'd Just Strangle The Life
Outta Him If I'd See Him.

I Still Cried Every Time Someone Mentioned
Lutho's Name,Ray Said The Guys Should Chill
So That Menzi Will Be Confused Whether They
Gave Up,They Are Scared Of Him Or They'll
Want Their Revenge.

Every Family Member Arrived,Dad Invited Uncle
Alex And Thabang Too.I Always Locked Myself
In My Room But On The 24th I Had To Come
Out Coz There Was Gonna Be A Big
Braai.Someone Knocked On My Door

Me: What?

Inam: Your Mother Said I Should Call You

Me: Tell Her I'm Coming

I Sniffed

Inam: You Crying?

Me: No

Inam: Please Open The Door

Me: Inam Just Go Away

Inam: I Ain't Going Till You Open This Door

I Got Up And Went To Open The Door,She Got In
And Hugged Me

Inam: Bbe When Last Did You Eat?

Me: Inam Please

Inam: You Have To Eat For The Baby,You Can't
Starve Yourself Forever

Me: I'm Not Hungry

Inam: You Are Hungry,Come Let's Go And Make Something In The Kitchen

Me: Ain't There Too Many People In There?

Inam: Everyone's Outside,The Guys And Men Are Setting The Braai Stand While Others Are Slicing The Meat

Me: I'll Just Have Some Ice Cream

Inam: That's Not Food

Me: Yoghurt Then?

Inam: Still Not Food For Someone Who Is Pregnant And Didn't Eat For Two Days.I'll Make Sandwiches For You

Me: Okay Mom

We Went To The Kitchen And She Made Those Sandwiches For Me And Gave Me A Glass Of Juice

Me: Thanks

Inam: Anything For My Girlfriends

Me: I See Everyone Is Thrilled For Princess To
Come Out

Inam: Yes We're

Me: I Just Wish Lutho Would Be There Beside
Me When Princess Comes Out [OBJ]:'(

Inam: Baby Don't Do This To Yourself

Me: Why Doesn't He Wake Up? [OBJ]:'(

Inam: He Will When The Time Is Right

Me: But I Need Him Now [OBJ]:([OBJ]:'(

Inam: I Know

She Hugged Me And Wiped My Tears,Grandma
From Daddy's Side Got In

Granny: Esihle Go And Bath,You Won't Eat With Us In Your Pyjamas

Me: I Don't Wanna Eat With Y'all Grandma

Granny: You Have No Choice,Go And Bath Now

I Went To My Room And Bathed,I Wore A Long Maternity Dress With Sandals And Went To Join Everyone Outside.I Bumped Into Thobela Guess He Came With Uncle Av

Thobela: Hi

Me: Hi

Thobela: Look Bout The Other Da-

Me: No Sweat

Thobela: I Owe You An Apology

Me: Actually You Don't

Thobela: It Was Rude Of Me To-

Me: Thobela I Said We're Cool.Lemme Go To My Mom,She's Been Waiting For Me For a While Now

Thobela: Look Can I See You Again? I Still Think We Need To Talk

Me: If I Get Time

I Walked To Mom And She Handed The Glass Of Juice In Her Hand

Mom: Have You Eaten?

Me: Yeah Inam Forced Me To Eat

Mom: That Girl's For Keeps

Me: Tell That To Vusi

Mom: I'm Sure He Knows That,He Seems Maturated Now.Ever Since Your Dad Put Him In Charge Of His Army,He's Been Busy And I Think He Doesn't Have Time To Check Other Girls Out

Me: I Just Wish He Won't Break Inam's Heart Ever Again

Mom: Enough Bout Vusi,How You Feeling?

Me: Like a Huge Truck Ran Over My Body And Demolished Every Part Of It Especially My Heart

Mom: You'll Be Fine Baby....Come To The Kitchen With Me To Help Me And The Ladies With The Salads

Me: But Ma I-

Mom: It Helps To Take Your Mind Off Things By Being Busy

Just When Mom And I Were About To Walk To The House,Menzi's Car Parked Outside The Yard And He Got In.Dad Went To Him,Flying.He Got To Him And Held Him By The Collar

Me: Daddy! Please Just Let Him Go

Dad: This Filthy Trash Got The Nerve To Come Into My House!

Me: He's Not Worth It

People Were Already Lookin' At Us

Me: Follow Me (Lookin' At Menzi)

I Got Inside The House, Menzi Followed Me

Me: Whatchu Doing Here Menzi?

Menzi: So You Still Care Bout Me

Me: What??

Menzi: Standing Up For Me Against Your Dad In Front Of So Many People

Me: Haha What?? Have You Gone Mad?? I Was Just Protecting My Father From The Second

Degree Murder He Was Bout To Commit

Menzi: Haha Yeah Right, So Tell Me Partner Why Have You Been Ignoring My Calls?

Me: Coz I Don't Wanna Talk To You

Menzi: Look I'm Tired Of Makin' Excuses For You To Clients Coz Of Your Absence In Meetings, I'm Sure Some Are Even Thinking That You Don't Exist

Me: I'll Go To Meetings When I'm Ready

Menzi: What Do I Tell Clients Now?

Me: Exactly What I'm Telling You

Menzi: I Asked You To Sell Me Your Shares

Me: Menzi Whatchu Doing Here?

Menzi: I Need You To Sign These Papers

Me: I'll Have To Go Through Them First

Menzi: I Need Them Now

Me: Then Go Fuck Yourself, I Said I Have To Go

Through Them First!

Menzi: Clearly You Know Nothing Bout Business,I Promised The Clients That They Gonna Get The Papers Tonight And If I Don't Deliver They Might Reconsider Workin' With Us For The Delay And You Being Some Ghost Partner

Me: I Think You Should Leave!

Menzi: Not Without The Papers

Me: Ahhh I Hate You!

Menzi: Okay Now Sign The Papers

I Went Through Them While He Stood Next To Me,Watching Me

Menzi: So You Ain't Even Giving Me a Glass Of Water Maybe A Drink Or A Piece Of The Meat Being Done Out There?

Me: Didn't You Come Here For The Papers?

Menzi: I Did Bu-

Me: Then Let's Keep It At That

He Chuckled Then Looked Back At The Papers.He Explained Errthing For Me Then Showed Me Where To Sign Then I Gave The Papers Back To Him,I Must Say,He Was Really Workin' His Ass Off Meaning There Was More Money Getting In My Account.He Lured Many Clients Than I Thought He Would,He Was Really Determined When It Came To Business But He Still Had To Pay For Puttin' The Love Of My Life In a Hospital Bed.

I Gave Him The Papers Then He Left.

I Went Back To Join The Family,The Rest Of The Day Was Superb,For A Change I Could Smile And Laugh Without Crying.

Later On I Asked Vusi To Drive Me To Lutho,I

Went To His Room And There Was Still No
Change In His State.I Sat Next To His Bed And
Held His Hand

Me: Hey Baby

I Kissed His Hand

Me: I've Missed You,I Couldn't Sleep Without
Seeing You.The Family Today Had a Party And I
Kinda Enjoyed Myself,I Know You Want Me To
Be Happy.Princess Has Kicked Countless
Times Now,She Needs You Lutho,I Need
You OBJ:(Please Come Back For Us,We Miss
You

I Felt Something Moving In My Hand

Me: LUTHO LUTHO!!

Dololo,I Just Broke Down And Cried [OBJ]:'(Maybe I Was Imagining Things.After I've Had Enough With The Crying,I Kissed His Forehead Then Got Up And Left.

Vusi Drove Us Back Home,I Got To My Room And Cried Again [OBJ]:'(

-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-

Two Days Passed,I Last Visited Lutho The Day I Thought He Moved His Hand.Grandma Said I Should Stop Visiting Him A Lil Coz Everytime I

Went There I'd Come Back Crying So I
Stopped. On The Christmas Day I Just Sat For
Dinner With The Family And Then We Went To
The Beach Afterwards And I Must Say, I Really
Enjoyed Myself. Both My Grandmas Were So
Supportive And The Rents Too.

I Woke Up To A Call From Ray

Call Convo

Me: Raymond Lulutho Mr Troublesome Wilson
Zizwe It's Still 8 In The Morning

Ray: And Your Ass Should've Been Up a Long
Time Ago, You Gonna Make My Niece Lazy

Me: I'm Tired I Just Wanna Sleep

Ray: Can You Come By The House Today
Maybe At 12

Me: Can I Ask Why?

Ray: Just Come

Me: Don't Tell Me You Bought Princess Other Clothes, You've Bought Enough Now

Ray: Just Come

Me: Okay I Will, Lemme Go Back To My Sleep Now Please

Ray: You're One Lazy Ass Bitch

Me: Whatever Bye

Ray: Bye

I Hung Up And Went Back To Sleep, I Woke Up At 10 And Took a Bath. I Found The Elders Watching t.v While The Kids And Teens Were Playing Soccer Outside.

I Borrowed Vusi's Car Then Drove To Lutho's House, Ray's Car Was Outside So I Went In. I Knocked On The Door But No One Answered, It Was Opened So I Got In.

Ray Walked Outta His Room With His Car Keys

Ray: Hey Sis In Law,Bye Sis In Law

Me: The Fuck? Why Did You Call Me Here If You Go-

Voice: Hello Sugar

WHOA! THE

FUCK?? [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]
[OBJ] [OBJ]

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

Crop Top👑

#S2

#INSERT59 ♡ ↓

I Ran To Him And Hugged The Living Shit Outta Him,I Couldn't Help Myself,I Missed Him So Much 😭(😭:D I Felt Like Crying And Was So Happy At The Same Time 😭:(

Lutho: Hey I'm Back Now 😊)

Me: You Scared Us 😭:(

Lutho: Shhh Daddy Is Back For Mommy And His Princess

Me: So Ray Told You That It's a Girl?

Lutho: Yeah

Me: I Missed You 😭:(

He Wiped My Tears With His Thumbs

Ray: Lemme Go And Leave The Love Birds
Together Before It Goes Down While I'm Still
Here

Lutho: I'd Leave If I Were You Too

Ray: Haha Yeah Right.I'll See Y'all Later

Me: Bye Uncle Ray

Ray: So You Happy That I'm Leaving Yho

He Laughed And Went Out,I Stood On My Toes
And Lutho Bent His Head Down And We Had
One Long Passionate Kiss

Me: I'm Hungry

Lutho: Sugar You Just Got Here

Me: And I'm Hungry

Lutho: Yho Go And Make Yourself Something
To Eat

Me: But I Want Yo-

Lutho: Forget It

Me: I Hate You

Lutho: Really? So You Cry Everyday For
Someone You Hate When He's In a Comma?

Me: Was Just Giving Up Some Love To My
Enemy Which Happens To Be You, The Bible
Teaches Us To Love Our Enemies You Know

Lutho: I See That Pastor Of Yours Hammered
Some Bible Scripts Into Your Head

Me: Don't Start

He Lifted His Hands Up And Chuckled

Me: I Missed Your Crazy Ass

Lutho: Who Wouldn't?

Me: You So Full Of Yourself

Lutho: Like You Not...Lemme Go And Finish Up
The Email Was Bout To Send Then I'm All Yours

Me: Make It Quick

Lutho: If You Promise Me The Cake I'll Be Super
Fast

Me: Maybe You Might Get It [OBJ]

Lutho: Then I'll Be Back Now Now

I Smiled Then He Walked To His
Study [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:D I Just Realised How Much I
Missed Smiling And Laughing,I Thought I Was
Gonna Lose Lutho But There He Was With His
Crazy Ass,Makin' Me Laugh And Smile [OBJ]:) I
Love My Man [OBJ]:)

I Went To The Kitchen And Opened The Fridge,It
Wasn't Full At All.

I Took Out An Ice Cream Tub,Yoghurg Then
Warmed Up A Pie For Myself.I Poured Myself
Some Juice And Ate The Pie,I Rinsed The Plate

And Glass Then Took a Spoon And Opened
Both The Tub And Yoghurt Container. When I
Was Bout To Have A Spoon Of The Yoghurt

Lutho: Yho

Me: Swallow That Judgement Down Your
Throat To Your Ass

He Laughed And Picked Me Up Then Put Me On
The Kitchen Counter

Lutho: So The Sugar Boom Boom Missed Me?

Me: Didn't You Miss Me?

Lutho: I Was Busy Lookin' After My Relatives As
A Ancestor Sweetheart So I Didn't Have Time
To Miss You

I Laughed And Hit Him Playfully

Lutho: Before I Woke Up I Dreamt Bout You

Me: Ohh Really? [OBJ]:)

Lutho: You Were Saying That Princess Has
Been Kickin A Lot

Me: [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:)

Lutho: What?

Me: It Wasn't A Dream,I Was Really There.So I
Wasn't Seeing My Own Things When I Felt You
Moving Your Hand?

He Smiled And Shrugged His Shoulders,He
Took The Spoon From My Hand And Put It
Aside

Me: I'm Still Eating Lutho

Lutho: It's Time For Me To Eat Too

Me: Ain't Your Body Still Tired For This Kinda Work Out Or Some-

He Laughed And Just Smashed His Lips On Mine,We Kissed For A While Till I Decided To Break The Kiss

Lutho: And Then?

Me: When Did You Wake Up?

Lutho: Two Days Ago

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: I Woke Up After You Left

Me: And I Was Never Told Why?? OBJ:(Lutho Do You Know How Many Times I Cried,Do You Know How Much I Cr-

Lutho: Shhhh (Puttin' His Index Finger On My Lips) I Wanted You To See Me When I've Already Recovered.

Me: But I Would've Loved To Be There Wh-

Lutho: You're Here Now,With Me,Let's Focus On That

He Wiped My Tears And We Kissed Again,The Kiss Got Hotter And Hotter By Every Passing Second.

I Pulled Up His T-shirt And I Saw Stitches

Lutho: Let It Slide

He Kissed Me Again,He Pulled Up My Top And Played With My Boobs One By One,He Took My Bra Off And Sucked On My Titties.I So Wanted Him Inside

Lutho: I Promised You To Come Back For This And Now Here I Am

Me: But You Took Your Time Sir,I Guess The Road Was Tiring

He Sucked On My Neck So Hard

Me: Ouch!

Lutho: That's For Being Silly

He Pushed Me To Lie On My Beck And Pulled Down My Skirt Together With My Panty.He Pulled Me Closer Then Opened My Legs Wide,He Blew Cold Air On My Veejayjay And I Must Say The Feeling Was So Awesome,He Rubbed It Countless Times And Finally Slid One Finger In Then Did Me So Good,He Slid Another One In While Kissing My Tummy.Ohhh I Was On Cloud 9 Flying With The Birds [OBJ]:p [OBJ]:)

He Did Some Muffin Then Pulled Me Up To Sit Then Kissed Me.He Put Me Down Then I Took

His Belt Off,Unzipped His Pants And Pulled Them Down With His Boxers.He Just Kicked Em Off,We Kissed Again Then He Helped Me Lie On My Back,The Tiled Floor Against My Skin Was Doing Its Own Thingy Which Sent Shivers Down My Spine.

Lutho Positioned Himself Then Thrusted Himself In,He Moved In Slowly And Finally Went Faster While I Had My Nails Trying Their Way To Dig Deep On The Floor.Lutho Didn't Pin Himself Against My Body Coz Of The Stomach So I Didn't Have His Back To Dig My Nails Onto.

We Changed The Position With Him Hitting It From The Back,I Got On top Of Him And I Climaxed Before He Did,After Some Tiring Riding He Let The Juices Out Too And We Lied On The Floor With His Hand On My Tummy

Me: Lutho You Gonna Kill Me With This Sexercise You Makin' Me Do

Lutho: At Least You'll Be Killed By Me

I Hit Him Playfully

Lutho: Princess Kicked

Me: Liar

Ohh Wait! I Felt Her Too

Lutho: Seems Like My Baby We'll Be Some
Future Portia

Me: Ohh No Thanks

Lutho Put His Ear On My Tummy And His
Hands Too

Lutho: Hey Daddy's Lil Sugar,Daddy Missed You

And Mommy So So Much.I Hope You Have
Been Behaving While Dad Was Still Away,He's
Back Now And He Ain't Going Nowhere

Me: That's Enough Now,Princess Wants To
Sleep And I'm Tired

Lutho: Can I Take One Last Bite?

Me: Lutho!

Lutho: I Wanna Make Up For The Time I Was
Dead

Me: You Crazy

He Picked Me Up Abruptly And Put Me On Top
Of Him

Lutho: Now Do The Work

Me: And If I Don't Want To?

He Slid Himself In

Me: Ahh!

He Did The Work Himself But I Met Him Half
Way Then We Went To Shower. We Watched
One Movie Then I Went Home. I Found The
Elders In The Lounge

Mom: Someone's Smiling

Me: Coz Someone Woke Up From The
Dead [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:)

Dad: So He Finally Told You? [OBJ]:)

Me: Dad You Knew??

Dad: He Told Me Not To Tell You Anything

Me: I Have No Father I See

Granny: Tell Him I Want To See Him Now!

Me: But He-

Granny: Now!

Me: Yes Grandma

I Went To Call Lutho From My Room

Call Convo

Lutho: Missing Daddy Already?

Me: Ohh Don't Flatter Yourself, Grandma Wants To See You

Lutho: Is She Those Evil Kinda Grandmas?

Me: Way Too Evil If You Ask Me

Lutho: Then I Ain't Comin'

Me: Just Kiddin' She's A Fun, Loud And Funny Grandma

Lutho: Hope My Innocent Face Will Earn Me a

Good Place In Her Heart

Me: Haha Innocent? Ohh Please

Lutho: People Say My Face Looks Innocent

Me: Yeah Ayt,Be Here In a Few

Lutho: I'm On My Way Bbe

I Went To The Lounge

Me: He Says He's On His Way

Granny: He Has A Lot Of Explaining To Do! A 21 Year Old Grown Man Impregnating A 16 Year Old.What Was He Thinking? I Think I'm Gonna Whip Some Ass Today

Me: Grandma Please Don't Be Hard On Him,He Just Got Out Of-

Granny: He's Back Now And He Has Me To Deal With,He Ruined Your Future,Your Dreams.He Took Away Your Pride!

Me: [OBJ]:(

Someone Knocked On The Door

Me: That Must Be Him

Granny: Let Me Get My Arms Ready For Some Whipping

I Walked To The Door And There Stood My King With A Smile On His Face And Some Flowers

Me: She Doesn't Look Happy

We Got To The Lounge

Me: Here's Lutho Grandma....Here's My Grandma Lutho,The One Who's Gonna Whip

Your Ass

Granny: Don't Be Silly Here Esihle...Hello My Boy,Are You Sure You're 21? You Look 18 Or 19.With Those Kind Of Looks,I'm Sure I'm Gonna We Gonna Have The Most Beautiful Grandchild Come And Sit Next To Me Son,Esihle Go And Make Us Some Tea.I Have A Lot To Talk About With My Future Grandson In Law

[05/19, 18:24] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT60 ♡ ↓

Lutho Looked At Me And Winked,I Just Chuckled And Went To The Kitchen.Mom Got In

Mom: Seems Like Granny Likes Lutho Already

Me: I Guess His Innocent Looks Did The Trick

Mom: He Even Brought Her Flowers

Me: He's Being Cheesy Right There

Mom: He's Just Tryna Buy His Way In

Me: Lemme Make The Tea Before Grandma Whips My Ass In Front Of Lutho

I Made The Tea Then Took It To The Lounge,I Found Grandma And Lutho Talkin'

Granny: So Tell Me Son,What Are You Doing Now?

Lutho: Studying But Next Year I'll Be Done With My Studies,I Have 60% Shares In A Company Which Used To Be Owned By My Dad,I Have A Job In a Family Friend's Company Which I'll Be

Giving Away Next Year Coz I Wanna Focus On My Own Thing

Granny: Isn't That Too Much For Someone Your Age?

Lutho: I Grew Up In a Business Environment So It's Not Hard Ma

Granny: I See....So Tell Me What Plans Do You Have For My Granddaughter?

Lutho: Esihle?

Granny: Yes Her

Lutho: I Want To Build a Future With Her And Our Child

Granny: And?

Lutho: And Live My Whole Life With Her And Make Tons And Tons Of Babies

Me: The Tons Of Babies Part Ain't Gonna Happen

Granny: We Were Not Talking To You,Pour Us

Our Tea And Leave Us To Have Our
Conversation

Me: But Granny I-

Granny: Do You Want Me To Whip Your Ass In
Front Of Him?

Lutho: I'd Really Love To See Her Ass Being
Whipped :)

Me: Too Bad You Ain't

Granny From Mom's Side Got In

Granny2: So This Is The Father?

Granny1: Yes This Is The Father, See How
Perfect He Is For Our Granddaughter?

Granny2: He's Not

Lutho And I Looked At Each Other

Granny2: Coz He Forgot To Bring Me Flowers Too

Lutho: Ohh I'm Sorry Ma Next Time I'll Make Sure I Bring You A Bunch Of Them

Granny2: Don't Worry Son It's Okay

Granny Sat Down And I Gave Her Her Cup Of Tea Too

Granny1: You Can Leave Now Esihle

Me: Granny I-

Granny1: Bye My Little Mouse

Lutho Laughed While I Showed Him My Middle Finger Surreptitiously.I Went To Elethu And Vusi's Room

Me: My Nikkas

Vusi: What Do You Want?

Me: Can't I Just Come To Your Room To Spend Time Witchu And Your Friend Without Wanting Anything?

Elethu: You Almost Turned Into Bones Witcho Crying Everyday

Me: Fortunately I Won't Be Crying Anymore Now

Vusi: Lutho's A Thug Sweetheart,He Might Get Shot Again Today Who Knows

Me: Mxm....Anyway How's It Going Witcho 'Army'?

Vusi: Tonight We Tryna Take Out One Of The Old Blokes

Me: Ain't You Scared Of Killin' Someone?

Vusi: I'll See When I Have To Do It

Me: Those Nightmares And Shit,I Wouldn't Be

Able To

Vusi: One Day You'll Have To

Me: Please Don't Remind Me....So How Are Things Between You And Inam?

Vusi: That's Non Your Business,You Also Don't Tell Me Stuff Bout You And Your Bhut' Bae

Me: Fuck You

Just Then Inam Got In And Threw Herself On Vusi's Bed Next To Him

Elethu: Since There's Already A Couple In The Room,Let's Make A Second One Miss Morena

Me: No Thanks I Don't Want No Heartaches

Elethu: It'll Be Just For Today

Vusi: Yho

Me: Forget It Sweetheart,I'll Never Be Your One

Day Stand

Elethu: Your Sister Really Doesn't Want Me Vusi

Vusi: Please Keep Me Outta Your Business

Vusi And Inam Kissed

Me: Euwww

Elethu: See? We'd Be Doing Our Own Thing On
The Side Too

Me: Dude Give Up Already

Ethandwa (Uncle Bonga And Aunt Amish's
Daughter) Got In

Ethandwa: Sis Esihle

Me: Yes Baby?

Ethandwa: Granny Said I Should Call You

Me: Okay Let's Go Baby

Inam: Granny Seems To Like Lutho

Me: Baby Used His Charm

Elethu: He Should Pour Me Some

Me: The One On His Face Dummy

I Walked To The Lounge And Found Lutho
Already On His Feet

Granny: Walk Him Out Sweetie

Me: I Hope You Didn't Whip His Ass

Granny: I'm Too Old To Whip Asses Now

Lutho Said Goodbye To Everyone Then I Walked
Him Out, We Got To His Car And Stayed Inside

Me: So What Were You And Granny Talkin' Bout?

Lutho: Adult Stuff

Me: Adult Stuff?

Lutho: Yes

Me: So You Ain't Gonna Tell Me?

Lutho: Nope

Me: I Hate You

Lutho: I Love You Too Sugar

He Pecked My Cheek

Me: So Whatchu Gonna Do On The 1st?

Lutho: The Guys Said They Gonna Throw A Party But First I'm Gonna Have Lunch With The Family

Me: I Hoped That We Were Gonna Spend It Together Since You Were Not 'round On The 25th :(

Lutho: We Can Go To The Party Together

Me: There'll Be Loud Music And Drunk
People,Princess Can't Be In That Kinda
Environment

Lutho: Then We Can Go And Have Lunch With
My Family Together

Me: So That Your Mother Can Insult Me
Again,No Thanks

Lutho: Why Would She? You Two Are Cool Now

Me: I Thought So Too

Lutho: What Do You Mean?

Me: The Next Morning After You Got Shot,She
Went To Pick Olona Up From My House And
She Blamed Me For Your Shooting,She Said
Ever Since You've Met Me,Nothing Good Has
Been Going On In Your Life [OBJ]:' (

Lutho: I'm So Sorry Baby

Me: When Mom Asked Her To Leave,She

Insulted Her Too

Lutho: Mom Can Be A Bit Hard Sometimes

Me: I Doubt She'll Ever Like Me

Lutho: Look At Me

I Looked At Him

Lutho: I Love You And You Love Me,That's All That Matters.Don't Stress Yourself With Baggage,I Want You To Bring Our Princess Into This World Healthy As Fuck

Me: [OBJ]:'(But Baby If Your Mother Hates Me We Wo-

Lutho: No Buts,Forget Bout Her And Focus On Our Lil Soul In There Okay?!

Me: [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Okay?!

I Nodded

Lutho: Put It Here (Pattin' His Lips)

I Got Closer To Him And We Had A Short Kiss

Lutho: I Have To Go But I'll Check Up On You
Later Kay?!

Me: Okay

Lutho: I Love You My Two Queens

Me: We Love Daddy Too Don't We Princess?
She Says We Love You Too Daddy

Lutho: Thanks For Keepin' Our Gift

Me: I Still Can't Believe I Wanted To Drink Those
Morning After Pills

Lutho: You Were Just Scared And Shocked

Me: So How Are Things Between You And Ray?

Lutho: We Gettin' There,He Ain't A Bad Person

Me: Told You To Give Him a Chance

Lutho: He Told Me He's Been Takin' Care Of You,Princess And Olona While I Was Dead

Me: Stop Saying You Were Dead

I Hit Him Playfully

Lutho: Okay While I Was With My Great Great Great Grandparents

Me: Mxm.....Jeah He Tried All His Best

Lutho: I Still Can't Believe I'm A Twin

Me: It's Still Unbelievable Ayt?!

Lutho: I Don't Know If I'm Mad Or Happy

Me: Ray's A Good Guy,At Least You'll Have a Family Member Who Supports You All The Way

◦

Days Passed And It Was Time To Celebrate The New Year,Bae And I Planned To Meet Up Later And Have Lunch Together Before He Goes To The Party.I Woke Up That Day And Went To Help With The Cooking Then We Ate As A Family And Exchanged Gifts,I Called Lutho To Pick Me Up Coz Vusi Said He Was Gonna Use His Car.Inam And Him Were Going To Their Baecation Of Two Days That Night So He Wasn't Gonna Be Able To Give Me The Car.

Lutho Got Inside The House First And Greeted Everyone And They All Wished Each Other A Happy New Year Then Lutho Drove Us To This Park,It Was Quiet And Cool With So Many Trees And Awesome Green Grass.He Laid A Big Blanket On The Grass Then Took Out A Picnic Bucket With Strawberries,Bananas (My Favorite) Vanilla Cream,Sweets,Chocolates And All That Picnic Shit

Me: Baby This Place Is So Beautiful

Lutho: But Not More Than You And Our Lil
Munchkin

Me: She Might Be Ugly If She'll Look Like You

Lutho: Liar,Your Grandma Said I Got The Looks

Me: She's So Forward

Lutho: She's Such a Sweet Soul

I Opened The Strawberry Container And Took
Two Then Took Two Bananas

Lutho: You Gonna Get Fat Bbe

Me: It's Your Baby

Lutho: Come Here

He Pecked My Lips

Lutho: And Thanks For That Baby Of Mine

Me: Can We Please Eat? I'm Starving

He Laughed And Opened The Strawberry Container Then Took One And Sprayed The Cream On It And Fed Me,The Cream Dripped To My Chin

Lutho: Let Me Get That Off

He Got Closer And Licked It Then Moved To My Lips Then We Kissed,He Picked Me Up And Put Me On His Lap Then Held My Hands

Me: I Smell A Speech

We Both Chuckled

Lutho: When I Met You I Wasn't Ready To Be In a Serious Relationship Heck I Was All Bout Tappin' And Passin' But You Lil Miss Captured My Stone Cold Heart And Warmed It Up. My Gratitude Will Never Be Enough For The Love You've Given Me, The Person You Made Me And The Happiness You Brought Into My Life. You Loved Me In a Way Nobody Else Can, Trusted Me, Held Me Down And Made Me The Happiest Man In The Universe And I'll Forever Be Grateful For That MaMorena. Happy New Year Bbe And I Hope You'll Hold Me Down This Year Too And Be My Down Ass Bitch

[05/20, 10:18] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT61 ♡ ↓

👑 LUTHO'S POV (The King) 👑

° MONTHS LATER °

Okay So Esihle's Pregnancy Was Going Smoothly, Ray And I Were Gettin' Along Very Well, He Was The Brother I've Always Wanted From Menzi. Speakin' Of Menzi, I Was Still Lying Low. I Never Attempted To Fire Back Or Do Anything And Ray Was Backin' Me Up On That One. It Turned Out That His Adoptive Parents Disowned The Shit Outta Him Coz Of The Shitty Life He Was Living Which Turned Out To Be Exactly Like Mine.

I Guess The Zizwe Men Were Good At Producing Troublesome Kids.He Decided To Finish His Studies This Side So He Never Went Back To The States.

Dad And I Were Still Not On Talkin' Terms,I Was Still Mad At Mom For Giving Up Ray For Adoption.I Never Talked To Any Of Them Ever Since I Came Outta The Hospital.I Was Just Too Occupied By Work,Sugar Having Too Much Cravings And Takin' Care Of The Gang Coz They Put Me In Charge.It Was Sugar's Month To Give Birth But Her Date Was Still Far So I Was Trying My Best To Be Prepared When The Princess Comes.

My Queen Was Still Doing Great At School But The Pregnancy Was Too Much For Her And I Could See Right Through Her.

This Day I Knocked Off Early From Work So I Promised To Pick Up My Two Queens And Spend Some Time With Them,Ray Called Me

* Call Convo *

Me: Bro

Ray: The Guys And I Are Going Out For Drinks,Wanna Join Us?

Me: Nikka I'm Tired From Working All Day

Ray: Good Reason For You To Come With Us And Besides It's A Friday Bro

Me: You So Persistent

Ray: I'm Payin',C'mon Bro

Me: Okay Fine But First I'm Gonna Spend Some Time With Sugar

Ray: Fine By Me

Me: Sure

Sugar Opened The Door And Got In Coz I Was

Already At Her School's Gate

Me: My Sugar Boom Boom

Esihle: I'm So Fucken Tired And This Is All
Because Of You

Me: I'm Sorry Baby,Come Here

We Had a Brief Kiss

Esihle: I'm Hungry

Me: You Always Hungry

Esihle: I Could Eat You Right Now

Me: I'm All Yours Honey,You Can Have All Of
Me :)

Esihle: You So Dirty Minded

Me: I Missed You And My Lil Princess

Esihle: I Can't Wait For Her To Come Out,She's

Tiring

Me: There Are Only Few Days Left Then She's Out

Esihle: Can You Drive Already? I Said I'm Hungry!

Me: Yho Hunger Can Really Make You Someone You Not

She Chuckled And Hit My Shoulder Playfully While I Started The Car

Esihle: So How's Work?

Me: Tiring But Great

Esihle: How Much Money Do You Make In a Day?

Me: It Depends On Who's Askin' :)

Esihle: I Am Askin'

Me: Enough Money

Esihle: You Ain't Answering Me

Me: Haa Sugar,I Can't Tell You That

Esihle: I'll Tell You What I Make

Me: That Is Confidential Sweetheart,I Don't
Wanna Know Coz If You Tell Me I Might Hire
Some Kidnappers And Tell Them To Want a
Ransom

Esihle: You So Evil

Me: Money Is Evil Itself My Love

We Got To Where We Were Gonna Have Our
Lunch Then Sat Down,Sugar Was Even
Struggling To Sit So I Helped Her

Esihle: I Hate You Lutho For Doing This To Me

Me: I Love You Too Sugar

Esihle: Mxm :)

We Made Our Orders Then Sugar Got Herself Some Juice While I Had Myself a Cold Cold Beer To Take All The Work Stress From Me

Me: So How Are Things At School?

Esihle: Hectic,I'm Known As The 17 Year Old Grade 12 Pregnant Hippo

Me: Haha What?

Esihle: Yeap I'm So Tired Of People Giving Me Nasty Looks You Know

Me: Soon Soon Princess Will Be Out

Esihle: I Can't Wait Yho

We Finished Eating Then I Settled The Bill Then Drove Us To My House.Sugar Threw Herself On The Couch While I Went To My Room To Change,I Just Wore a Sleeveless T-shirt With A Black Shaded Torn Jean.Even If I Was A

Business Man,I Was Still Young To Wear Suits
All The Time.

I Went To Join Sugar,She Laid Her Head On My
Lap Then We Watched Few Movies Till She Fell
Asleep.Ray Came Back With Anga,Siya And
Onele

Me: Where's The Other Twin?

Onele: Had Some Few Errands To Run,He'll
Meet Us At The Club

Me: I See

Anga: And Then How You Gonna Come With Us
When You Have Your Family Here?

Me: Shut Up Dude

Ray: So You Gonna Leave Without Telling Her?

Me: I'll Leave A Note

Anga: It's Gonna Be Lit Today My Nikka,I Should
Go Home With Three Hoes

Ray: One Will Be Enough For Me

Siya: Dude Have You Ever Had Sex With More Than One Woman At The Same Time?

Ray: Dude Of Course

Siya: Onele Bro Seems Like You're The Only One Who Hasn't

Ray: Whoa Luu Has Done It Too?

Me: Dude What Do You Take Me For?

Ray: And What Did Esihle Think Of That?

Siya: They Were On A Breakup That Time

Me: I Think We Should Get Going

I Wrote Sugar A Note,Prepared Something To Eat For Her Then We Went To The Club.We Had A Few Drinks,Siya Got Up And Left Then Came Back With 5 Girls

Siya: Girls Choose For Yourselfes

This Hot But Not That Hot Chick Came To Sit
On My Lap

Chick: I'm Zanele

Me: Nice To Know You Zanele

Zanele: And You're?

Me: Lulutho,I'm Lulutho

Ray Gave Me A Nasty Look But I Couldn't Have
Hoes Knowing My Name

Zanele: Nice Name Lulutho,Can I Call You Luu?

Me: Sure Whatever

Zanele: I'm Thirsty

Me: You Can Go And Buy Yourself a Drink You'll

Still Find Me Here

Siya: Dude Are You For Real?

Me: What?

Siya: Guys Do The Buying My Nikka,Buy The Poor Lady a Drink

I Got Up And Went To Buy Her What She Wanted Then Went To Sit Down

Zanele: You're The Best

She Tried To Kiss Me On My Lips,I Gave Her My Cheek,The Other Nikkas Spent The Whole Night Throwing Money To EM Bitches.I Still Had A Daughter On Her Way So I Didn't Have Money To Play 'round With.

Later On We Drove Back Home,They All Left With Asses To Tap.

I Got Home And Found Sugar Fast Asleep,
Took Off My Clothes And Joined Her.I Woke Up
The Following Day Alone In Bed,I Went To Brush
my Teeth Then Went To The Kitchen,She Was
There With Ray,Makin' Breakfast

Me: My Favorite People

Esihle: Hey Bbe

Ray: Bro

Esihle: I Wanted To Bring You Breakfast In Bed

I Went To Her And Wrapped My Arms 'round
Her Waist

Me: Sorry Bbe Next Time

I Planted Kisses On The Back Of Her Neck

Ray: Get a Room Please

The Girl Ray Came Home With Last Night
Walked Down The Stairs

Ray: I Thought I Told You To Stay In The Room

Girl: I Wanna Use The Bathroom

Ray: I'm Comin'

Girl: But I-

Ray: I Said I'm Comin'

She Walked Back

Me: That Was So Cold

Ray: She Should Learn To Know Her Place

Someone Knocked On The Door,I Went To Open Up,It Was Menzi

Me: Whatchu Doing Here?

Menzi: Can I Come In?

Me: No...What Do You Want?

Menzi: Okay Cool,I'm Sure You've Heard Bout This Sex Scandal I'm Involved In

Me: Haha Yeah And It Was Just Dumb Of You To Sleep Witcho Employee

Menzi: At Work The Board Wants To Take Me Down

Me: I Wouldn't Blame Them

Menzi: I Need Esihle To Be On My Side

Me: Haha WHAT??







Menzi: I Want You To Talk Her Into Backing Me

Up

Me: What Makes You Think I'd Do That?
Especially For You Out Of All The People In The
World?

Menzi: Coz Of This

He Took Out a Photo Then Showed It To Me

THE FUCK??      

[05/20, 10:18] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT62 ♡ ↓

Lutho Came Back With a Sour Face

Me: Wassup Bbe?

Ray: Who Was That?

Lutho: No One Important,Let's Eat I'm Starving

I Gave Him His Plate And He Sat Down With Us

Ray: I Should Go Back To My Room And Get It
Down One More Time Before That Bitch Leaves

Lutho: Did You Show Her The Bathroom?

Me: He Took Her To The Main Bathroom

Lutho: Ray!

Ray: Not a Lecture Please

Lutho: Raymo-

Ray: I'm Out

He Took His Plate Then Walked To His Room, Leaving Me With Bae

Me: You Don't Look Okay

Lutho: I Have Something To Tell You

Me: Go Ahead Bbe

Lutho: I'm Sure You've Heard Bout Menzi Gettin' Involved With An Employee

Me: Yeah And I Just Got A Message To A Board Meeting

Lutho: He Was The One On The Door

Me: And?

Lutho: He Needs You To Take His Side When The Board Will Be Voting

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: He Needs You

Me: Don't Tell Me You Supporting This Madness

Lutho: That Company Means A Lot To Him

Me: So??

Lutho: Bbe Please Think Bout This, Menzi Is The Reason That Company Is Where It Is Today

Me: He's Been In The Business World For Years Lutho And He Knows What He Did Was Wrong

Lutho: Look I J-

Me: Why Are You Backin' Him Up When He's The Same Reason You Lied In a Hospital Bed For Weeks??

Lutho:.....

Me: Is He Blackmailin' You?

Lutho: He's My Cousin Esi-

Me: WHAT?? DO YOU THINK MENZI THOUGHT OF THAT WHEN HE SHOT YOU THREE TIMES?? LUTHO ARE YOU FOR REAL??

Lutho: Okay Okay Please Calm Down You Gonna Upset Princess Too

Me: I'll Be In The Room

Lutho: Your Food?

Me: I Lost My Appetite

I Walked To His Room And Threw Myself On
The Bed,After A While He Got In And Sat Just
Below My Feet Then Took Both Of Them And
Massaged Em

Me: It's Gonna Take You More Than That To
Take All This Anger That Is Awaken Inside Of
Me

Lutho: How's That?

He Did Me So Good

Me: Mhmhm [OBJ]:)

Lutho: Like It?

Me: I Love It

Lutho: I'm Really Sorry If What I Said Pissed You Off

Me: But It Was So Sweet Of You To Stand Up For Menzi Even After Everything He Has Done To You, Me And Everyone You Care Bout

Lutho: You're The One Who Told Me Bout Lovin' Our Enemies

Me: You Lutho Zizwe Put That Into Action?

Lutho: If Not Now Then When Bbe? And If Not With Menzi Then With Who?

I Got Up And Sat On His Lap Then Cupped His Face In My Hands And Kissed The Livin' Hell Outta Him

Me: I'm So Proud Of You Baby

Lutho: If I Want Our Baby To Be Healthy,Live In a Good Environment,I Have To Do Anything To Make All That Possible

Me: Wish Princess Could Hear How Much Daddy Cares Bout Her

Lutho: And Daddy Cares Bout Mommy Too

Me: I Love You Baby OBJ: '(

Lutho: Don't Tell Me You Gonna Cry,I Love You Too Baby,So So Much

He Smashed His Lips On Mine And We Had A Long Passionate Kiss.We Just Lied On Our Back,Lutho Playing With My Hands

Lutho: Can I Piss You Off A Lil Again?

Me: Can I Shoot Your Balls A Lil When You Do?

We Both Laughed Then He Kissed My Hand

Me: What Is It Bbe?

Lutho: Last Night At The Club I Met This Girl

Me: Is She Hot Like Me?

Lutho: Haha She's Not And She's Not Even
Miles Closer To You

Me: Okay So What Bout Her?

Lutho: She Asked Me To Buy Her A Drink So I
Did Then She Wanted To Kiss Me

Me: And I'm Sure You Did :(

Lutho: I Gave Her The Cheek,You Know After I
Cheated On You And After That Big Ass
Gigantic Break Up We Went Through,I Told
Myself Then That I'd Never Hurt You Or Cheat
On You Ever Again Coz I Love You So So Much
And Losing You Would Be A Life Time Tragedy

Me: Haha Life Time Tragedy?

Lutho: Sweetheart You Mean Everything To Me

And I'm Gonna Tell You This,I'm Not Going Anywhere.I Know It May Be Hard For You To Trust Me Coz Of My Fucked Up Past But I'll Never Hurt You,Ever Again.

So Next Time I'm Takin' You With Me When I'm Going To A Club To Show All Those Bitches That I've Already Got My Mrs

Me: That's Won't Be Necessary As Long As You Can Keep These Pants Zipped Unless [OBJ]:p

Lutho: Unless? [OBJ]:) [OBJ]:p

Me: You

I Kissed Him

Me: Are

I Kissed Him Again

Me: With

Another Peck

Me: Me

Lutho: I Wish I Could Have You Right Now

Me: I'm Sorry Baby OBJ: (

Lutho: Your Health And Princess's Comes
First, Come Here

He Kissed My Forehead, Both My Cheeks Then
Pecked My Lips

Lutho: We Still Have A Life To Live Together, We
Still Got So Much Time To Make Other
Princesses

Me: And Princes Too, Seems Like You Only Want

Girls

Lutho: Girls Are Gonna Be Paid Lobola For While Boys Will Have To Do The Opposite So Yes I Want Girls

Me: Girls Are Tiring Bbe

Lutho: Just Kiddin'.I Want Four Girls And Four Boys

Me: You Mad

Lutho: We Made A Bet On Princess And I Turned Out To Be The Winner And I Said If I Win,We Gonna Make Another Baby

Me: Lutho Is You Mad?

Lutho: Haha I See Ray Is Transferring His Way Of Speakin' To You

Me: Whatever

Lutho: So When Will We Make Another One?

Me: In 10 Years To Come

Lutho: Four Months Right?!

Me: You Crazy

My Phone Rang,Reminding Me Of The Board Meeting I Had To Attend.Lutho Drove Me To My House To Get Changed Then He Drove Me To The Building But Didn't Get In.I Found Everyone Already Settled In But Menzi Wasn't 'round.Mr Smith,Miss Ngozi,Mrs Hamilton,Mr Hlazo And Others Were Talkin' When I Got In

Me: Afternoon Ladies And Gentlemen

Mr Smith: We Thought You Weren't Gonna Make It,Especially With Your Condition

Me: The Company's Well Being Comes First, Doesn't It?

Mr Smith: That's True

Mrs Hamilton: Before The Meeting Starts,I Have Few Questions For You

Me: Ohh?

Mrs Hamilton: You're Still 16 Right?

Me: 17 Man,I'm 17

Mrs Hamilton: Yes 17 And You're Still In Grade 12,Am I Right?

Me: If I May Ask,Where Is All Of This Going?

Mrs Hamilton: It's Just That This Is A Big Company With Big Clients From All Over The Country

Me: So?

Mrs Hamilton: Don't You Think You're Too Young To Be The Major Shareholder At This Age,I Mean Menzi Sold Part Of His 50% To Us So That There Could Be Many Investors And Educated People Like Us In The Company

Mr Hlazo: Mam What's That Supposed To Mean?

Mrs Hamilton: Miss Morena Is Still a Child And She's Clueless About Business,I Mean She's

Still In High School.She Should Leave The Business Life To Us And Focus On Her Teenage Life And Of Course The Challenges Of Being a Teenage Mom

Me: With All Due Respect Mam,We Didn't Come Here To Discuss My Personal Life Or My Cluelessness In Business.We Came Here To Discuss Mr Zizwe's Ignorance To The Company's Rules,To The Business World's Rules So If You Have A Problem With Me Owning 50% Of This Company Which Makes Me Your Boss And More Powerful Than You 'round Here Then We Can Sort That Out Later But Now Please Let's Focus On The Motion Of The Day Thank You

Mr Hlazo Chuckled And Winked At Me,He Wasn't Old,He Was At His 20s Maybe At Lutho Or Menzi's Age.

There Was Some Silence In The Room Till

Menzi Got In Breathing Heavily

Menzi: Afternoon Everyone,I'm So Sorry For Being This Late,The Traffic Outside Is Hectic

Mr Smith: Mr Zizwe First Of All You Break The Company's Rules,Making All Of Us Look Bad To The Clients And Now You Come Late To YOUR Meeting

Menzi: Like I Said,I'm Sorry

Mr Hlazo: Your Sorry Won't Change Anything Sir,You've Already Done Too Much Damage

Mrs Hamilton: Can We Give Mr Zizwe A Chance To Explain Hims-

Mr Hlazo: Don't Even Finish Your Sentence,Miss Ngozi Here Went To Lay Charges Against Him And Now Clients Are Leaving The Company

Menzi: My Affair With Miss Ngozi Was

Consensual

Mr Smith: Then Why Did She Lay Charges?

Menzi: Coz She's Jealous Of Me

Miss Ngozi: What??

Mrs Hamilton: You All Know How Good Menzi Is At His Work,Just Give Him Another Chance.Instead Of Trying To Finish Him Off While He's Already Down,We Should Be Supporting Him.Maybe He's Telling The Truth,Maybe His Affair With Miss Ngozi Was Consensual

Mr Smith: I'm Done With The Talking,Everyone Who Wants Menzi To Step Down As The CEO Can I Please See Your Hands Up?

There Were Many Hands Up And I Lifted Mine Too

Menzi: So Now That Y'all Want Me Out Of The Company,Who's Gonna Own It? Miss Morena? What Does She Know Bout Business? She Doesn't Even Have a Degree Or Even Matric For That Matter

Mr Hlazo: I Guess Since The Major Shareholder Voted You Out,You Should Pack Your Things And Leave

Menzi: This Is Not Over! This Is My Company! I Made It What It Is Today! It's My Company! Mine!

[05/20, 10:19] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT63 ♡ ↓

With That Said,He Stomped Out And Left.Mrs Hamilton Got Up And Took All Her Belongings Then Looked At All Of Us

Mrs Hamilton: I Didn't Know You Could Be Such Big Fools,Be Prepared To See This Ship Sinking And Ohh Let Me Tell You,When It Does Don't Go Running To Menzi Nxaa!

She Also Left

Mr Smith: I Think We're Done For The Day,We Can All Go Back To Work

Me: So Who's Gonna Be Running Things Now That Menzi Is Out?

Mr Smith: Ohh About That,How About We Put Mr Hlazo On The Seat Temporary Till We Find The Suitable Person?

Me: I Don't Have A Problem With That,Is There Anyone Who Is Against Mr Smith's Proposal?

They All Shooked Their Heads

Me: I Guess Our New CEO Is Mr Hlazo Then

Mr Hlazo: Thank You All For Trusting In Me,I Promise I'll Start Where Mr Zizwe Left Off Do Business Like Him And Beyond

Me: I'm Glad To Hear That

Mr Smith: I Guess We Should Wrap Things Up

Me: Uhhm And Miss Ngozi Can I Have A Word With You?

Miss Ngozi: Okay

Mr Hlazo: Can I Join You?

Me: Yeah Sure

We All Shaked Hands Then Others Left,Leaving Me With Hlazo And Ngozi.

Me: If You Don't Mind Can You Tell Me How Mr Zizwe Started To Abuse You Sexually?

Miss: He'd Always Call Me To His Office And Compliment Everything I Wear Or Every Hairstyle I Do.At First I Felt Special Coz Women Like To Be Complimented,He Started To Say Sweet Words To Me Or Speak In A Sexual Seductive Way But I'd Get Up And Leave.The Day He Raped Me,I Was Left In The Office Working Because There Was a Lot Of Work I Had To Do.Everyone Had Left,I Didn't Know He Was Still Around.He Got To My Office And Closed The Door,He Came To Me And Put The Files I Was Working On Aside And Kissed Me.I Told Him That I Don't Do Office Romance But He Didn't Listen To Me.When I Tried To Fight Him He Said He'll Go To The Police And Say I

Tried To Sleep With Him Because I Wanted A Promotion Or He'll Fire Me So I Decided To Sleep With Him Because I Didn't Want To Lose My Job [OBJ]:'(I Was Desperate,I Didn't Know What To Do [OBJ]:'(I Love My Job And It Took Me Years To Be Where I Am Today.I Wasn't Being A Prostitute,I Really Didn't Want To Sleep With Him But He Threatened Me

Me: Shhh It's Okay

Mr Hlazo: Mr Zizwe Is The One At Fault Here,He Took Advantage You,He Abused His Position

Miss Ngozi: It Doesn't End There

Mr Hlazo: Ohh?

Miss Ngozi: He'd Call Me To His Office And Ask Me To To

She Looked Down

Mr Hlazo: It's Okay You Can Tell Us Everything

Miss Ngozi: He'd Ask Me To To Suck His
Private Part

Yhoo Menzi Was A Real Dog,A Big Fat One With
The Longest Tale Nxaaah! He Just Disgusted
Me

Miss Ngozi: I Did It All The Time He Asked Me
To :(I Was Scared Of Losing My Job,I'm The
Only Person Working At Home,I Didn't Want To
Take My Family's Bread Right From Their
Mouths

Mr Hlazo: It's Okay Sisi,Mr Zizwe Is Gonna Pay
For Everything He Did To You,I'll Make Sure Of
That

Miss Ngozi: He Has Money,He Can Get Any
Lawyer He Wants.I Don't Have That Kind Of
Money

Me: Mr Hlazo Can't The Company Hire A Lawyer For Her?

Mr Hlazo: Since This Happened Here At Work I'm Sure It Can

Me: Then We Should Hire One For Her,Everything's Gonna Be Okay Babe Okay?! We Won't Let Menzi Get Away With This

Miss Ngozi: Thank You

Me: You Can Go Now,Call Me If You Need Anything

Miss Ngozi: Thank You Miss Morena

We Hugged Then She Left

Mr Hlazo: You're Too Matured For Your Age

Me: Why You Sayin' That? OBJ:)

Mr Hlazo: You Handled Mrs Hamilton In a Matured,Professional Way

Me: What's Her Problem Anyway?

Mr Hlazo: I've Always Suspected That She Has Something Going On With Mr Zizwe

Me: Meaning?

Mr Hlazo: Like They Are Romantically Involved

Me: I Wouldn't Be Surprised, Menzi's A Douche-Bag

Mr Hlazo: You Talk Like You Know Him

Me: I Was Involved With Him Once And That Was The Biggest Mistake I've Ever Done In My Life

Mr Hlazo: Is He The Father Of Your Baby?

Me: Ohh Please, No He's Not And I Would've Died If This Was His Child

Mr Hlazo: Kids Change People

Me: Menzi Has A Son But He's Still This Obnoxious Dangerous Snake Preying On Everyone

Mr Hlazo: You Don't Like Him I See

Me: We Got Unresolved Issues Together But I Try My Best Not To Include Them In The Business Space But It's Obvious He's The Same Person Everywhere

Mr Hlazo: Since I've Been Appointed As The New CEO Even If Temporarily, Can We Go And Have Some Few Drink To Celebrate My Position?

Me: Yeah Sure Why Not? As Long As You Payin'

Mr Hlazo: I've Heard Menzi Calling You Esihle, So Your Name Is Esihle?

Me: Jeap And You're?

Mr Hlazo: Sibusiso, Sibusiso Hlazo

Me: Nice To Know You Blessing

Mr Hlazo: That's How My Grandma Calls Me

Me: So Are You Really A Blessing?

Mr Hlazo: I Think So

Me: I See

I Texted Lutho And Told Him That I'm Going Out With a Friend For Drinks,Sibusiso Drove Us To A Nearest Restaurant And We Made Our Orders

Sibusiso: So How Far Are You With Your Pregnancy?

Me: I'm Nine Months

Sibusiso: But Your Belly Ain't That Big

Me: I Know Hey

Sibusiso: So Is It Gonna Be A Girl Or A Boy?

Me: I'm Having A Girl

Sibusiso: I'm Sure She's Gonna Be Beautiful Like Her Mother

Me: Her Daddy Got The Looks Too So She Might Take His

Sibusiso: So You're Together With The Father?

Me: Jeap

Sibusiso: Lucky You Then, Many Teenagers Go Through Pregnancy Alone With The Father All Around The World Like Air

Me: Haha I Know That Hey But Princess And I Are Lucky, Daddy Is Still 'round And He Ain't Going Anywhere

Sibusiso Settled The Bill, Lutho And Siya Got In. He Saw Us Then They Walked Towards Us

Lutho: Hey Sugar

Me: Hey Bbe

We Kissed

Me: Bbe Meet Sibusiso The New Acting CEO Of The Company, Sibusiso This Is My

Boyfriend,The Father Of My Baby Lutho And His Friend Siya

Sibusiso: Nice Meeting You Sir.I Thought Your Baby Daddy Was Still a Teenager,Maybe A School Boy

Lutho: Too Bad I Can't Say The Same Bout You.And Bout The Baby Daddy Part,It's Clear Your Thoughts Are Wrong And I Wonder How You Gonna Run A Company That Big When You Think Bullshit



IYHO!

[05/20, 10:20] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT64 ♡ ↓

Sibusiso Chuckled And Got Up,Lutho Didn't Even Crack A Smile.Siya Was Dead Of Laughter On Other Side

Sibusiso: It Was Great Having Lunch With You Esihle,I Hope We Gonna Do It Again Some Other Time.Again,It Was Nice Meeting You Gentlemen

Sibusiso Pushed His Chair And Left,Siya Sat Down Laughin' His Lungs Out.There Were Even Tears Comin' Outta His Eyes

Me: Really Lutho??

Lutho: He Had The Nerve To Say What He Thought Of Me In Front Of Me,How Sick Is That?

Me: Really??

Lutho: Really Sugar

He Sat Down Too

Me: I'm A Teen Lutho, Did You Want Him To Think I Date With Sugar Daddies While I'm A School Girl?

Lutho: Did He Have To Say What He Said Out Loud? He Should've Just Kept His Shitty Thoughts In His Head

Siya: So That's The Nikka Who's Gonna Replace Menzi?

Me: Yes Do You Have A Problem With That?

Siya: Nhaa He Seems So Formal And Legal

Me: What's Wrong With That?

Siya: Nhaa Nothing But With a Replacement Like That, Menzi's Gonna Bounce Back Easily And You Won't Know What Hit Y'all

Me: Sibusiso Knows A Lot Bout Business

Siya: I'm Not Talkin' Bout Business

Lutho: Do You Know The Beast You've Unleashed From Menzi?

Me: I've Dealt With Him Before And I Ain't Scared Of Him

Lutho: Sugar Like I Told You Before, That Company Means Everything To Menzi So Do You Think He'll Let Go Of Y'all That Easily?

Me:..... [OBJ]:(

Siya: Y'all Made a Dumb Move Especially By Appointing That Sibusiso Nikka As The CEO

Me: So What Can I Do?? Baby You Gonna Help Me Ayt?

Lutho: I Don't Wanna Get Involved In Your Company Issues

Me: And If Menzi Wants To Kill Me?

Lutho: Then He'll Kill You, You Should've Backed Him Up

Me: WHAT??

Siya: You And Menzi Don't Know Each Other Through Work Only,You Know The Kinda Person He Is.You Should've Thought Bout That Before Going Against Him In That Meeting

Me: He Raped Someone Siya,What Was I Supposed To Do??

Siya: Turn A Blind Eye Maybe?

Me: Y'all Are Mad

Lutho: We Didn't Come Here To Discuss Menzi So Let's Just Eat And Go Home

Lutho Got Me A Juice While Siya And Him Ordered Their Meals And Beers.After They Were Done Eating,Lutho Settled The Bill Then Lutho Drove Me Home First Then Left With Siya,They Were Using His Car.

I Got Home And Went Straight To My Bedroom,I Was Tired As Fuck So I Fell Asleep Immediately.

I Woke Up In The Middle Of The Night And Was Hungry As Fuck,I Wore My Flip Flops And Walked To The Kitchen,I Opened The Fridge And Took Out The Polony,Cheese,Jam Then Poured Myself Some Juice,I Made A Sandwich And Sat Down Then Ate.I Opened The Freezer And Took Out Two Russians Then Warmed Em Up And Are Them Too,I Drank The Juice And Took A Big Simba Packet Of Chips From The Cupboard Then Walked To My Room.I Sat On The Bed And Ate The Chips While Playing Music On My Phone.I Replied To Messages On Whatsapp,Lutho Texted Me

Lutho: You Up At This Time Of The Night?

Me: Was Hungry So I Went To Grab Me Some Midnight Snack

Lutho: You Mean Your Midnight Meal

Me: [OBJ]:'(

Lutho: Sorry Then Sugar But We Both Know I'm Tellin' The Truth

Me: This Is All Your Fault

Lutho: Don't Worry Bbe,Princess's Gonna Be Out Soon

Me: Whatchu Doing?

Lutho: Just Finished Going Through Some Work Report And Going Through Some Work Files

Me: This Work Of Yours Is Too Much Babe

Lutho: It's For Our Future Bbe...I'm Drowsy Now So I'll See You Morrow OBJ

Me: Good Night Bbe...Love You

Lutho: Love You Too Sugar No Boom And Princess Too

I Charged My Phone And Tried To Sleep.The Following Day I Woke Up And Helped Mom With Breakfast

Mom: I Guess Princess Is Gonna Be Big,I Can See Your Bump Is Weighing You Down

Me: She Can't Be Big,Lutho Is Thin As Fuck And I'm A Needle

Mom: Kids Tend To Take The Opposite Sometimes

Me: She Has To Have Her Figure And Flat Belly Like Her Mom

Mom: Ohh Please I Won't Let You Starve My Granddaughter

Me: I Won't Starve Her,She'll Just Hit The Gym

Mom: African Women Have To Be Thick

Me: Then Why Aren't You?

Mom: Because The Four Kids I Have Are A Lot Of Work So They Make Me Work My Butt Off

Dad Got In

Dad: But It's Still Big

Mom: What?

Dad: Your Butt OBJ:p

Me: Please Not Now

Dad: What?

Me: Daddy You Know What I'm Talkin' Bout

Dad: Okay Fine Then

The Twins And Vusi Joined Us For Breakfast

Olwethu: Ain't That Too Much Food For
Someone Who Wants To Keep Her Figure?

Me: Olwethu Can You Please Leave Me Alone?

Owethu: She's Eating For Princess Too

Olwethu: Ohh I Almost Forgot

Dad: Vusi You're So Quiet

Vusi: I'm Just Stressed Out By My Upcoming Game

Me: You Know You're Good So Why Stress?

Vusi: We're Going Up Against The Most Famous And Best Team In The League

Dad: I'm Sure You Can Beat Them

Vusi: And I Haven't Been To Practice

Me: Why?

Vusi: Because I Had Some Business To Take Care Of

He Gave Dad a Nasty Look, So I Gussed It Was Bout The Gang.

Mom: I'm Sure You Gonna Be Okay Bbe

Vusi: I Hope So Coz We Can't Lose This Game

Olwethu: And You Can't Win Every Game

Vusi: Just Shut Up Asithandile Olwethu Morena

Olwethu: O-kay

We Finished Eating Then I Washed The Dishes And Went To Do My Homework. I Got A Text From Sibusiso Sayin' I Should Rush To The Office Coz There Was An Urgent Meeting I Had To Attend.

I Borrowed Vusi's Car And Drove To The Office, I Found Everyone Already On Their Chairs Including Menzi

Me: Uhhm What's Going On Here? I Didn't Hear Anything Bout Last Time's Meeting Being Adjourned

Menzi: Thank You For Coming Miss Morena. I Called This Meeting Myself Because Mr CEO Himself Wrote Me a Letter Saying He Can't Run

A Big Company Like This One And That He Needs Me Back As The CEO

Mr Smith: WHAT??

Me: WHOA WHAT??

Menzi: Can You Tell Them Mr Hlazo By Yourself? I See They Wanna Hear It From The Horse's Mouth

Sibusiso: Mr Zizwe's Right,I Wouldn't Be Able To Run This Company Like He Does And We All Know He Does His Job Properly So I Think We Should Give Him A Second Chance

Me: WHOA WHAT?? SIBUSISO ARE YOU MAD??

Mrs Hamilton: No He's Being Realistic,We All Know This Company Is Nothing Without Menzi.If We All Want To Keep Our Clients And Money Flowing In Then We Should Put Menzi Where He Belongs

Me: Behind Bars Is Where He Belongs,He's a Rapist.He Sexually Assaulted Miss Ngozi

Menzi: Miss Morena Can You Put Our Ugly Past
Aside Coz You Taking This Personal Now,I'm
Innocent,I Would Never Take Advantage Of An
Employee That Way.I'm A Legit Businessman,I
Know The Company's Rules

Me: Legit My Third Paralyzed Foot Marn,You
Raped The Poor Woman

Menzi: (Chuckles) Esihle Only Men Got That
Foot.... Miss Ngozi Please Tell Them The Truth

Miss Ngozi: I'm Sorry For Lying To The
Board,You Miss Morena And Everyone Else,Mr
Zizwe Was Telling The Truth.Our Affair Was
Consensual

THE FUCK?? [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

[05/20, 10:20] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT65 ♡ ↓

WHAT THE HELL??

Mr Smith: This Is All Madness! Miss Ngozi You Don't Have To Lie For This Evil,Cruel Man

Menzi: If I Were You,I Wouldn't Be Calling Me That Way

Mr Smith: Unfortunately You Not Me! Mr Zizwe I'm Tired Of You Running This Company With Your Illegal Ways,It's Time You Step Down And Let Someone Experienced Run This Company

Menzi: And Who Exactly Is That?? I See You Think This Is Your Family Business

Me: ENOUGH!

They Both Kept Quiet And Looked At Me,The

Whole Room Looked At Me.

Menzi Laughed

Me: What's Funny?

Menzi: So You Already Puttin' Your Major Share Holder Act Together?

Me: Mxm....Miss Ngozi What Do You Mean You Lied To Us?

Menzi: Let Me Sit Down And Hear The Whole Story With Y'all

Me: Miss Ngozi?

Miss Ngozi: I'm Really Sorry For Lying To You All

Me: Miss I'm Still Listening

Miss Ngozi: I Couldn't Control What I Felt

Me: What You Felt? What Exactly Did You Feel?

Miss Ngozi: I Loved Mr Zizwe The First Minute I

Got To This Company,I Felt Strongly Attracted To Him But Thought It Would Be Impossible For Us To Date While He's My Boss

Me: Where Does Rape Get Into All Of This?

Miss Ngozi: Mr Zizwe Never Raped Me

I Looked At Her O.o

Miss Ngozi: I Always Tried To Show Him That I Romantically Crave Him But He Was Too Formal And-

Menzi: And Too Legal :)

Mr Smith: Can You Do Us All A Favor And Shut Up?

Menzi: You Old Man Really Hate Me

Me: Carry On Miss Ngozi

Miss Ngozi: One Day When We Were Working On Some Files In His Office,I Tried To Kiss Him

But He Backed Off.He Told Me He Doesn't Do Office Romance,I Tried To Kiss Him To Get Him In Many Attempts,He Finally Gave In

Mr Smith: So What Happened To "I Don't Do Office Romance" ?

Menzi: Would You Let a Pussy Which Is Handed To You In a Platter Go?

OBJ:v Thankfully There Were No Clients 'round Coz We Would've Lost Some Coz Of Menzi's French

Mr Smith: And You Still Call Yourself a Formal,Legal Man

Menzi: Then What Am I?

Mr Smith: It Doesn't Matter Even If An Employee Offers Herself In a Tray Or Dish,You As The Employer Should Be Able To Control Yourself.As The CEO You Don't Get

Romantically Involved With Your Employees

Menzi: Ohh Okay So Now We Ain't Talkin' Bout Rape Anymore, We Talkin' Bout Me Not Being Able To Control Myself? What Exactly Do You Want From Me Mr Smith?

Me: Miss Ngozi Was Not Done Talking And Mr Zizwe This Is A Formal Meeting So Stop Talking Like You Are On The Streets

Menzi: Haha Yho Sorry Miss Major Share Holder

Miss Ngozi: Our Relationship Was Consensual, We Both Wanted Each Other And We Decided To Keep This As A Secret From Everyone To Keep Mr Zizwe's Image Clean In The Office

Me: I'm Gonna Ask You This Again, Where Does Rape Get Into All Of This?

Miss Ngozi: He Didn't Crave Me Like He Did Before So I Got Jealous

Me: You Got Jealous?

Miss Ngozi: I Threatened To Expose Our
Relationsh-

Menzi: Call It An Affair

Miss Ngozi: Our Affair If He Continued To Act
Like He Did

Me: Were You Expecting Some Raise When You
Were Sleeping With Him?

She Looked Down

Me: I See

Miss Ngozi: I Needed The Money,I Need The
Money

Me: So How Did You Get It When You Didn't Get
Your Raise?

Miss Ngozi: Mr Zizwe Always Gave Me Money
From His Pocket

Me: Do You Know That's Called Prostitution?

Menzi: See Mr Smith? What's Wrong With Buying a Prostitute?

Mr Smith: You Both Work In This Company! You're Her Boss,She's Your Employee!

Menzi: And She Sold Herself To Me

Mr Smith: That Is An Abomination In The Business World

Menzi: Even If It Was Accordant?

Me: Mr Zizwe And Mr Smith Can You Please Let Miss Ngozi Finish Talking?

They Both Kept Quiet

Miss Ngozi: So All In All I Lied About The Rape Thing,I Just Wanted Him To Feel The Same Pain I Felt When He Ignored Me

Me: So You Decided To Lie And Ruin Mr Zizwe's Image When You Knew He Loves His Job And

Does It Properly?

Miss Ngozi: I Just Wanted Him To Pay Back

Me: Aren't You The One Who Wanted Him In The First Place?

Miss Ngozi: It Was Me

Me: Did Mr Zizwe Come To You And Ask To Sleep With You? Didn't You Offer Yourself?

Miss Ngozi: I Was Desperate Okay?! OBJ: '(

Me: Don't You Dare Raise Your Voice, You Wasted Our Time, Made Us Feel Sorry For You When You Were Just Lying And Decieving All Of Us! Do You Know How Many Women Get Raped By Their Bosses While You're Here Busy Lying About Other People's Pain??

Miss Ngozi: I Didn't Think It Would Be A Big Deal

Me: You Didn't Think It Would Be A Big Deal??! Are You Even Listening To Yourself?? Menzi Almost Lost His Job, Got His Business Meeting

Ruined. Who Do You Think Would Employ a Rapist, Someone Who Sexually Assaults His Employees?? He Could've Gone To Jail For Years Because Of Your Lies. We Would've Lost Everything In This Company With The Media Following Us Everywhere

Miss Ngozi: I'm Sorry

Me: I'm Sorry But I'll Never Forgive You And You're Fired!

Mr Smith: What?? You Can't Fire Her

Me: Guess What? I just Did. This Meeting Is Over

I Took My Bag And Walked Out, Sibusiso Came To Me

Sibusiso: Hey

Me: Hi

Sibusiso: I Just Want To Say Thank You Again

For Yesterday

Me: And I'm Sorry For What My Boyfriend Said To You

Sibusiso: What's His Problem Anyway?

Me: He Can Be A Little Jealous Sometimes

Sibusiso: Jealous Boyfriends Are Dangerous

Menzi: I'm So Gonna Tell Cousin Brother That You Discuss Him With Your Employees, Even Though That's Not Labelled As Illegal In The Company But I'm Sure It Is In Your Relationship

Me: Mxm

Sibusiso: I'll See You Around

He Walked Away

Me: What Do You Want Menzi?

Menzi: I Wanna Thank You For Standin' Up For

Me

Me: I Wasn't Doing It For You,I Was Doing It For The Company.So Tell Me,How Did You Get Miss Ngozi To Tell The Truth And Mr Hlazo To Step Down As The Acting CEO?

Menzi: So You Believe That I Didn't Rape Her?

Me: Menzi

Menzi: Haha Okay...Everyone Has Their Price And Everyone Has Their Secrets

Me: You Blackmailed Them,Didn't You??

Menzi: I Just Made A Deal With Each One Of Them

Me: A Deal?

Menzi: Mr Smith Is-

Lonwabo's Mom Walked Our Way With a Guy Maybe At Menzi's Age Or Slightly Above.They Got To Us And Greeted

Menzi: Whoa Is This What I'm Thinking? Ma They So Look Alike

L's Mom: Esihle Can We Please Talk To You?

Me: O-kay

We Went To Menzi's Office And Closed The Door

L's Mom: How Have You Been My Baby?



Me: I've Been Good Thank You For Asking,Who Is This?

Guy: I'm Oko

Me: Oko?

L's Mom: This Is Oko Your Father's Son.He's Been Staying With His Mother For Years And Your Father Was Financially Supporting Them Even When He Was With Your Mother.Oko

Decided To Come Back And Look For Him,He
Didn't Know He Died Because Her Mother Is Still
Getting Some Money From Your Dad's
Account.Oko Is Your Elder Brother

The Fuck??  

[05/20, 10:21] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT66  

Me: MY WHAT??

L's Mom: I Didn't Know Him Too Dear,Your
Father Kept Him As A Secret From Me Too

Oko: My Mom Was Still Young When She Got
Pregnant With Me,She Was Going To The Same

School With Your Father I Mean Our Father,They Slept Together And Mom Got Pregnant.Mom Gave Me To My Grandparents To Raise Me Because She Had To Finish School So I Grew Up Knowing My Grandparents As My Real Parents,I Only Found Out That I Was Not Theirs When I Had To Go To The Initiation School For My Circumcision Because I Had To Do It In My RealFather's Traditional Way So Mom Had No Choice But To Tell Me.

She Got Someone With The Same Clan Name As Dad To Help Us With Everything.Mom Too Didn't Know That Dad Is No More Because She Told Him To Never Contact Or Talk To Her Because My Grandparents Told Her To.I Don't Know How Dad Managed To Convince Her To Take The Money

Me: Wow

L's Mom: I Was Shocked And Stunned Too Dear,All Along You Had An Older Brother.Oko Is

Just Here To Look For His Real Family And That Family Is You And Me

Me: I Want Nothing To Do With Your Family!

L's Mom: Your Dad Is The One Who Did You Wrong Not The Poor Boy, Please Just Give Him a Chance. He Just Wants To Bond With His Little Sister. No Matter How You Try To Ignore This But You Have Our Blood Running In Your Veins

I Just Kept Quiet And Looked At Her, She Was Telling The Truth Even If I Tried To Ignore Them Or Shut Them Out Of My Life, I'll Always Be Related To Them.

Oko: Look I Just Want To Know You Lil Sis, Spend Some Time With You

Me: [OBJ]: '(

Oko: Did I Say Something Hurtful?

Me: Uhhm No It's Just The Pregnancy,It Makes Me Emotional

Oko: So I'm Gonna Be An Uncle?

Me: [OBJ]:) Yeap

L's Mom: And One Other Thing,Since Oko Is Your Father's Son,I Think It Would Be Good For You To Give Him Something From The Shares

Me: Ain't We Moving A Lil Bit Faster?

Oko: Nhaa It's Okay,I Didn't Come Here To Claim Anything Or To Take Anything From You,I Just Came Here To Bond With My Sister And Have A Healthy Relationship With Her

Me: [OBJ]:)

L's Mom: Why Don't We Go And Have Something To Eat,The Three Of Us?

Oko: Why Don't I Go With Esihle Only? Grandma We Just Had Something To Eat Now And When We're With You We Won't Be Able To Talk Freely About Everything

L's Mom: Okay Then If You Say So

Oko: So Shall We?

Me: Yeah Sure And I Know The Perfect Place
We Can Go To

I Got In Vusi's Car Then Oko Got Into His, We
Drove To My Favorite Restaurant And Made Our
Orders

Me: So How Old Are You And What Do You Do
For A Living?

Oko: I'm 22 Years Old And I'm An
Undergraduate In Mechanical Engineering But
I'm Already Working While Doing My Masters
This Year

Me: Wow

Oko: Yeah So What Bout You?

Me: I'm 17 And Still In Matric, You Make Me Feel

So Small

Oko: You're Almost There Too,Don't Underestimate Yourself

Me: Yeah Right

Oko: So How Far Are You With Your Pregnancy?

Me: I'm Already Nine Months

Oko: Wow

Me: Yeap And My Date Is Near

Oko: So Am I Having A Niece Or A Nephew?

Me: You Having a Niece

Oko: Not Too Expensive,That's What I Love Bout Girls

Me: Dude!

Oko: For Real,I'll Have To Buy a Thing Or Two As The Uncle So I'm Glad It's A Girl

Me: You Seem Too Happy To Meet Me

He Stopped Eating And Looked At Me

Oko: Aren't You?

Me: I Told Myself As A Kid That I Want Nothing To Do With Lonwabo Or His Family

Oko: But He's Your Father

Me: He Was Just a Sperm Donor

Oko Chuckled

Oko: You Ain't Serious

Me: I Am

Oko: What Did He Do To You To Hate Him This Much?

Me: He Beat Mom,He Beat Her In Front Of Me.He Cheated On Her,He Made Her Feel So Little,He Made Her Think Love Didn't Exist

Anymore

Oko: Uhhm I'm So Sorry To Hear That

Me: I've Moved On,I'm Over That Now

Oko: No You Not

Me: Maybe I'm Not But I Just Don't Like Talkin'
Bout It

Oko: Ohh I'm Sorry

My Other Plate Came,I Ordered Two Meals

Me: Mr This Is Not My Order

Waiter: I'm Sure It's Yours Miss

Me: I Said I Don't Want Peppers

Waiter: Ohh I'm Sorry Miss,I'll Go And Get You
Your Correct Order

Me: Thank You

The Waiter Took The Plate And Walked Away

Oko: I Don't Love Peppers Too

Me And Oko: They Upset My Stomach

Me: What??

Oko: Wow

We Both Laughed

Oko: That Was Weird

Me: Way Too Weird

Oko: Grandma Said Dad Also Didn't Like
Peppers

Me: Ohh

Oko: I Guess We Inherited This Weird Thing
From Him

Me: So Where You From?

Oko: Not Far From Here

Me: You've Never Even Bumped Shoulders Or Hips With Him On The Streets?

Oko: Haha Firstly I Don't Have Hips,I Don't Even Know How He Looks Like Maybe We've Even Bumped Asses On Many Occasions But I Dunno Him And Obviously He Didn't Know Me Too

Me: So Where Does Your Mom Stay?

Oko: In The Country Side

Me: What Does She Do There?

Oko: She's A Nurse And She's Taking Care Of My Grandparents' House Since They Died Years Ago

Me: I'm Sorry Bout Your Grandparents.So If Your Grandparents Died,Why Didn't Your Mom Go Looking For Lonwabo Coz Your Grandparents Who Were The Obstacle Are No More?

Oko: It's Okay,They Were Too Old And Sick To

Live Long.Mom Said She Didn't Want To Upset Their Spirits Coz They Never Wanted Me To Meet With My Dad

Me: Lonwabo Was A Business Man And His Death Was All Over The Papers,How Come You've Never Seen It?

Oko: I'm Not a Paper Person And I Only Watch The News When I Feel Like It

Me: I See.Uhhm If You Don't Mind,Can We Do A Uhhm DNA Test?

Oko Chuckled

Oko: So You Don't Believe That I'm Your Brother?

Me: It's Not That,It's Just That I-

Oko: It's Okay,We'll Do It To Take Away Your Doubts About Me

I Was Embarrassed

Me: Look If You Don't Wanna Do-

Oko: It's Okay,I Said We'll Do It.

Me: You Know What? It Was Just Being Selfish Of Me,There's No Need For That

Oko: I'll Bring You My Toothbrush Tomorrow

Me:.....

Oko: I'll Just Do Everything Your Way To Prove To You That I'm Your Brother.Like I Said,I Didn't Come Here To Take Anything From You,I Just Want Us To Get Along And Be Siblings.I'm Just Tired Of The Nightmares I've Been Having

Me: Nightmares?

Oko: I've Been Dreaming For The Past Two Weeks,A Man And A Young Girl With The Man In A Dark Place And His Face Invisible.The Man Would Ask Me To Go To The Girl But The Girl

Would Keep Pushing Me Away

Me: Do You Think The Girl Is Me?

Oko: Grandma Thought It Was You

Me: But Why Wouldn't I Want You?

Oko: Why Don't You Want Me, You Tell Me?

Oko Was Right, My Heart Wasn't In The Right Place For Him, I Didn't Hate Him But I Didn't Like Him Either. I Guess I Fell In Love With The Money I Was Getting That I Even Hated Him For Showing Up Coz I Had To Share It With Him

Oko: Huh?

I Came Back From My Thoughts

Me: It's Not That I Don't Want You, I'm Just Still

In Shock That's All

Oko: You Sure?

Me: Yeah,I Can't Wait To Spend More Time With You

Oko: My Thoughts Exactly

I Insisted To Pay The Bill Then I Drove Home,I Got Home And Told The Family Everything.Dad Said I Should Give Oko A Chance,I Could See Jealousy From Vusi's Eyes.I Guess Bro Hated The Fact That He Had To Compete For My Love With My Real Brother But He Didn't Have To Worry Coz He Was My Ride Or Die.Oko Texted Me And Said That He Wants to Meet With Me After School For The DNA Thing.

The Following Day,I Got Up And Got Ready For School.

Vusi Drove Us To School

Vusi: Today I'm Going Out With The Guys After School And I Need A Date Coz Inam Won't Be Able To Come With Me

Me: So You Want Me To Go With You?

Vusi: I'd Love That And I Want All Eyes To Be On Me When They See My Hot Sister

Me: Who Happens To Be Pregnant

Vusi: You Hot Even With That Belly On

Me: Unfortunately I Won't Be Able To Go Witchu Too

Vusi: Going Somewhere With Luu?

Me: Nhaa I Have To Meet Up With Oko

Vusi: You Just Met Him Like Few Hours Ago But He's Already Snatching You Away From Me

Me: Stop Being Jealous You Know No One Would Ever Compete Witchu, You My Errday Nikka

Vusi:.....

Me: C'mon Bro

We Got To School Then Vusi Got Out Without Saying A Word,I Went To My Class And The Day Went Well.

I Went To Catch A Taxi On The Hiking Spot Not In The Taxi Rank But A Red And Black Range Rover With Black Windows Parked In Front Of Me.The Guy Rolled Down The Window,I've Never Seen Him Even In a Dream

Guy: Need A Hike?

Me: No Thanks

Cars With Black Windows Are a No Go Area

Guy: I Wouldn't Let Such A Beauty Hike Into a Full Taxi With People Smelling Armpits Some

Sweating,You Know All Those Gross Things

I Chuckled

Me: I Said I'm Good

His Smile Turned Into a Frown

Guy: I Said Get Inside The Car

Me: Haha What?

Guy: Just Do It Before I Drag You Inside Myself
And Don't Even Think Of Running Away

Me:.....

Two Guys Got Out From The Back,I Tried To
Run But They Caught Me.I Tried To Fight
Them,Kicked Both Of Them On The Balls,They

Fell On The Floor But When I Turned To Run

Guy: I've Been Playing With Guns For Years And I Can Shoot An Ant From Miles Away So Before You Put Those Small Short Legs On Your Back,Think Twice

I Turned,He Was Out Of His Car With A Gun Pointed At Me.

Good Lord People Were Just Staring At Us Like They Watching A Movie.

I Raised My Hands Up

Guy: Good,Now Get In The Car

I Slowly Walked To The Car,The Minute I Got In,The Other Guys Did Too Then He Did Some Fast And Furious Shit.I Felt Like I Was Gonna

Go Into Labour That Very Moment.

Me: Who The Hell Are You?

He Laughed And Looked At Me In The Review
Mirror

Guy: I'm Your Worst Nightmare

Me: I've Had So Many Worst
Nightmares, Couldn't You Wait a Lil Bit Longer
Before You Show Yourself?

Guy: Unfortunately I Couldn't

Me: So Now Are You Ready To Tell Me Who The
Hell You Are?

Guy: Aviwe

He Chuckled

Guy: Aviwe Junior,I'm Sure There's A War Inside
Your Stomach Right Now And Your Heart Is
Beating Like It's Gonna Jump Off Your Chest

OHH FUCK ME SIDEWAYS!!

[05/20, 10:22] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT67 ♡ ↓

He Was Telling The Truth,The Way My Heart
Was Beating So Fast It Felt Like It Was Gonna
Jump Outta My Chest

Aviwe Jr: I See The Morena Princess Is Really Beautiful

Me: What Do You Want From Me?

Aviwe Jr: Haha Are You Serious?

Me: What Do I Have To Do With All This Shit??

Aviwe Jr: First Of All Your Dad Took My Father Away From Me And Now Your Boyfriend Didn't Kill Your Dad When He Had The Chance To Coz He Was In Love With The Enemy's Daughter

Me:.....

Aviwe Jr: See You Fit In Every Shit

Me:.....

He Parked In Front Of This Big House, There Were So Many Cars And Busy People Outside. The Guys I Kicked On The Balls Both Took Me By Both Of My Arms

Aviwe Jr: Follow Me

They Took Me To This Room,It Wasn't Dirty Or Smelly,It Was Just A Room With a Bed.

Aviwe Jr: Tie Her To The Chair

One Guy Pulled Me Roughly

Me: YOU DON'T HAVE TO BE HARD ON ME! I WON'T RUN AWAY DAMMIT!

Aviwe Jr: I See You're Fiesty

Me: Mxm

They Tied Me On The Chair And Thankfully They Didn't Tie The Part 'round My Tummy.Aviwe Took a Chair And Sat In Front Of Me

Aviwe: So Tell Me,How Can I Meet Up With Mr Morena?

Me:.....

Aviwe: Don't Be Rude Sweetheart,I'm Tryna Have a Conversation Here

Me:.....

Aviwe: So You Ain't Gonna Answer Me?

I Felt A Slap Across My Face [OBJ]:o The Fuck?? 'Is This Guy Being For Real?'

I Looked At Him In Shock

Aviwe Jr: Ready To Answer Me Now?

Me: I'm Hungry

He Laughed His Ass Off

Aviwe Jr: Haha What Do You Think This Is??
Some BnB Or Something??

Me: So For How Long Will You Keep Me Here?

Aviwe Jr: As Long As I Like Or Maybe I Might
Even Throw A Braai And Make You The Beef

WHAT THE FUCK??

Aviwe Jr: I Heard That Mr Morena Ain't Your
Real Father

Me:..... [OBJ]:'(

Aviwe Jr: What's Wrong Now?

I Just Kept Quiet And Thought Bout My
Baby,What That Monster Could Do To Her Or
Both Of Us.

I Felt A Slap Across My Face Again

Aviwe Jr: I'm Talking To You Bitch!

Me:..... [OBJ]:' (

Just When He Was Bout To Slap Me
Again,Someone Knocked On The Door

Aviwe Jr: I'll Be Back

He Got Up And Walked Out,He Locked The Door

Voice: Didn't I Ask You To Wait A Little While
Before You Strike??

Avkwe Jr: Look Here BOY! I Don't Take Orders
From You,This Is My Army Remember?! You
Had Your Chance And You Fucked It Up

Voice: So You Just Gonna Do Things Your Way While I'm The One Who Knows The Ins And Outs Of Every Fuckin' Enemy We Have?

I Knew The Voice,It Was Menzi [OBJ]:'(So He Was In That With That Aviwe Jr,But I Wasn't Surprised Menzi Was Always Full Of Shit

Aviwe Jr: I Told You I'm Just Taking Over,I Didn't Say I Won't Need You No More Unless You Have Something Different In Your Mind

Menzi: Sure Whatever

Aviwe Jr: I'll Be Back,Keep An Eye On Her

I Heard Footsteps Then The Door Opened,Menzi Got In

Menzi: The One And Only Miss Morena

Me: Dad's Gonna Kill You

Menzi: Hey Don't Point Fingures At Me,I Didn't Drag Your Ass To This Dumpster

Me: Menzi He's Gonna Kill Me And My Baby [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: So??

Me: This Is Your Damn Niece Menzi! Just Have a Heart For Once!

Menzi: Lower Your Damn Voice When You Talkin' To Me

Me: Please Menzi Please [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: I Would Save Your Ass If That Was My Baby But Unfortunately It's Not Coz You Never Wanted Me To Get A Piece Of The Cake

Me: Menzi Please [OBJ]:'(

Menzi: What Am I Gonna Get In Return?

Me: Really Menzi?? All You Can Think Bout Is A Deal?? That Monster Might Kill Me Tonight!

Menzi I Can't Lose This Baby

I Saw Menzi Lookin At My Legs

Me: What??

Menzi: You Should've Told Me That You Want To Pee,It's So Unsexy For A Beautiful Lady Like You To Pee On Herself

Me: What? Pee?

THE FUCK?? OH MY WORD! MY WATER BROKE

Me: DAMMIT MENZI THIS IS NO URINE,MY WATER JUST BROKE

Menzi: Your Water Broke?

Me: IT MEANS THE BABY IS COMING!! ARE YOU STUPID??

Menzi: I Know Nothing Bout Pregnancy Marn

Me: MENZI DO SOMETHING BEFORE I GIVE
BIRTH HERE

Menzi: I Wouldn't Mind Seeing You Suffer a Lil

Me: ARE YOU MAD?? THIS IS YOUR NIECE,DO
YOU WANT MY BABY TO DIE IN HERE??
AAAHHHHH!

I Could See He Was Also Starting To Be
Creeped Out

Me: Menzi Please [OBJ]:' (I Know You And Aviwe
Don't Get Along Very Well And Soon He Might
Kick You Out Of The Army You Spent Your Life
Tryna Put Together

Menzi:.....

Me: See What ahhhhh! What I I Mean.Menzi
Please Help Me

Menzi: I'll See What I Can Do

👑 LUTHO'S POV 👑

I Packed My Things Coz I Was Done With The Day's Work,I Walked To My Car Then My Phone Rang

* Call Convo *

Me: Wassup?

Siya: I Just Got A Call From The Guys And They Say They Saw a Black And Red Range Rover Taking Esihle

Me: WHAT????

Siya: And It's Aviwe's Son

Me: WHAT THE?? AVIWE HAS A SON??

Siya: I Was Shocked Too

Me: Get The Guys Together Now! I'll Meet Y'all
At My Crib

Siya: But Dude He-

Me: I NEED TO SEE YOUR ASSES ASAP

Siya: Roger That

THE FUCK?? AVIWE HAS A SON?? THAT WAS
SOME FUCKED UP SHIT!!

I Got In My Car And Drove To My
House,Everyone Was Already There With Their
Black Cars.I Left Everything In The Car And
Went In

Ray: Siya Just Told Us Everything Now

Me: Get Everything Ready Now,Esihle Can't Even
Spend One Night There

Ray: But We Know Nothing Bout This Guy

Me: DO I LOOK LIKE I GIVE A FUCK?? ESIHLE IS

PREGNANT WITH MY BABY RAY AND NOW THEY ARE BOTH IN THE HANDS OF OUR ENEMY,DO YOU THINK THAT MORON WILL JUST LET THEM BE?? HE MIGHT KILL MY CHILD,MY DAMN CHILD!

Menzi: I Can Help You Out (Standing At The Door)

Me: I Don't Need Your Damn Help Menzi

Menzi: Her Water Already Broke

Me: WHAT?? SEE WHAT I MEAN??

Menzi: There Are Still Guys Back There Who Still Listen To My Orders

Me: WHAT DO YOU WANT MENZI?? JUST NAME IT

Menzi: I Want You To Give Me A Respectable Position In Your Army Then I'll Help You

Siya: This Nikka Is Mad,After Everything You've Done To Us??

Menzi: Then Esihle Might Give Birth To Your Child In That Dumpster And who Knows Maybe Aviwer The Junior Might Throw Her To The Dogs

Me: FINE! YOU'RE IN

Menzi: I'll Keep It OG Cousin Bro

[05/20, 11:40] Ron: THUG LIFE: Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT68 ♡ ↓

After A While Someone Opened The Door, Aviwe Got In

Aviwe Jr: I Arranged A Meeting With Mr Morena And I Can't Wait To Meet Up With Him

Me: Ahhhh!

Aviwe Jr: What's Wrong?

Me: Mhmhm Ahhhh! Oh My Wo- Ahhhh!

Aviwe Jr: Is There Something Wrong?

Me: Please Call A Doctor!

Aviwe: And Why Would I Do That?

Just Then His Phone Rang

Aviwe: I'll Be Back Now Now,Don't Move

Me:.....

Aviwe: But It's Not Like You Can Move

He Chuckled And Walked Out,I Was Dying Of Pain.Menzi Got In With a Smile On His Face

Me: Came With Some Help?

Menzi: What Makes You Think Imma Help You
When I Ain't Even Getting Shit From This?

Me: MENZI ARE YOU MAD??!!

Menzi: Someone Is So Not Gonna Get Any Help
From Me

Me: MENZI I'M AHHHHHHH I'M DYING
DAMMIT!!

Menzi Just Laughed His Ass Off

"The Fuck Is Wrong With This Dude??"

OBJ OBJ OBJ OBJ

Menzi: I Had a Lil Talk With Lil Bro

Me: Menzi I Can't Lose This Baby OBJ:'(OBJ:'(

Menzi: Don't You Wanna Know What We Were
Talkin' Bout?

Me: MENZI PLEASE I'M GONNA LOSE THIS
BABY IF YOU DON'T HELP ME

Menzi: So That We Can Start Our Own Life
Together

Me: AHHHHHHH!! OBJ: '(MENZI ARE AAHHHH
YOU CRAZY??!

I Was Drippin' Wet From My Sweat,It Was So
Hot And The Pain Was Unbearable.

Menzi: Just Kiddin' Your Boyfriend Is Here

Me: WHERE??

Menzi: Jeez Calm Down

Me: MENZI DON'T YOU DARE TELL ME TO CAL-
AHHHH!

Menzi: If I Were You,I'd Save My Energy For The
Pushin' Process

Me: MENZI!!

Menzi: He's Waiting For Me To Tell Him To Get Inside

Me: THE FUCK YOU WAITING FOR??

Menzi: I'm Still Having Fun

Me: MENZI PLEASE JUST GET ME OUTTA HERE!!

He Chuckled And Showed His Head OUTTA The Door,Whistled Then Pulled It In Again.

Lutho Got In Kick Openin' The Door,He Ran To Me And Hugged Me

Me: Baby Aaahhh!

Lutho: Baby You Okay? Is The Baby Okay?

Me: Aahhh! I Dunno But My Water Already Broke

Lutho: Hold On Everything's Gonna Be Okay

Me: Baby I Can't Lose This Baby

Menzi: Okay Love Birds Make It Quick Before Junior Gun Points Us All In Here

Lutho: Thanks Again Bro

Menzi: You Know I Keep It One Hunnid When I Keep It OG

Lutho Picked Me Up And We Took The Back Door And Three Black Cars And Lutho's Car Were Parked Outside The Yard. We Got Into Lutho's Car Then Siya Started The Car, When He Drove Away Gun Shots Started.

The Black Cars Were Driving Beside The Car For Protection, Lutho Kept Wiping My Sweat With a Wet Towel And Helping Me With My Breathing.

Me: Baby We Can't Lose This Baby, I Can't Lose My Baby

Lutho: Baby Calm Down, We Ain't Gonna Lose Princess

Me: [OBJ]:'(

Siya Pressed Harder On The Pedals Every Time I Screamed,They Were So Calm Even Though There Were Cars Chasing And Shooting At Us.It Was Starting To Get Outside And I Was Panicking.We Got To The Hospital,We Got Help Immediately.Lutho Told Them Everything And That My Water Broke Hours Ago

Lutho: I'm The Father Can I Come With?

Doc: Miss?

I Just Nodded

Doc: Okay Then

Lutho: Thank You

He Held My Hand And Kept Kissing It All The Way To The Labour Room.

I Lied On The Bed And The Process Started.Lutho Was So Freaked Out I Could See Right Through Him.He Kept Exhaling While His Hand Was A Bit Shaking As It Held Mine.He Kept Kissing My Forehead And Wiping My Sweat

Doc: Push!

Me: Ahhhhh!

Lutho: Relax Baby Errthing's Gonna Be Okay

Me: Ahhhhh!

Doc: We Getting There

Every Time I Tried To Push,Sweat Would Come Running Outta My Skin.

My Bae Was So Freaked Out For Real,I Kept

Holding On Tighter On His Hand

Doc: Her Pelvic Bone Is Narrow

Nurse: Does That Mean There Might Be a Need
Of a C Section?

Doc: I Think So

Lutho: Whoa What??

Nurse: Don't Worry We Won't Rush Her

Lutho: Can't You-

Doc: We Gonna Try One Last Time

Lutho Pecked My Lips And Held My Hand Again

Doc: Push!

Me: Ahhhhhhh! OBJ OBJ

Lutho: You Can Do This Baby

Doc: I Can See The Head

Lutho: C'mon Baby You Can Do This

Me: Aaahhhhh!

I Heard a Tiny Little Cry Then I Lied Breathlessly
On The Pillow

Lutho: You Did It Baby, You Did It [OBJ]:D [OBJ]:) [OBJ]:D

Me: Our Lil Princess [OBJ]

Lutho: Shhhh

The Doctor Gave Her To Me, I Was So
Drained. She Looked So Tiny And Young, So
Cute [OBJ]:)

Lutho: She Looks Like You

Me: She's So Tiny

Mom,Dad,Vusi,Inam,Olona And Menzi Got In

Mom: My Baby

Me: Hey Mom OBJ:)

Dad: So The Mouse Is Finally Out?

Me: Dad!

Mom: Can I Hold Her?

Me: Yeah Go Ahead

Mom Took Her,The Nurse Came Back With A Document

Nurse: I Hope I'm Not Disturbing

Mom: Nhaa Not At All,Came For The Name?

Nurse: Yes Mam

Mom: Ohh Okay Let The Parents Tell You Then

Me: Mihle Iminqweno Luhle Princess Morena

Dad: Yhooo So Many Names

Lutho: Mihle Iminqweno Luhle Daddy's Princess
Morena

We All Laughed

Mom: Guys Be Serious

Menzi: How Bout We Add Menziwa?

Lutho: Dude Don't Be Crazy, You Can't Give That
Name To My Child

Me: She's Mihle Iminqweno Luhle Princess
Morena

Nurse: Mihle Iminqweno Luhle Princess Morena
It Is. Thank You

The Nurse Went Out

Menzi: Can I Hold Her?

The Whole Room Went Quiet

Menzi: Can I?

Me: Uhhm Yeah Sure

He Took Her From Mom

Vusi: So My Niece Is Finally With Us

Me: And You Should Get Your Baby Skills
Together Coz You Might Change Nappies

Vusi: The Nappy Part No Thank You, Maybe I
Might Make The Bottle And Put Another Spoon
In My Mouth

Me: I'll Make Sure You Don't Touch Her Bottle

I Saw Lutho Talkin' With Dad And Menzi, They Were Serious As Fuck And Mom Kept Glancing At Them. The Nurse Came Back And Said She Had To Clean Princess Up So She Took Her.

Mom Brought Her Those Pink Cute Baby Clothes And Brought Me Fresh Clothes Too.

I Was Gonna Be Discharged The Following Morning, The Family Left Including Menzi And Olona Even Though Olona Didn't Want To Leave.

Lutho Didn't Leave, He Sat On The Bed And Put My Head On His Lap While We Watched Our Princess Sleeping. I Could Sense That Something Wrong Went Down Coz Lutho's Soul Was Not At Ease

Me: Baby?

Lutho: Ummm

Me: What's Wrong?

Lutho: No'ing Why?

Me: You So Quiet,Did Anyone Get Hurt During The Shooting?

Lutho:.....

Me: Baby?

Lutho: Baby I Think You Should Focus On You And Imi Now

Me: Baby I Can Sense That Something Is Wrong

Lutho: Baby Please Just Get Some Rest Now,You Should Worry Yourself Bout Other Things Tomorrow

Me: Lutho Please Just Talk To Me

Lutho:.....

He Just Kissed My Forehead

Me: Lutho Just Talk Already!

Lutho: OKAY FINE! RAY GOT SHOT,THE DOCTOR SAYS HE MIGHT NOT MAKE IT.I JUST FUCKEN FOUND HIM AND NOW HE MIGHT BE TAKEN AWAY FROM ME

OBJ: '(OBJ: '(

[05/20, 11:42] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT69 ♡ ↓

I Just Didn't Know What To Say,It Was Clear That Lutho Was Way Too Hurt,Way Too Emotional And Way Too Angry

Lutho: I'm Sorry For Shouting At-

Me: Shhhh It's Okay

Lutho:..... [OBJ]:'(

Me: I'm Sure Ray's Gonna Fight This

Lutho: And If He Doesn't Win?

Me: Then We'll Have To Understand That He
Had To Leave This Earth

Lutho: I'm Not Ready To Lose Him

Me: You Won't Lose Him,We Won't Lose Him

I Tried To Sit In a Position Where His Head
Could Be On My Chest,I Kept Brushing It While
He Kept Exhaling

Me: Baby?

Lutho: Uhm

Me: Don't You Think You Should Go Home,Take

A Shower And Sleep?

Lutho: I Wanna Stay Here Witchu And Princess

Me: Nothing Is Going To Happen To Us,Imi And I Will Be Fine

Lutho: I'll Be Fine

Me: Okay If You Say So

We Both Kept Quiet For A While

Me: Why Did Menzi Help You Out? What Did You Promise Him?

Lutho: Esihle Can We Not Talk Bout That Now? Please

Me:.....

Lutho Lifted His Head Up And Looked At Me

Lutho: Don't Tell Me You Mad

Me: I'm Not

Lutho: Okay Sugar He Asked Me To Let Him Be Part Of The Gang

Me: WHAT?? I Hope You Told Him To Go To Hell

Lutho: I Really Don't Have The Energy For This

Me: DAMN YOU LUTHO! YOU AGREED,DIDN'T YOU?

Lutho: Did I Have Another Choice?? It Was Either That Or You Give Birth To Our Child In That Dumpster And Who Knows What That Aviwe Guy Could've Done To You Or My Baby?

Me:.....

Lutho: Exactly

Me: I Think You Should Leave

Lutho: I'm Not Going Anywhere

Me: Mxm

I Pushed Him Off Me And Gave Him My Back

Lutho: Are You Being For Real?

Me: Goodnight Lutho

Lutho: O-kay

I Couldn't Sleep But I Just Felt Like Giving Him My Back,I Woke Up To Princess Crying I Guess I Fell Asleep.

Lutho Was Fast Asleep With His Hand 'round My Waist.I Put It Aside And Took Princess Then Breast Fed Her,She Stopped Sucking And I Guessed She Had Enough.I Burped Her Then Walked 'round The Room Till She Fell Asleep Again.

I Also Got In Bed And Fell Asleep Immediately.

I Woke Up In The Morning To Lutho Walkin'

'round The Room With Princess In His
Hands,He Was In Fresh Clothes

Me: You Two Look Cute

Lutho: Look Who Just Woke Up,Someone's
Mommy Is Lazy.Princess And Daddy Woke Up a
Long Time Ago,We Even Went Back Home And
Bathed

Me: Don't Tell Me You Took My Baby Witchu

Lutho: C'mon Bbe I'm Not That Stupid

Me: How Long Has She Been Awake?

Lutho: She Just Woke Up Now

Me: Give Her To Me,I Wanna Give Her Her
Breakfast

Lutho: Wish I Could Be The One Suckin' On
Those Nipples

Me: Mxm

He Handed Princess Over To Me And I Breast Fed Her

Lutho: I Went To Check Up On Ray Before Comin' Here

Me: And?

He Sat Down And Exhaled

Lutho: Still No Difference

Me: Have You Told Your Mom And Dad?

Lutho: Yeah And Bout The Baby Too

Me:.....

Lutho: They Said They'll Come And See Imi After Going To See Ray

Me: Mhm

Lutho: I Just Hope He Makes It,We Didn't Even

Spend Enough Time Together

Me: I'm Sure Ray Will Be Fine

Lutho: Your Doctor Said You Being Discharged Today

Me: Yeah

Lutho: Should I Drive You Home Or Your Dad Will?

Me: If You Can Then I Don't Mind

Lutho: I Gave Myself A Day Off From Work So I Have Enough Time To

Me: Okay Then

I Burped Princess And Gave Her To Lutho,She Was Just a Sweet Quiet Child.I Went To Bath Then Got In My Clothes,I Signed My Discharge Papers Then Took Imi To The Car While Lutho Took Her Things.I Sat At The Back With Her While Lutho Drove Us Home

Lutho: It's So Weird To See You At The Back Of The Car

Me: Baby Rules

Lutho: Imi Must Grow Up So She Can Sit At The Back On Her Own

Me: Uhhm Lutho?

Lutho: I'm All Ears Sugar

Me: I'm Sorry Bout Last Night

Lutho:.....

Me: I Was Just Mad That You Gave Menzi That Kinda Power Over You After Everything He Has Done To Us

Lutho: I Just Wanted To Save You And Princess,I Had To Save Your Ass And Princess

Me: I Know And I'm Grateful For That

Lutho: Let's Just Let It Slide

Me: So Do You Trust Him?

Lutho: Not Really,He Has To Do More Than He's Capable Of To Gain My Trust And He Got No Choice But To Fix Things With Me Now,This Aviwe Guy Doesn't Play Dolls

Me: Speakin' Of That,How Am I Gonna Be Able To Go To School When He's Still Out There?

Lutho: Mr Morena Organised People Who Will Drive You And Vusi To And From School

Me: Vusi Is So Not Gonna Like That

Lutho: He Doesn't Have a Choice

Me: So What Will Happen Now?

Lutho: With What?

Me: This Aviwe Guy? He Seems Ready For War

Lutho: We'll Just Wait And See What Happens Next,I'm Just Glad That You And Princess Are Back Home

We Got To My House,Lutho Helped Me With The Bags While I Carried The Little Mouse To The House.We Found All Of The Uncles And Aunts Waiting For Us Inside With Presents And There Was A Big Cake On The Table

Me: Wow Guys You Didn't Have To

Lutho: We Have To Make Up For Not Making A Baby Shower

Me: You Knew Bout This??

Lutho: I Promised Not To Say Anything

Me: This Is So Beautiful

There Was A Big Writing On The Wall "Happy Birthday Mihle Iminqweno Princess Luhle Morena"

I Hugged Them All Then They Gave The Presents,Princess Was Just Lying On The

Couch Suckin' On Her Hand

Olwethu: Ain't She Hungry?

Me: What Do You Know Bout Babies?

Olwethu: Was Only Askin'

Owethu: I Think It's Time We Show You Our
Surprise Too

Me: What Is It?

Owethu: I Said It's A Surprise Duhh!

Me: O-kay

Owethu: Come Let's Go

Lutho: Can I Come With Too?

Owethu: Yeah You Can

Lutho,I And The Twins Got Up.They Blindfolded
Me Then Opened The Room Next To Mine

Me: What's Going On?

Lutho: Hold On We Almost There

He Finally Opened My Eyes.WOW!! 😄 😊)

The Room Was So Beautifully Decorated And Painted.There Were Two Beautiful Shades Of Pink Played With

Me: Don't Tell Me You Did This On Your Own

Owethu: Mom And Dad Helped Us Here And There But This Is All Our Work We're Not Talkin' Bout That Now

Me: It's So Beautiful I Love It My Jelly Tots

Olwethu: Jelly Tots?

Me: Mxm Come Here

I Hugged Them And Kissed Their Cheeks But

Olwethu Tried To Fight Me.We Went Back To The Lounge And The Party Started.I Really Enjoyed Myself With My Whole Family 'round And Of Course Bae Too.I Was Happy To See Lutho Laughin' And Not Stressin' Too Much Bout Ray.Later On I Went To Put Princess To Sleep,Lutho Accompanied Me.

We Got To Her Room And Put Her In Her Tiny Cute Court.Lutho Wrapped His Arms 'round Me And We Just Looked At Our Baby

Lutho: I Can't Believe Our Tshunkunas Is Finally Here

Me: Haha Our What??

Lutho: It's A Cute Name,Isn't It?

Me: Haha No It's Not

Lutho: Whatever,It Ain't Yours.I'm Sure Princess's Gonna Like It

Me: I'll Tell Her Not To Like It

Lutho: Princess And I Have Already Talked And She Likes It

Me: Hee You Two Are Talkin' Behind My Back Now?

Lutho: Speakin' Of Talkin' Behind Your Cute Back,Princess Says She Wants A Sibling

Me: You Crazy

Lutho: I'm For Real,Remember We Made A Bet And I Won So I Want My Second Child

Me: Nikka You Crazy

His Phone Rang

Lutho: Gotta Take This

Call Convo

Lutho: My Nikka

.....

Lutho: WHAT??

.....

Lutho: Anyone Got Hurt?

.....

Lutho: Sure Thing,I'm On My Way

He Hung Up

Me: Is Everything Okay?

Lutho: The Guys Went For Some Few Drinks,Some Group Of Guys Started a Fight With Them And There Was Some Exchange Of Bullets But None Of Us Got Hurt.Anga And Siya Got Arrested.....

[05/20, 11:43] Ron: THUG LIFE:

Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT70 ♡ ↓

Lutho Went To Kiss Imi's Forehead Then Came
To Peck My Lips

Me: So What Now?

Lutho: I'll Try To Get Them Outta Prison

Me: And?

Lutho: And Nothing

Me: Can I Come Witchu?

Lutho: Haha You Kiddin' Ayt?

Me:....

Lutho: Tshunkunas Still Needs Both Of Her Parents

Me: The Last Time You Said That You-

He Smashed His Lips On Mine And Stopped Me From Talkin'

Lutho: I'll Be Fine

Me: Please Be Fine

Lutho: I Gotta Go,I'll Come And Check Up On You Two Before I Go To Sleep

Me: Okay Cool

I Stood On My Toes And Pecked His Lips,He Kissed My Forehead Then Walked Out.I Went Back To The Lounge,Lutho And Dad Were Just Leaving.

Mom: Don't Do Anything Stupid,Make No Move

Dad: Maybe There Might Be A Need For It

Mom: Want Me To Tag Along?

Lutho: I Think We'll Be Fine Mrs Morena

Mom: Okay If You Say So

They Both Walked Out,We Heard The Cars
Speeding Away

Uncle B: Some People Want To Die

Me: Why Didn't You Go With Them?

Uncle B: I Don't Have Time To Fight Little
Boys,This War Ain't Mine And It's Definitely Not
Your Father's

Vusi: That Aviwe Guy Seems Way Too Prepared
For Anything

Uncle B: Every Guy Has His Own Weaknesses

Vusi: He Doesn't Seem To Have One

Uncle B Hit Vusi At The Back Of His Head

Vusi: Ouch! What's That For??

Uncle B: Didn't You Hear Me? Boy I Said E-V-E-R-Y
Y Guy Has His Own Weaknesses, Find Them
And Use Em Wisely

Vusi: That Guy Is Hard To Read, I Tried To Find
Any Potable Something But Found Non

Uncle B: Ncinci You Really Still A Boy

Uncle Alex: Then Help Them Out

Uncle B: I Don't Have Time To Fight Small Boys

Uncle Thabang: I Have A Proposal For You

Uncle B: I'm All Ears

Uncle Thabang: There's This Guy Who Needs A
Mercedes McLaren SLR, Can You Deliver?

Uncle Alex: Gimme The Digits

Uncle Thabang: 8.4 Is The Original But He Said He'll Buy It By 8.1

Mom: That's Way Too Sick

Aunt Amish: You Could Build Me A House With Those Digits

Uncle B: Consider It Done

Uncle Thabang: You In?

Uncle B: Deeper Than The Ocean

Me: I Hear You Talkin' Bout 8.4 And 8.1, What's That?

They All Laughed At Me

Me: What??

Vusi: Are You For Real?

Me: I Really Dunno Whatch' Y'all Talkin' Bout

Uncle B: We Talkin' Millions Sweetie

Me: Wow

Uncle Alex: Wanna Join The Mission? I'm Sure
They'll Give You a Cut

Me: Nope Thank You

Uncle B: It Would Be Good Money

Me: Don't Forget I Own 50% Of Lonwabo's
Estate,Every Time Menzi Gets a New Client My
Phone Goes 'Tititi'

They All Laughed

Uncle B: You Rich As Fuck,I Should Kidnap You
And Ask For A Ransom

Me: That's Crazy

Uncle Alex: Atcho Age We Didn't Even Have A
Cent

Me: Fortunately For Me My Father Owned A Big Company And Surprisingly He Left It To Me

Aunt Amish: So Whatchu Gonna Do With That Much Money?

Me: I Think I Should Get Myself a Car

Mom: Isn't That Too Soon?

Me: Vusi Has It

Vusi: Tag Me Along When You Going To Choose

Me: No Problem

Mom Said I Should Go And Ckeck On Imi And Go To Sleep Afterwards Coz I Was Going To School The Following Day.She Found Someone To Look After Princess When We're At School,She Was Gonna Be Given A Bottle So Everything Was Sorted.

I Went To My Room And Slept,I Woke Up To Someone Opening My Door

Lutho: Sorry To Wake You

Me: Nhaa It's Fine,Did You Get Them Out?

Lutho: Yeah

Me: That's Good

Lutho: Is Imi Still Asleep?

Me: Yeap

Lutho: I'm So Exhausted

Me: You Can Sleep Over

Lutho: I Don't Want Mr Morena To Kill Me

Me: He'd Never

Lutho: That Would Be Pure Disrespect

Me: [OBJ]:(

Lutho: You Look Cute When You Frowning You Know?

Me: Mxm [OBJ]:)

Lutho: That's My Bbe

We Had a Long Kiss Then Lutho Left.I Went To Check Up On Princess And Changed Her Nappy,She Was Still Fast Asleep.I Went Back To Bed And Slept Immediately.

The Following Day I Woke Up And Princess Was Crying,I Changed Her Nappy And Made Her Bottle.I Bathed While She Was Still Suckin' On It,I Found Her Fast Asleep.I Got Dressed And Took Her With Me To The Kitchen

Dad: Did She Behave?

Me: She Slept Peacefully But Just Cried Non Stop Few Minutes Ago

Mom: At Least She Sleeps At Night Unlike Someone I Know

Me: Mom!

Mom: For Real,I Couldn't Sleep At Night

Dad: Princess Is Lucky That Imi Is a Quiet,Sweet Soul

Me: I Wouldn't Even Last A Day Without My Beauty Sleep

We Ate Breakfast Together Then Our Drivers Arrived,We Took Our School Bags And Went To The Car

Me: They Hot

Vusi: And They Are a No Go Area

Me: I Was Just Complimenting Jeez

Vusi: Lutho Has To Hear Th-

Vusi Pushed Me Down Then We Heard a Gun Shot And The Window On Vusi's Side Broke

Driver: Dammit!

Vusi: Do Something! Shoot Back!

The Other Guy On The Passenger Seat Took Out His Gun And Tried To Shoot Back, The Car Was Speeding So Fast And I Was So Glad That All That Ish Was Happening With Imi Outta My Womb.

Two Other Cars Joined Us And Helped The Other Guy To Shoot The Two Cars Behind Us

Vusi: It's Bout Damn Time

I Was So Freaked Out But Vusi Held My Hand. The Shooting Finally Stopped

Vusi: We Lost Them?

Driver: I Think So

Me: This Is All So Fucked Up

They Drove Us To School,I Couldn't Concentrate In Class.I Kept Reliving What Went Down.After School Lutho Said He'll Pick Me Up,He Arrived With Anga,Thabang(Lutho's Friend) And Menzi In Their Own Cars

Me: I'm a Queen Hey,I'm Being Picked Up By Four Cars

Thabang: We Can't Take Chances Hey

Anga: We Don't Have All Day Guys

I Got In Lutho's Car Then They Drove Away,He Didn't Head To My House

Me: And Then?

Lutho: Got Some Business To Take Care Of
First

He Gave Me His Three Guns And Bullets

Lutho: Can You Do Me The Honour?

Me: Cool

I Loaded Em

Lutho: More Reasons To Love You More

Me: Don't You Ever Forget That

They Pulled Off In Front Of a Dirty Old
Building,There Were Guys Cleaning Guns
Outside Some Playing Cards.In Two
Minutes,Five Black Cars Pulled Off

Lutho: Time For Some Action

In Each Black Car There Were Five Guys With Guns Obviously.Lutho,Menzi,Anga And I Went To The Guys Sitting On The Stairs While The Others Stood Behind Us Ready For Any Movement

Lutho: Afternoon Gentlemen

One Guy Got Up,He Had a Matchstick In His Mouth

Guy: How Can We Help You?

Lutho: Is Bullet 'round?

Guy: And If I Say He's Not?

Lutho: That Ferrari Goes Wherever, He Goes

Guy: I Said He's Not 'round! Now Leave We
Don't Want Any Kinda Trouble

Lutho: Cool We Leavin'

Lutho Punched The Guy Then Held My Hand
And We Went Inside With Anga, Thabang And
Menzi. We Found Some Dark, Tall Guy Drinking
Brandy With Two Guys Counting Stashes Of
Madibas With Him

Lutho: Bullet Bullet Bullet

The Guy Jumped And Even Spilt The Brandy On
His Shirt

Lutho: Thought We'd Never Find You?

Bullet: Tar Luthos Listen My Bro I Can Expl-

Menzi: You Can Do That Some Other Time,We
Came For Our Share Now

Bullet: WHAT?? But I Used Up That Money a
Long Time Ago

Lutho: And How Is That Our Problem?

Bullet: Listen Bro,I Got A Heist In Two Days.I
Can Cut You A Good Deal From That

Lutho: Forget Bout The Money,We Need You To
Find Brandon For Us

Bullet: WHAT??

Lutho: I Want To See Him By Tomorrow

Bullet: We All Know That's Not Possible

Lutho: You Owe Me Nikka

Bullet: BUT THAT DOESN'T MEAN YOU SHOULD
WALK ALL OVER ME! (Hitting The Table)

I Dunno How Lutho Got Hold Of His Knife But I
Saw Bullet's Hand Bleeding And The Knife Cut

Deep In His Hand,Connecting It To The Table

Lutho: You Gonna Find Him And Tell Him I Want To See Him By Tomorrow Even If You Have One Working Hand.You Only Have 12 Hours,You Can Go And Get Your Hand Checked By a Doctor But Know You Wasting My Time Which Is My Money

Siya Got In Breathing Heavily

Siya: I've Got Good And Bad News

We All Looked At Each Other

Lutho: Gimme Me That Pudding First

Siya: Ray Woke Up And We Took Down 5 Of Aviwe's Men Today

Me: What?? Wow That's Great :)

Menzi: And The Broccoli?

Siya: The Cops Got Evidence Bout Two Of Our Recent Heists

[05/20, 11:44] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT71  

Lutho Looked At Everyone

Lutho: Damnit!

He Looked Back At Bullet Who Had His Hand Bleeding All Over The Floor

Lutho: You Know What? Forget Bout The 12 Hours,I Want To See Brandon Tonight

Bullet: WHAT??

Lutho: Get Your Goons To Get Him For Me Tonight Coz If You Don't,We'll Have a Serious Problem

Bullet: Why Do You Need Him So Desperately?

Menzi: That's Non Your Business BOY

Bullet: Fine! I'll See What I Can Do

Lutho: Make It Happen,Our Work Is Done Here My Nikkas

I Felt Sorry For The Poor Bullet Guy,He Seemed To Be In Pain And He Was Losing a Lotta Blood.

Lutho And The Others Walked Out,I Followed Them.We Got To The Car Then Drove To The Hospital

Me: You Were A Bit Too Harsh On The Poor Guy

Lutho: He Deserved It

Me: But Stabbing His Hand Lutho?

Lutho: I Don't Do Houses When It Comes To Business

Me: Yho

Lutho: I'm Impatient I Need Brandon ASAP

Me: Who Is This Brandon Guy?

Lutho: Some Guy We Used To Work With

Me: I'm Listening

Lutho: He Can Be Very Helpful When It Comes To This 'Untouchable' Aviwe Guy

Me: When Last Did You Talk To Him Or Work With Him?

Lutho: Few Years Back, We Went To A Big Heist Together With Menzi, Got Some Big Cash And

Split It Then He Went His Separate Way. But Few Weeks Ago I Got Some Help From His Guys For Our Recent Heists Coz They Good At What We Were Doing

Three Recent Heist?? [OBJ]:o I Just Decided To Let It Slide But My Soul Wasn't At Ease Coz The Cops Found Evidence Bout Those Same Three Recent Heists

Lutho: You Okay?

Me: Yeah I'm Fine....I Can't Wait To See Ray Hey,I'm Sure You Can't Wait Too

Lutho: I'm Way Too Happy Bbe Yho [OBJ]:D

Me: I Can See That [OBJ]:)

We Got To The Hospital And Went To Ray's Room,He Was Just Lying On The Bed,Facing

The Door With His Eyes Lookin' Into Space

Siya: Bro! We Thought You Wouldn't Make It!

Ray:.....

Lutho: You Scared Us You Moron! Welcome Back From The Dead Bro,Hope You Sent My Greetings To The Grandpas

Siya: Dude He Was Busy Workin' As An Ancestor,He Didn't Have Time To Play Happy Families

We All Laughed Except Ray

Menzi: You Okay Bro?

Ray: Uhhm I'm Sorry To Burst Your Bubble Guys But Who Are Y'all?

What?? We All Looked At Each Other,The
Disappointment In Lutho's Was Beyond Any
Explanation

Menzi: What Do You Mean Who Are We?

Ray: I'm Sorry But I Really Dunno You

We All Looked At Each Other Again,Lutho
Exhaled

Anga: So This Means Nikka Lost His Memory

Me: I Think We Should Leave Him With
Lutho,This May Be Too Much For Him

Rau Laughed So Hard,We All Looked At Him

Ray: You Should've Seen Your Faces Haha

Lutho: YOU FUCKIN' KIDDIN' ME??!

Ray: I'm Back Bro

Lutho Got Closer To Him And They Both
Hugged For A Long Time [OBJ]:'(That Moment
Was Just Priceless Man

Sjya: Dude Do You Wanna Kill Us Before Our
Time?

Ray: Just Wanted To See How Much I'm Loved
By Y'all

Menzi: Don't Ever Do That Again Dude

Menzi Hugged Him Too

Siya: So Now That Our Nikka Is Back,Imma
Twerk That Out

Me: Haha You Can Twerk?

Siya: Ohh Honey,I'm a Man Of Many Talents But It's Hard Hey Coz I Got No Big Butt Like Anga

Anga: Don't Start

Siya: I Mean Check The Nikka's Butt Out,If He'd Be A Stripper,He'd Make Millions

Me: And He's Got The Body,He's Just The Full Package

Siya: And He Can Twerk Too

Lutho,Ray,Menzi And Thabang Were Dead Of Laughter

Anga: Really Siya?? Nikka Are You Being For Real Right Now?

Me: You'd Make A Great Strip-

Anga: Don't Even Finish That Sentence

Siya: Nikka You Stingy,We'd Make Good Money

Lutho: Haha Who's We?

Siya: I Mean Anga Would Go And Do His Thing
Then Come Back And Share The Money With Us

Anga: You Really Sick

Ray: Why Are You Two Always Like This?

Anga: I Ain't Like This,This Moron Is Always On
My Back

Siya: Coz I Wanna See That Big Ass Of Yours

We All Laughed

Me: Dude You Gay??

Anga: I'm Sure He Is,He's Always Checkin' My
Ass Out

Siya: I'm Just Admiring God's Work

Menzi: By Checkin' Another Nikka's Ass?? Dude

You Scarin' Us Now

Ray: If I Died I Wouldn't Be Able To Hear All This Madness

Siya: Thank Your Ancestors For Not Needing Your Help That Side Anytime Soon

Anga: I'm Sure They Don't Even Make Jokes That Side

Siya: Dude They Always Busy Lookin Our Asses,Especially Anga's

Me: Why His?

Siya: Coz It's Fat So It Needs All That Special Attention You See

Anga: Siya Just Leave My Ass Alone Please

Ray: Maybe He Wanna Tap It First

Siya: Ohh Please,I Get Hoes Everywhere I Ho,What Am I Going To Do With An Ass Not Just An Ass,A Steal Fit Nikka's Ass? (Using a Girl Voice)

OBJ: v We Just All Cracked In Laughter

Ray: Gay Tendencies, The Voice. This Nikka Is Gay Guys

Siya: I Rearrange People's Faces Who Say I'm Gay

Ray: So I'm Not The First One To Say That?

Lutho: Maybe You The Millionth Person

Ray: And You Still Think We Lying?

Siya: Let's Change The Topic

Me: You Haven't Twerk For Us

Siya Came To Me And I Ran While Laughing

Menzi: Haha Yeah Nikka We Wanna See You Twerk

Siya: Okay Let's Really Drop This Topic Now
Guys

A Beautiful Young Nurse Got In

Siya: Ohh Lala

We All Just Chuckled

Nurse: So How You Feelin' Mr Wilson?

Ray: I'm Feeling Good Now That You've Walked
In Here

Siya: Mr Wilson Is Good,Can I Talk To You For A
Minute

Ray: But My Body Hasn't Fully Recovered Yet I
Guess I Still Need To See Your Beautiful Face
For It To

Siya: Patient And Nurse Relationship? That's A No No. Why Don't You Let Me Take You Out For Lunch? Having Something With Mr Wilson Would Be A Lotta Trouble

Nurse: I Think I Should Go, Your Supper Will Be In Here In a Few Minutes Mr Wilson

Siya: Your Number?

Nurse: I Don't Do Boys

The Guys: WHOAAA!

We All Cracked Up In Laughter

Siya: I'm Sure A Beautiful Lady Like You Doesn't Do Boys, So Your Number?

Nurse: Just Leave Me Alone Young Man

The Nurse Walked Out, Siya Followed Her

Ray: So You Two Are Really Really Cool Now?
(Pointin' At Lutho And Menzi)

Lutho And Menzi Looked At Each Other And
Both Went "Jeah"

Menzi: I Realised Family Comes First

Lutho: You Just Had To Battle Me For Months
And Put Me In a Hospital Bed To Realise That

Menzi: It's Just Life Bro

Siya Got In Smiling Like A Retard

Siya: Guess Who's The Man?

Me: I Guess She Gave You Her Number

Siya: Of Course No Female Resistance Formed

Against This Charm Shall Prosper

Me: You're Just Something Else

We Spent Few Minutes With Ray Then
Left,Lutho Drove To My House To See Imi.We
Found Her Playing With Vusi In The Lounge

Lutho: Bro

Vusi: Brother In Law

Lutho: So This Mouse Is Still Awake?

Vusi: She Just Woke Up Few Minutes Ago

Me: I Hope You Didn't Over Put Her Formula In
That Bottle

Vusi: I Did And I Put Some In My Mouth

Me: Ohh My Baby

Vusi: Just Kiddin'

He Handed Her Over To Lutho Then Left To His Room

Lutho: Thanks Again For This Gift Sugar

Me: You've Been Thankin' Me Countless Times Dude

Lutho: Coz I'm Really Grateful

I Got Closer To Them And Wrapped My Arm 'round Imi.Lutho Pecked My Lips

Me: I Wish You Would Sleep Over

Lutho: Guys Don't Do Sleeping Overs Bbe

Me: You'll Be Doing It For Imi And I

Lutho: Then You And Imi Should Come And Sleep Over At My House

Me: Dad Would Kill Us

Lutho: Then I'll Have To Marry You

[05/20, 14:42] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT71 ♡ ↓

Lutho Looked At Everyone

Lutho: Damn it!

He Looked Back At Bullet Who Had His Hand
Bleeding All Over The Floor

Lutho: You Know What? Forget Bout The 12
Hours, I Want To See Brandon Tonight

Bullet: WHAT??

Lutho: Get Your Goons To Get Him For Me
Tonight Coz If You Don't,We'll Have a Serious
Problem

Bullet: Why Do You Need Him So Desperately?

Menzi: That's Non Your Business BOY

Bullet: Fine! I'll See What I Can Do

Lutho: Make It Happen,Our Work Is Done Here
My Nikkas

I Felt Sorry For The Poor Bullet Guy,He Seemed
To Be In Pain And He Was Losing a Lotta Blood.

Lutho And The Others Walked Out,I Followed
Them.We Got To The Car Then Drove To The
Hospital

Me: You Were A Bit Too Harsh On The Poor Guy

Lutho: He Deserved It

Me: But Stabbing His Hand Lutho?

Lutho: I Don't Do Houses When It Comes To Business

Me: Yho

Lutho: I'm Impatient I Need Brandon ASAP

Me: Who Is This Brandon Guy?

Lutho: Some Guy We Used To Work With

Me: I'm Listening

Lutho: He Can Be Very Helpful When It Comes To This 'Untouchable' Aviwe Guy

Me: When Last Did You Talk To Him Or Work With Him?

Lutho: Few Years Back, We Went To A Big Heist Together With Menzi, Got Some Big Cash And Split It Then He Went His Separate Way. But Few Weeks Ago I Got Some Help From His Guys For Our Recent Heists Coz They Good At What We Were Doing

Three Recent Heist?? [OBJ]:o I Just Decided To Let
It Slide But My Soul Wasn't At Ease Coz The
Cops Found Evidence Bout Those Same Three
Recent Heists

Lutho: You Okay?

Me: Yeah I'm Fine....I Can't Wait To See Ray
Hey,I'm Sure You Can't Wait Too

Lutho: I'm Way Too Happy Bbe Yho [OBJ]:D

Me: I Can See That [OBJ]:)

We Got To The Hospital And Went To Ray's
Room,He Was Just Lying On The Bed,Facing
The Door With His Eyes Lookin' Into Space

Siya: Bro! We Thought You Wouldn't Make It!

Ray:.....

Lutho: You Scared Us You Moron! Welcome Back From The Dead Bro,Hope You Sent My Greetings To The Grandpas

Siya: Dude He Was Busy Workin' As An Ancestor,He Didn't Have Time To Play Happy Families

We All Laughed Except Ray

Menzi: You Okay Bro?

Ray: Uhhm I'm Sorry To Burst Your Bubble Guys But Who Are Y'all?

What?? We All Looked At Each Other,The Disappointment In Lutho's Was Beyond Any Explanation

Menzi: What Do You Mean Who Are We?

Ray: I'm Sorry But I Really Dunno You

We All Looked At Each Other Again,Lutho
Exhaled

Anga: So This Means Nikka Lost His Memory

Me: I Think We Should Leave Him With
Lutho,This May Be Too Much For Him

Rau Laughed So Hard,We All Looked At Him

Ray: You Should've Seen Your Faces Haha

Lutho: YOU FUCKIN' KIDDIN' ME??!

Ray: I'm Back Bro

Lutho Got Closer To Him And They Both
Hugged For A Long Time [OBJ]:'(That Moment

Was Just Priceless Man

Sjya: Dude Do You Wanna Kill Us Before Our Time?

Ray: Just Wanted To See How Much I'm Loved By Y'all

Menzi: Don't Ever Do That Again Dude

Menzi Hugged Him Too

Siya: So Now That Our Nikka Is Back,Imma Twerk That Out

Me: Haha You Can Twerk?

Siya: Ohh Honey,I'm a Man Of Many Talents But It's Hard Hey Coz I Got No Big Butt Like Anga

Anga: Don't Start

Siya: I Mean Check The Nikka's Butt Out,If He'd

Be A Stripper,He'd Make Millions

Me: And He's Got The Body,He's Just The Full Package

Siya: And He Can Twerk Too

Lutho,Ray,Menzi And Thabang Were Dead Of Laughter

Anga: Really Siya?? Nikka Are You Being For Real Right Now?

Me: You'd Make A Great Strip-

Anga: Don't Even Finish That Sentence

Siya: Nikka You Stingy,We'd Make Good Money

Lutho: Haha Who's We?

Siya: I Mean Anga Would Go And Do His Thing Then Come Back And Share The Money With Us

Anga: You Really Sick

Ray: Why Are You Two Always Like This?

Anga: I Ain't Like This, This Moron Is Always On My Back

Siya: Coz I Wanna See That Big Ass Of Yours

We All Laughed

Me: Dude You Gay??

Anga: I'm Sure He Is, He's Always Checkin' My Ass Out

Siya: I'm Just Admiring God's Work

Menzi: By Checkin' Another Nikka's Ass?? Dude You Scarin' Us Now

Ray: If I Died I Wouldn't Be Able To Hear All This Madness

Siya: Thank Your Ancestors For Not Needing Your Help That Side Anytime Soon

Anga: I'm Sure They Don't Even Make Jokes
That Side

Siya: Dude They Always Busy Lookin Our
Asses,Especially Anga's

Me: Why His?

Siya: Coz It's Fat So It Needs All That Special
Attention You See

Anga: Siya Just Leave My Ass Alone Please

Ray: Maybe He Wanna Tap It First

Siya: Ohh Please,I Get Hoes Everywhere I
Ho,What Am I Going To Do With An Ass Not
Just An Ass,A Steal Fit Nikka's Ass? (Using a
Girl Voice)

OBJ:v We Just All Cracked In Laughter

Ray: Gay Tendencies,The Voice.This Nikka Is
Gay Guys

Siya: I Rearrange People's Faces Who Say I'm Gay

Ray: So I'm Not The First One To Say That?

Lutho: Maybe You The Millionth Person

Ray: And You Still Think We Lying?

Siya: Let's Change The Topic

Me: You Haven't Twerk For Us

Siya Came To Me And I Ran While Laughing

Menzi: Haha Yeah Nikka We Wanna See You Twerk

Siya: Okay Let's Really Drop This Topic Now Guys

A Beautiful Young Nurse Got In

Siya: Ohh Lala

We All Just Chuckled

Nurse: So How You Feelin' Mr Wilson?

Ray: I'm Feeling Good Now That You've Walked In Here

Siya: Mr Wilson Is Good, Can I Talk To You For A Minute

Ray: But My Body Hasn't Fully Recovered Yet I Guess I Still Need To See Your Beautiful Face For It To

Siya: Patient And Nurse Relationship? That's A No No. Why Don't You Let Me Take You Out For Lunch? Having Something With Mr Wilson Would Be A Lotta Trouble

Nurse: I Think I Should Go, Your Supper Will Be In Here In a Few Minutes Mr Wilson

Siya: Your Number?

Nurse: I Don't Do Boys

The Guys: WHOAAA!

We All Cracked Up In Laughter

Siya: I'm Sure A Beautiful Lady Like You Doesn't Do Boys, So Your Number?

Nurse: Just Leave Me Alone Young Man

The Nurse Walked Out, Siya Followed Her

Ray: So You Two Are Really Really Cool Now?
(Pointin' At Lutho And Menzi)

Lutho And Menzi Looked At Each Other And Both Went "Yeah"

Menzi: I Realised Family Comes First

Lutho: You Just Had To Battle Me For Months
And Put Me In a Hospital Bed To Realise That

Menzi: It's Just Life Bro

Siya Got In Smiling Like A Retard

Siya: Guess Who's The Man?

Me: I Guess She Gave You Her Number

Siya: Of Course No Female Resistance Formed
Against This Charm Shall Prosper

Me: You're Just Something Else

We Spent Few Minutes With Ray Then
Left,Lutho Drove To My House To See Imi.We
Found Her Playing With Vusi In The Lounge

Lutho: Bro

Vusi: Brother In Law

Lutho: So This Mouse Is Still Awake?

Vusi: She Just Woke Up Few Minutes Ago

Me: I Hope You Didn't Over Put Her Formula In That Bottle

Vusi: I Did And I Put Some In My Mouth

Me: Ohh My Baby

Vusi: Just Kiddin'

He Handed Her Over To Lutho Then Left To His Room

Lutho: Thanks Again For This Gift Sugar

Me: You've Been Thankin' Me Countless Times Dude

Lutho: Coz I'm Really Grateful

I Got Closer To Them And Wrapped My Arm
'round Imi.Lutho Pecked My Lips

Me: I Wish You Would Sleep Over

Lutho: Guys Don't Do Sleeping Overs Bbe

Me: You'll Be Doing It For Imi And I

Lutho: Then You And Imi Should Come And
Sleep Over At My House

Me: Dad Would Kill Us

Lutho: Then I'll Have To Marry You

[05/20, 14:43] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT72 ♡ ↓

The Following Day I Woke Up And Got Ready For School,I Kept Smiling To Myself When I Thought Bout What Lutho Said The Previous Night.

Imi Was Still Asleep So I Let Her Be,I Got A Text From Oko Sayin' He Wanna Meet Up With Me Later That Day.

I Went To The Kitchen And Found Mom And Vusi

Me: Morning

Mom: You Came Home Late Last Night

Me: Lutho Had Some Few Errands He Had To Run

Mom: Which Include Violence

Me: Is There Something Wrong?

Mom: You Can't Go 'round Accompanying Lutho In His Activities,Luhle Is Still a Baby,You'll Bring Her All That Bad Spirit

Vusi: Yho So Many Baby Rules

Mom: You Have To Be Indoors Before Sunset

Dad: And You Should Come Straight Home After School (Joining Us In The Kitchen)

Me: Yho No Friend Visits?

Dad: Nope,You The One Who Decided To Become A Parent At The Age You Should Be Enjoying Your Teenage Years

Me: Wow

The Twins Also Joined Us And We Had Breakfast Together,Sis Lulama (Luhle's Nanny) Got In

Mom: Hey Sweetie Come And Join Us

Lulama: Morning Everyone

Us: Hey

Lulama: Where's The New Member Of The Family?

Me: She's Still Asleep In My Room

Lulama: Can I Go And Check Up On Her?

Me: Yeah Sure

She Walked Up The Stairs

Vusi: Mom Is So Gonna Lose Her Husband

Mom: Why?

Vusi: Ain't You Scared To Have Another Woman In The House?

Mom: Ohh Sweetheart No One Can Rock Mr Morena's Bed Like I Can So I Stopped Worrying Bout Other Hoes

Me: Dad Ain't No Lance Anymore,Right Dad?

Dad: Your Mom Is My All My Lovings

They Both Looked At Each Other And Smiled

Olwethu: Ncoooooah.Now Can We Eat So That
You Can Drive Us To School? This Lovey Dovey
Moment Is Gonna Make Us Late

My Phone Rang And It Was A Number

Call Convo

Me: Unknown Number Hello

Caller: Is That The Way You Answer Your Phone?

Lutho's Mom OBJ -_-

Me: Sorry Hello Ma

L's Mom: I Wanna See My Granddaughter Today

I Looked At Mom

Mom: What?

Me: Lutho's Mom Wants To See Imi

Mom: You'll Go To Lutho's House

I Went Back To The Phone

Me: We'll Meet At Lutho's House

She Dropped The Call "She's A Witch"

Vusi: I Feel Sorry For Imi,She'll Witness Her Mom And Grandma Arguing Coz I Know You Will

Mom: The Minute She Turns Things Left,Come Back Baby

Me: I Will

Lulama Came Down With Imi In Her Arms

Lulama: She's Up

Me: Ncoah Someone Didn't Want Mom To Leave Without Seeing Her

I Took Her And Played With Her a Lil But She Just Gave Me Little Smiles,I Handed Her Over To Lulama,I Told The Rents Bout My Meeting With Oko And They Had No Problem With That.I Then Took My Bag And Went To The Car With

Vusi.

Our Drivers Drove Us To School And There Was No Shooting That Took Place, Thank Goodness.

We Got To School, Inam Met Us Halfway To The Gate And Had Some Kissing Morning Session With Vusi

Me: Eeuw

Vusi: Close Your Eyes

Me: I'm Gone

I Left Them And Went To My Class, I Tried To Study a Lil. Lutho Called Me

Call Convo

Me: Bbe

Lutho: Mother Of My Child,How Is My Babe Doing?

Me: Great Bbe You?

Lutho: I'm Good Especially That Ray Is Back Now

Me: That's Great Hey,So Who You With? I Hear Other Voices At The Back

Lutho: It's Menzi And Ray Arguing Over Which Game To Play

Me: I'm Sure You Must Be Enjoying Yourselves There,Just The Zizwe Boys Only

Lutho: Yeah Something Like That,Mom Said She Wants To See Princess

Me: Imma Come Over To Your House,We'll Meet There

Lutho: I Thought Your Mom Would Want Her To Come Over To Your House,I Want To Be Witchu When You Meet With Her So That She Won't Start No War

Me: Haha So What Are You Now? My Bodyguard?

Lutho: I'm Your Errthing Sweetheart

The Other Two, Menzi And Ray Went "Whooooo"
'You Two Just Shut Up', That Was Lutho
Responding To Them

Me: I'm Tryna Study Here So We'll Talk Later
Kay?!

Lutho: Love You

The 'Whooo' Went On Again

Me: Tell Those Idiots To Shut Up OBJ:) I Love You
Too Bbe

He Hung Up Then I Went Back To My
Work, Inam Got In Smiling

Me: Don't Tell Me Vusi Hit It Here At School

Inam: That's What The Toilets Are For

Me: Eeuww

Inam: Just Kiddin' But I Wouldn't Mind Gettin'
Some Morning Quickie

Me: Girl You Bad

Inam: It's Been A While Since Vusi And I Had
Some Session

Me: I'm Sure My Brother Is So Very Hungry

Inam: He's Always Hungry. So Whatchu Doing
After School?

Me: My Bro Said I Should Meet Up With Him In
Town

Inam: Big Brother?

Me: It Turned Out That Lonwabo Had A Son

Inam: Ohh Wow

"Hello Ladies",Inam And I Both Turned
Heads.WTF?? It Was Litha And Thobela

Litha: Hello Bitter Ex,Hello Miss Morena

Inam: What Do You Want Litha?

Litha: Hello Inam

Inam: Hello Litha,Bye Litha (Gettin' Up)

Litha: Don't Tell Me You Still Mad Coz Of Our
Ancient Old Past

Inam: Mxm

Thobela: Hello Esihle

Me: Hello Thobela,Hello Litha

Litha: I See You Two Are Still Beautiful

Inam: Why Wouldn't We Be?

Litha: Who Knows? There Are Many Things Out There

Inam: Mxm

Thobela: Can We Talk?

Me: Talk

Thobela: Privately

I Stood Up And We Went To Stand Few Feet Away From Inam And Litha

Thobela: I Just Wanna Apologize For Everything That Went Down Between Us

Me: I've Already Forgiven You Thobela And Forgot Bout All Of It

Thobela: But I Never Forgot

Me: And I'm Also Sorry For Errthing

Thobela: Can We Start On a Clean Slate?

Me: Yeah Sure

Thobela: Tar Av Told Me That You Gave Birth Already,How's The Baby?

Me: She's Cute,She's Tiny,She's Little,She's Quiet And She's Beautiful

Thobela: She Had To Be Beautiful Like Her Mother

Me: Yeah Ayt,So How Have You Been?

Thobela: I've Been Good,I Was Accepted In University With Litha

Me: Whatchu Two Doing Here?

Thobela: There're Some Documents Litha Had To Pick Up

Me: I See

Thobela: So How Have You Been?

Me: I've Been Good Too

Thobela: So Friends?

Me: Yeah Friends

We Hugged And Went Back To The Infuriated
And Bored Inam With Litha Who Kept Provokin'
Her

Litha: I Guess Our Work Is Done Here,By Ex By
Miss Morena

They Left

Inam: I Just Wish Vusi Could Strangle The Life
Outta Litha

Me: My Brother Is Still Too Young To Go To Jail
Honey

Inam: I Hate Litha

Me: I Know

School Was Just School, Later On My Driver Drove Inam And I To Town. We Found Oko Already Seated With a Glass Of Juice In Front Of Him

Me: Hey Big Bro

Oko: Huh?

Me: What?

Oko: I Didn't Expect You To Call Me That Way

Me: You My Bro Dude I Have To

Oko: Then I Guess This Meeting Is In Vain

Me: How?

Oko: I Wanted Us To Do That DNA Test

Me: There Won't Be No Need For That, Oko This Is My Friend Inam, Bbe This Is Oko Who Happens To Be My Big Brother

Oko: Nice To Meet You Inam (Takin' Her Hand Into His)

Inam: Nice To Meet You Too Oko [OBJ:]

Me: Okay Enough With The Introduction,I'm Starving Let's Make Our Orders And Oko Will Pay

Oko: I Thought You Were Gonna Pay Miss Independent

Me: You Do The Payin' As The Big Bro

Oko: Yeah Ayt

We Did Our Orders Then I Excused Myself And Went To Pee.When I Came Back,The Two Were Chattin',Laughin' And Seemed To Be Enjoying Each Other's Company.

Oko Really Settled The Bill Then My Drive Drove Inam And I Home.I Got Home And Changed Into A Long Dress And A Jacket Then Took Princess's Things And Mine.Lutho Came To

Pick Us Up

Lutho: My Two Beautiful Ladies

Me: Look Who's Here Imi,Someone's Daddy

Lutho: Hey Bbe

Me: Hey Love

We Had a Brief Kiss Then He Kissed Imi's Forehead.He Took Her Bag And Put It At The Back Of The Car,Imi And I Sat At The Back

Me: Found Brandon Yet?

Lutho: Nhaa

Me: Whatchu Gonna Do Then?

Lutho: The Guys And I Are Tryna Put Something Together

Me: I'm Sorry Hey

Lutho: Don't Worry We'll Find Him

He Parked In Front Of His House Then Took Imi And Her Bag. We Went Inside, Fleeces Were On The Floor With Chips Of Pop Corns 'round. Ray And Menzi Were Busy On The T.V Screen And Controllers In Their Hands. There Were Tons Of Beer Bottles And Cans On The Floor Too

Me: What A Dumpster

Ray: My Niece

Me: Y'all Are Still In Your Boxers

Menzi: We Don't Have Somewhere To Go To So Why Waste Our Clean Clothes?

Me: Yho

I Picked Up The Fleeces And Folded Them Neatly

Me: So Y'all Three Slept Here In The Lounge?

Ray: We Were Celebrating My Come Back

Me: Yeah Ayt

I Collected The Bottles And Put Them In a Plastic Bag Then Swept The Floor While Menzi And Ray Kept Sayin' "Luu Man She's For Keeps,100% Wife Material"

Imi Fell Asleep In Ray's Arms Them I Took Her To Luu's Room.I Went To The Kitchen And The Fridge And Cupboard Were Empty,I Ordered Pizza.

In a Few,It Got Delivered.The Guys Went To Get Dressed Then We Sat 'round The Table And Ate While Chatting

Me: So Menzi Came To Spend Some Holiday

'round Here

Menzi: I Ain't Here For Holiday,I'm Here For Good

Me: The Three Of You Living Together? Lutho Tell Me If You Want Your House To Turn Into a Dumpster

Someone Knocked On The Door,Ray Went To Open Up.It Was Luu's Mom With Olona

Olona: Where's The Baby?

Luu,Menzi And Ray: Hello To You Too Olona

Olona: Sis Esihle

Me: Yes Baby

Olona: Where Is The Baby?

Me: You Greet First

Olona: Hello Everyone

Us: Hello Lholho

Olona: Now Where Is The Baby?

Menzi: You Are Too Old For Your Age

Luu's Mom: Afternoon

Us: Hi Ma

Luu's Mom: Where's The Baby?

Me: Lemme Go And Get Her Now Ma

I Went To Luu's Room And Came Back With
Imi.Olona Jumped And Met Me Half Way

Olona: Can I Hold Her?

I Smiled And Gave Her To Olona But Wrapped
My Arms 'round Too For Any Possible Thing
That Could Happen

Olona: She Looks Like Bhut' Luu

Me: No She Looks Like Me

Olona: Can I Go And Play Toys With Her?

Me: She's Still Too Young For That Baby

Luu's Mom: Esihle Give Me The Baby [OBJ] - -

She Looked So Irritated,I Took Luhle And Gave Her To Her.She Took a Long Inspective Look At Her

Luu's Mom: So She's Really My Son's

The Fuck?? [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

[05/20, 14:44] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT73 ♡ ↓

My Heart Sank a Lil,Maybe An Inch And A Half With a Slight Sideways Twist.I Could Feel Tears Forming In My Eyes,How Could This Woman Hate Me So Much?? What Did I Ever Do To Her?

Lutho: I Think You Should Leave (Lookin' At His Mom)

L's Mom: Excuse Me?

I Just Got Up And Ran Up The Stairs To Luu's Room,I Heard Lutho Tellin' His Mom To Leave Again.I Got To His Room And Threw Myself On His Bed,I Cried A Lil.

After a While I Heard Footsteps Going Up The Stairs Then The Door Opened,I Felt Lutho's

Warm Hand Touching My Shoulder

Lutho: Sugar

Me:.....

Lutho: Bbe

I Just Sat Up Straight And Looked At Him,He
Wiped My Tears

Lutho: I Love You Okay?! You And Imi Are My
All.I'll Never Let Anything Come Between Us

Me: Where Is Yo-

Lutho: She's Gone,I Asked Her To Leave

Me:.....

He Held Me By My Cheek And Pecked My
Lips,His Kisses Were Irresistible Even If I Was

Mad.

I Held Him Tight And Kissed Him Hungrily,I
Could See A Smile Forming On His Lips.

We Kissed Passionately

Me: Where's Imi?

Lutho: Playing In The Lounge With His Uncles

Me: And Olona?

Lutho: Mom Forced Her To Leave

Me:.....

Lutho: I'm Sorry She Had To Be Like That

Me: It's Fine

Lutho: No It's Not

Me:.....

Lutho Picked Me Up And Put Me On Top Of
Him,We Kissed Again.Lutho Kept Running His

Hand Down My Back,Touched My Ass And Kept Brushing My Boobs.

We Both Kissed Hungrily,I Could Feel Lutho Getting Harder Against My Ass Coz I Was Sitting On His Manhood.He Unzipped My Dress From Behind And Lowered Its Arms Till It Was Halfway Down,He Planted Wet Kisses On My Neck,Sucked On My Boobs And Just Any Other Place He Could Get His Hands And Mouth On.I Pulled Up His T-shirt And Just Ran My Hands Down His Abdominal Part,I Kept Touching His Pack And Kissing His Neck Too.

We Both Stood Up,I Was So So Short

OBJ

The Dress Just Slid Down On Its Own,I Unzipped And Took Off Lutho's Pants.He Looked Way Too Big Than The Last Time I Checked

Lutho: You Look Like You've Seen a Ghost

Me: Nikka You Huge

He Just Chuckled And Put Me On The Bed,He Slowly Took Off My Panties While Planting Kisses On My Veejayjay.I Pulled Down His Boxers,YEZUS!! The Nikka Was Gonna Kill Me.

Lutho: You Tense

I Just Sighed

Lutho: Bbe Wassup?

Me: I Dunno

Lutho: Get Up

Me: Huh?

Lutho: Just Do It

I Got Up Then He Sat On The Bed And Put Me On Top Of Him,He Kissed Me Slowly And Passionately.My Body Started Calming Down Bit By Bit Till I Was Lost In The World Of Enchantment Of Lutho's Kisses.

While I Was Still Lost In There,I Felt Something Sharp,Big And Hard Penetrating Through My Cookie [OBJ]:'([OBJ]:'(

It Hurted It Really Did

Me: AAAHHHHHH!!

Lutho: Sorry

Me: AAAAAHHHHH! LUTH- LUTHO THIS HUR- IT HURTS

Lutho: Hey Look At Me

Tears Were Starting To Stream Down My

Cheeks,Lutho Didn't Pull Out.He Made Me Look At Him And He Kissed Me Again Slowly,I Tried To Kiss Him Back But I Was Trembling.Something Liquid And Hot Streamed Down My Cookie,Lutho Stopped Kissing Me I Guess He Felt It Too

Lutho: Please Don't Look Down

I Started Being Scared

Lutho: Please

He Slowly Tried To Pull Out

Me: Aaaaahhhhh!

Lutho: Shhh Sorry

He Finally Did Then He Hugged Me And Held Me Closely

Lutho: I'm Sorry Okay?!

I Just Looked At Him Blankly,He Just Held Me Close And Didn't Let Go.I Just Held Him Too

Lutho: I'm Sorry For Hurting You,I Shouldn't Have Do-

I Just Smashed My Lips On His While Tears Flowed Down My Cheeks,My Cookie Was On Fire.Lutho Kissed Me Back And Pulled Away.He Wiped Away My Tears Then Planted A Soft,Wet Peck On My Forehead

Lutho: Let's Go And Take A Bath

I Just Nodded And Got Up,A Puddle Of My Blood Was On His Lap.I Stood There With My Mouth Wide Open

Lutho: Sorry

I Just Started Crying All Over Again

Lutho: Hey Look You Gonna Be Okay,Let's Bath Then I'll Take You To A Doctor

He Took A Towel That Was In The Room And Wiped The Blood While I Saw Small Dots Of Blood On The Floor,Where I Was Standing.

Lutho Got Closer And Hugged Me

Lutho: I'm So Sorry Bbe

I Just Looked At Him Blankly,He Held Me So Close While I Sobbed On His Chest.I Finally Stopped Then Lutho Made Me Look At Him

Lutho: You Okay?

I Just Shrugged My Shoulders

Lutho: Lemme Go And Run Us A Bath

I Nodded,Lutho Took The Towel And Walked To The Bathroom.I Just Stood There And Watched As Drops Of My Blood Dripped To The Floor,Lutho Finally Came Back

Lutho: Your Water Is Ready

Me: Thanks

I Walked To The Bathroom And Left Lutho
Takin' Care Of The Mess I Made.

I Got Inside The Tub,Sat Down And Just Played
With The Water.Lutho Got In Then Sat Beside
The Tub,He Put His Hand In The Water And
Held Mine

Lutho: How You Feeling Now?

Me: It Still Hurts

Lutho: Get Cleaned Up Then I'll Drive You To
The Doctor

Me: I'm Sure I'll Be Fine

Lutho: We Can't Take Chances

Me: Maybe It's Just That It's Too Early Coz I
Just Gave Birth

Lutho: But We Should Be Sure

Me: You Can Take Me To The Doctor Tomorrow

Lutho: You Sure?

Me: Yeah

He Smashed His Lips On Mine

Lutho: I'll Take A Shower

Me: Sure

Lutho Got Up And Went To The Shower, I
Finished Bathing And The Bleeding
Stopped. Lutho And I Both Went To Lotion Then
Got Dressed. We Went To The Lounge And
Found Menzi And Ray Watching An X Rated
Movie

Me: My Poor Daughter

Menzi: She's Asleep

Lutho: But That Doesn't Give You The Right To Watch That Kinda Thing In Her Presence

Ray: You Two Just Did That "Thing" a Few Ago

We Just All Chuckled,I Took Imi And Took Her To Her Room.Lutho Also Had a Cottage And a Room For Her In His House Too.I Went To Bed,Drank Pain Killers And Slept Immediately.I Woke Up To Lutho Droppin' Something On The Floor

Lutho: You Awake

Me: You Woke Me Up

He Was Dressed In All Black

Me: Mission?

Lutho: Yeah Brandon

Me: Heard Anything Bout Him?

Lutho: Just Rumors

Me: Care To Share?

Lutho: I'll Tell You When I've Got My Facts
Straight

Me: Kay Then, Can I Help With The Loading?

Lutho: Haha Yeah Sure

He Threw His Gun To Me And The Bullets, I
Helped Him With The Loading Then Handed
Over His Gun To Him While He Finished Gettin'
Dressed.

Me: Come Back In One Piece Please

Lutho: Princess Still Needs Me Hey

Me: And I Still Do Too

He Sat On The Bed And Pecked My Lips

Lutho: How's The Pain?

Me: Better

Lutho: I'm Real-

Me: I Know

I Pecked His Lips Then He Got Up And Left. Princess Woke Up Then I Went To Attend Her. Lutho Came Back At 4 In The Morning, He Showered Then Got In Bed. I Laid My Head On His Chest And Just Felt And Heard It Beat

Me: So What Did You Find?

Lutho: Look Let's Just Talk Bout Us Now And Forget Bout Errthing Else

Me: What Bout Us?

Lutho: Where You Going To Study Next Year?

Uh-Oh! I Just Kept Quiet

Lutho: You Were Not Planning On Leaving Princess And I, Were You?

Me:.....

Lutho: I Guess I Should Drop That Topic

Me: I Wanted To Go Outta The City And Go To A New Place And Meet New People

Lutho: I See

I Could Hear The Sadness From His Voice

Me: Baby

Lutho: Uhm?

Me: Are You Mad At Me?

Lutho: Nhaa I Won't Stand In The Way Of Your Dreams Esihle

Me: Baby C'mon

Lutho: Sugar I'm Tired,I'd Like To Have My Sleep

At Least He Said Sugar OBJ:(He Kissed My Forehead Then Closed His Eyes.We Both Fell Asleep.The Following Day,We Both Woke Up And Freshened Up.I Made Breakfast For The Boys And I Then Lutho Drove Us To Town To Go To A Doctor.The Doctor Said I Bled Coz It Was Too Early To Have Sexual Intercourse After Natural Birth.

Lutho Said We Should Go And Look For Imi's Clothes After The Doctor.After The Clothes We Went To Grab Something To Eat

Lutho: Whoa

Me: What?

Lutho: Ain't That Your Brother's Girlfriend?

I Turned And Saw Inam Kissing a Guy

Me: Hold Here

I Handed Princess Over To Lutho







Lutho: My Gangster Queen

I Just Laughed And Walked To Their Table

Me: THE FUCK?? INAM!

OKO!    

[05/20, 14:45] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

I Know Some Of Y'all Wanna Kill Me And Stuff
Me Under Their Beds But I Still Love Y'all Even If
I'm The Worst Hated Person In Your Books Ayt
Now      

#S2

#INSERT74  

Oko: Lil Sis

Me:.....

In am Couldn't Look At Me, Her Eyes Were

Everywhere Except At Me

Me: Really Inam? REALLY?

Inam: Look I Can Explain

Oko: Is There Something I'm Missing Guys?

Me: This Girl You Just Kissed With Is My-

Lutho: Hey Guys Bye Guys....Let's Go Sugar
(Pullin' Me By My Arm)

Me: Leggo Of Me Lutho

Lutho: I Have To Go Somewhere

Me: I'll Take a Taxi

Lutho: Sugar Let's Go

Oko: So Is This My Brother In Law?

Me: He-

Lutho: Yeah....Nice To Finally Meet You Man

Oko: Same Here

They Shook Hands

Lutho: Let's Go Now Bbe

I Was Boiling And Lutho Could See Right
Through Me, Inam Kept Quiet And She Was
Shaking

Me: YOU! (Pointin' At Inam) Better Tell Vusi
Errthing Before I-

Lutho: Sugar!

Me: Nx!

Lutho Gave Me A Dirty Stare And We Walked
Away

Me: What?

Lutho: You Such A Drama Queen

Me: Really? What Would You Do If You'd See Ray's Girlfriend Smoochin' With Another Guy?

Lutho: OBJ:v Take A Picture And Tease Ray With It

Me: You Crazy

Lutho: You Almost Made A Scene

Me: Inam Needed One

Lutho: Not In Front Of My Daughter Though

I Just Smiled And Looked At Him

Lutho: I Don't Want Princess To Be Crazy Like You

Me: Am I That Crazy?

Lutho: Trust Me You're

Me: Yeah Ayt

Lutho Already Settled The Bill So We Walked To His Car Then He Drove Us To My House

Me: Bbe?

Lutho: Sugar

Me: I've Been Thinkin'

Lutho: Bout?

Me: You Said Brandon Helped You Witcho Three Recent Heists Ayt? So What If He's The One Who Reported The Three Heists To The-

Lutho: I Told The Guys But Siya And Thabang Don't Wanna Believe Me, They Were Good Friends With Him

Me: Ohh And Anga?

Lutho: He's Just In Between

Me: So Whatchu Gonna Do?

Lutho: I Guess I Gotta Find Something To Convince Them

Me: And That Is?

Lutho: I Dunno Yet,I'm Still Thinkin'

Me: And The Rumors?

Lutho: Someone Told Me That He Saw Brandon With Aviwe

Me: Wow

Lutho: Yeah

Me: What Bout Bullet?

Lutho: I Can't Rely On a Junkie,That Nikka Is So Useless

Me: I'm Sorry Bbe

Lutho: Don't Worry I'll Get Through This

Me: Wish I Could Help

Lutho: You Takin' Care Of Our Daughter Is The

Only Help I Need From You

Me: [OBJ]:)

Lutho: You Smilin'

I Just Giggled Like A Lil Girl

I Loved Lutho With My All,I Had No Doubt,He Was The Only Guy I Wanted To Be With.

We Got To My House Then Lutho Helped Me With Imi's Bags While I Carried Her To The House Coz She Was Asleep.We Found Vusi And The Twins Watching T.V

Me: Babies

Vusi: Hey Yous

Twins: Hello Lovebirds

Lutho: [OBJ]:) Lovebirds? I Love That

Me: Where Em Parents At?

Vusi: Dad Had To Go Back To Work,Mom Went Out With Aunt Amish

Me: Lemme Go And Put This Mouse To Sleep

Lutho: I Guess I'll See You Guys Later

Me: Kay Then.Imi Say Bye Daddy

Lutho: Bye My Cute Lil Princess

He Kissed Her Tiny Cute Lips And Forehead
Then Pecked My Lips

Twins: Ahem!

Vusi: Get A Room!

Lutho Chuckled Then Said Goodbye To Them
Then Left.I Went To Put Imi To Sleep Then
Went To Prepare Something For Lunch In The
Kitchen,Vusi Got In And Took An Apple Outta
The Fridge

Me: When Last Did You Chat Witcho Girlfriend?

Vusi: Last Night Why?

Me: So She Hasn't Called Or Texted You?

Vusi: Was She Supposed To?

Me: Uhhm Nhaa

Vusi: Is There Something You Not Tellin' Me?

Me: Nhaa

Vusi: You Know You Can't Lie To Me Ayt?

Me:.....

I Was Caught Between Tellin' Vusi The Truth Or
Lettin' Errthing Slide

Vusi: Esihle?

Me: Uhm?

Vusi: Wassup?

Me: I Dunno Whether To Tell You This Or Not

Vusi: Just Tell Me Already

Me: Here Goes Nothing.....I Saw Inam Kissing
With Oko This Afternoon

He Kept Quiet For A While And Took a Big Bite
On His Apple

Me: Please Say Something

Vusi: Wow

Me: Promise Me You Won't Do Anything Stupid

Vusi: I'll Be Back

Me: Don't Hurt Any Of Them Please

He Just Gave Me A Quick Stare Then Took
Lunges Outta The Room.I Exhaled And Went

Back To My Pots.Asithandle And Ithandle
Joined Me And We Talked Bout Anything And
Errthing Till I Finished Cookin' And Dish Up For
Us.

I Went To My Room And Fed Princess,She
Didn't Sleep,She Just Sucked On Her Hands And
Kept Lookin' At Me.She Was So Tiny,Cute And
Beautiful.She Had Lutho's Eyes,My Baby Was
Truly A Blessing To Me.I Fell Asleep While
Admiring My Work With Lutho.I Woke Up To
Someone Knockin',Princess Was Asleep.I Got
Off The Bed And Went To Open Up,It Was Vusi
He Looked Awful.I Pulled Him In For A Hug

Me: I'm Sorry

Vusi: Am I Too Young Or Too Immature For Her?
I Tried To Change For Her,I Tried To Show Her
How Much She Means To Me

Me: You're Perfectly Fine,There's Nothing You
Didn't Do To Show Her All Your Love

He Broke The Hug,There Were Crystals In His
Eyes,He Was Tryin' To Be Strong But I Could
See He Was Hurt

Me: It's Okay To Let It All Out You Know

Vusi: Fuck Inam! I'm Done With This Loyalty Shit!

Me: You Don't Mean That

Vusi: Trust Me I Do

Me: So How Are Things Between You Two?

Vusi: I'm Done With Her.DONE!

Me: I'm Really Sorry

Vusi: I'm Fine.Where's My Food?

Me: In The Warmer

Vusi: Sure

He Walked Out,I Heard Mom's Footsteps Up

The Stairs Then He Knocked On My Door

Me: Come In

She Got In

Mom: Wassup Witcho Brother?

Me: It's a Long Story

Mom: So How's Princess?

Me: She's Okay

Mom: And Luu's Mom?

Me: Still The Same

Mom: I Hate That Woman

Me: I Know

Mom: You Should Get Ready,Lutho's Takin' You
Out For Dinner Tonight?

Me: Really?

Mom: Yeah Go And Get Ready Before I Change My Mind,I'll Take Care Of Imi

Me: I Wonder What's So Special Bout It

Mom: Just Go Already

I Went To Take A Quick Shower Then When I Went Out To My Room,Mom Already Had My Costume Out.I Got Dressed And She Did My Make Up.

I Went Downstairs And Found Lutho With Dad.Lutho Got Up And Looked At Me

Lutho: You Look Beautiful

Me: Thanks

Dad: Dare Break Her Heart Ever Again,I'll Kill You With My Own Bare Hands Boy

Lutho: I'm Sure It'll Never Get To That.....Let's

Go Bbe

We Got To His Car Then He Drove Us To This Restaurant, No One Was Inside Besides A Table For Two With Candles And Flowers.

Me: Bbe Is This All For Me?

Lutho: May I? (Handin' His Hand To Me)

He Took My Hand And Accompanied Me To The Table. He Opened The Chair For Me Then We Sat Down

Lutho: You Really Look Beautiful Tonight

Me: You Don't Look Bad Either

Lutho: I Don't Even Know Where To Start, Esihle Thank You For Carrying And Giving Birth To My Child. You Gave The Most Beautiful And

Priceless Gift.I'll Forever Be Grateful For That,I
May Not Be The Perfect Boyfriend You Need
But I Promise You This One Thing,I'll Love You
Till I Got No Energy Left In Me To Love You
Anymore

He Got Down On One Knee

"HELL NO!" [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

Lutho: Esihle Morena Will You Please Make Me
The Happiest Man On Earth And Marry Me?

DON'T BITE MY HEAD OFF

PLEASE [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

[05/20, 14:46] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT75 ♡ ↓

I Just Stood There In Awe,Lutho Looked At Me
And Smiled.My Hands Just Rushed To My
Mouth

Me: Uhhhmm I- Wow

Lutho:.....

I Didn't Know What To Say,Tears Just Did All
The Talkin'.Lutho Got Up And Wiped My Tears
With His Thumbs,Now a River Was Flowing
Down My Cheeks

Lutho: I Love You Miss Morena And I Want To
Make You The Mother Of All My 20 Kids

Me: 20?? [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

Lutho: Finally She Smiles

I Exhaled,Lutho Looked At Me With Curious
Eyes

Me: I'm Still 17 Lutho

Lutho: I Know

Me: Don't You Think We're Still Young To Be
Takin' This Huge Step?

Lutho: Esihle I Love You And Only You.Like I
Told You Before,I Want Princess To Grow Up In
a Warm,Healthy Environment With Both Of Her
Parents 'round

Me: But Marriage Lutho?

Lutho: Esihle Don't You Love Me?

Me: Lutho You Know I Love You And There's
Nothing I Want More Than Living All My Life
Witchu And Princess

Lutho: Then What's Your Problem?

I Just Kept Quiet And Looked At Him.

Me: Can You Give Me Some Time To Think Bout This?

Lutho:.....

Me: Please?

Lutho: Okay Fine I Give You This One Week

Me: Thanks Bbe

I Pecked His Lips,He Pulled Me In For A Deeper Kiss.

Lutho: I'm Starving,We Should Eat

Three Waiters Came With Plates And Put Them

In Front Of Us,Lutho Jumped For His

Me: No Grace?

Lutho: Lady I'm Starvin'

We Both Chuckled,He Said Grace And Then We Started Diggin' In.The Dessert Came And It Was On Point,After Eating Lutho Took Me By My Hand And Took The Stairs Up To The Roof.We Went To The Edge And We Could View The Ocean From The Top,It Was So Beautiful.The Breeze Was Outta This World.The Sky Was So Clear And Beautiful With Stars And A Full Moon

Me: This Is So Beautiful Bbe

Lutho: But Doesn't Compare At Any Level To The Mother Of My Princess

Me:

Lutho: I Wanna Wake Up To This Pretty Face
Errday Even If It's Mad At My Ass

Me: Babe You Gonna Make Me Cry

Lutho: Esihle I Love You

Me: I Love You Too Mr Zizwe

He Pulled Me In For A Kiss,A Deep One At
That.He Broke The Kiss,Put His Chin On My
Shoulder Then I Felt Him Unzippin' My Dress
From The Back

Me: Lutho?

Lutho: Uhhm?

Me: Whatchu Doing?

Lutho: Let's Go For A Swim

A Shootin' Star Passed By

Lutho: I Wish To Live All My Life With This
Beautiful Lady And Make Her Happy Errday

Me: You Serious?

Lutho: I Grew Up With People Makin' Wishes
When They See A Shootin' Star

Me: And How Exactly Will A Comet Grant You
Wishes?

He Just Chuckled And Shrugged His Shoulders

Lutho: Let's Go For The Swim

Me: The Tide Is High At Night Bbe

Lutho: We Won't Go Too Far

Me: And Plus The Water Is Cold

Lutho: You Gonna Get Your Butt In That Water

Me: Do I Have A Choice?

Lutho: Nope

I Chuckled And Took His Hand,We Went Down The Stairs And Walked To The Beach. There Were Few People 'round,Some Just Walkin' On The Sand,Some Just Watching The Waves. The Waves Were Big So Lutho Said Let's Just Sit Down And Watch Them.

Me: Who Would Dare Swim In These Kinda Waves Yho

Lutho Took My Hand And Put It In His,He First Kissed It Then Played With It

Lutho: With Aviwe 'round,We'll Have To Spend Less Time Together.I Don't Want Him To Get To You Or Imi,He Might Use You To Get To Me

Me:.....

Lutho: You Might See Me Once In a Week

Me: WHAT??

Lutho: I'll Call You

Me: That's Not Good Enough Lutho

Lutho: I'm Sorry Babe But We Got No Other Choice

Me: I Hate This Aviwe Guy

Lutho: Not More Than I Do

Me: So Have You Told Menzi And Ray Bout Brandon?

Lutho: Yeah

Me: And?

Lutho: They Believed Me

Me: At Least You Got People On Your Side...Let's Just Hope Brandon Won't Play The Others While They Are Still Takin' His Side

Lutho: I'm Sure He Will

Me: I Hope Siya And Thabang Believe You
Before He Plays Them

Lutho: I Hope So Too Coz I'd Be Doomed

I Could See His Face Turning Blur, My Babe Was
Really Stressed Out. I Rubbed His Back, He
Looked At Me And Smiled

Me: Errthing Will Be Fine Bbe

Lutho: I Hope So

I Pecked His Lips And Got Up Then Went To
Stand Closer To The Water, It Came Over My
Feet, Cold As Ice. I Jumped And Attempted To
Run But Lutho Was Standing Firm Behind
Me, He Pushed Me Back And The Water
Splashed On Both Of Us.

Me: LUTHO!!

He Laughed And Ran Away From Me

Me: I'm So Gonna Kill You!

Lutho: And Be Ready To Answer Thousand Questions From Imi

Me: Mxm

He Smiled And Walked Toward Me,He Held My Hands And Pulled Me In For A Kiss,I Tripped And Pushed Him Into The Water,He Fell On His Butt And Err Part Of His Pants And Half Of The Jacket Got Wet.I Laughed And Ran Away From Him

Lutho: I Hope You Know You Have To Pay For

This

Me: [OBJ] [OBJ]

Lutho: Someone's So Gonna Make Love To Me
When She's Okay Down There

Me: Keep On Dreamin'

Lutho: We Should Get Going,I'm Sure Princess
Misses Her Mom Now

He Held His Hand Out To Me,I Got Closer To
Him And Held It.He Picked Me Up And Ran Into
The Water With Me,I Tried To Fight Him But He
Was Way Too Stronger Than Me

Me: LUTHO!

I Screamed And Kicked But He Didn't Let Go Of
Me,He Finally Loosened His Grip.

Me: Dude Do You Wanna Kill Me?

He Laughed And Ran Outta The Water, We Walked To His Car, He Opened His Boot And Took Out Two Towels Then Gave One To Me. He Unzipped My Dress And Helped Me Take It Off, He Changed To a Sleeveless T-shirt With Shorts Then Drove Us To His House. Ray And Menzi Were Not 'round, They Left a Note Sayin' They At Anga's Place. Lutho Took Our Wet Clothes And Put Them In The Washing Machine Then We Went To His Room And Took a Shower Together Then Got In Bed. Lutho Put My Head On His Chest And Played With My Hair

Me: Baby?

Lutho: My Love?

Me: Bout Me Movin' Outta The City Next Year, I-

I Could Feel His Heart Beat Rate Increasing

Me: Uhhm I Was Serious

Lutho: Oh

I Lifted My Head Up And Looked At Him,There Was So Much Seriousness On His Face,Not Even a Crack Of a Smile

Lutho: Is This The Reason You Have To Think Bout My Proposal?

Me:.....

Lutho: Right

Me: Bbe Please Don't Be Like That,Can We Talk Bout This?

Lutho: I Have An Early Meeting Tomorrow,Goodnight Sugar.

He Placed a Peck On My Forehead And Closed His Eyes.

"O-W-K-Y"

I Also Tried To Drift Away To Sleep But I Couldn't But Finally Did And Lutho Was Fast Asleep When I Did.I Woke Up The Following Day Alone In Bed,With The Ring Lutho Proposed With On Lutho's Pillow.I Took It And Put It On My Finger,It Fitted Perfectly.I Took It Off And Put It On His Dresser,There Was a Sweatpant And T-shirt On The Dresser.I Went To Take a Bath Then Wore The Clothes Taken Out For Me.I Put The Ring In The Sweatpants' Pockets Then Went Downstairs.I Found Lutho Dressed In a Suit,Makin' Breakfast

Me: Good Morning

Lutho: Yeah

"OHH SO WE WERE STILL IN THAT PREVIOUS NIGHT MOOD"

Just Then Menzi Walked Down The Stairs With Ray

Ray: Morning You Two, So Soon To Be Mrs Zizwe, Can We See The Ring?

Lutho Looked At My Left Hand, Then At Me And Went Back To His Pan

Menzi: Are We Missing Something Out Guys? Bro?

Lutho Just Looked At Him Then Back At What He Was Doing.

Ray: Guys Where's The Ring?

Lutho: Breakfast Is Ready,I Won't Join You I Have An Early Meeting.Ray Please Drive Esihle To Her House.

With That Said,He Took His Car Keys And Briefcase Then Went For The Door.Menzi And Ray Looked At Me

Lutho: Whatchu Doing Here?

Voice: I Hear That You've Been Lookin' All Over For Me,Here I Am In a Platter.That Must Be The Future Mrs Zizwe,You Good Witcho Choices Bro.

The Guy Walked Toward Me,His Body Build He Was Hot In Shorts And a Faded Sleeveless T-shirt.

He Took My Hand And Kissed It

Guy: I'm Brandon,I'm Sure You Must've Heard a
Thing Or Two Bout Me.So Who's This
Lovely,Beautiful Lady?

THE FUCK??

[05/20, 14:47] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love,Friendship And Death 2

Can You Please Bring Back My Likes
PLEASE!?

#S2

#INSERT76 ♡ ↓

O-W-K-Y The Guy Was Outta This World....Lutho
Cleared His Throat And Brandon Released My
Hand

Lutho: I'm Sorry I'm In a Hurry,I Can't Talk Now

Brandon: I Have All The Time In The World

Lutho Held The Door And Looked At Brandon

Brandon: Luu Bro Relax,I Ain't In a Hurry Like
You,I'll Have Breakfast First And Then Leave.

I Could See Luu's Jaws Tightening

Brandon: So How's The Hangover Hommies? It
Was Lit Last Night

Lutho: Last Night?

Brandon: Yeah Was Throwin' a Party,Invited Your Boys And It Went Down.It's A Pity That You Weren't There....But Then Again,You Were Witcho Woman,I'd Also Turn Down Any Party For Her

Brandon Was Just Provokin' Lutho,Lutho Knew He Was But He Was Just Too Angry Bout Errthing Not To Care Bout What Brandon Was Sayin'.

Lutho Gave Both Menzi And Ray Death Stares

Ray: I Wouldn't Say No To Free Booze And Hoes

Menzi: Same Here

Brandon: O-kay...So What' We Havin' For Breakfast?

Lutho Went Out And Banged The Door,We All

Turned And Looked At The Spot He Stood On

Brandon: So Much Drama Early In The Morning, Did You Deny Him His Morning Quickie?

I Just Chuckled And Sat Down, Menzi And Ray Laughed

Brandon: Seems That Way To Me

Ray: I Bet She Did

Me: Please Let's Just Eat And Keep Quiet

The Boys Sat Down Too

Brandon: So Whatchu Do For A Living?

Menzi And Ray Snort Laughed

Me: I'm A 12 Grader....Funny You Can Go Ahead
And Laugh Too

Brandon: Sarcastic

Me:.....

Brandon: That Means This Zizwe Boy Is Hitting
Fresh Stuff

Me: That's Makin Me Look Like Some Cheap
Object

Brandon: Sorry

Me:.....

We Dished Up For Ourselves And Dug In

Brandon: Uhhm I Didn't Get Your Name?

Me: Esihle

Brandon: And You're Really Beautiful

Me: Thanks

Brandon: So Now That You And Lutho Joined Ties Again Menzi,How's The Gang?

I Saw Menzi's Face,He Was Playin' Brandon Too As Much As He Was Tryna Play Them

Menzi: You Know How It Goes,You Don't Get Trusted That Easily.We Still Havin' Some Hiccups But I'm Sure We'll Get Past Them So How's Your Team?

Brandon: We're Good,I Hear That The Police Got Some Information Bout The Recent Heists

Ray: I Wonder How

Menzi: Yeah But That's All Sorted Now

Brandon: Let's Really Hope It Is Coz Some Detectives Can't Leggo Of Cases Like This One

Me: Why You So Concerned Bout This Case?

Ray And Menzi Were Observing Every
Expression Brandon Made

Brandon: I Lent Them Some Of My Guys So If
They Go Down,My Boys Go Down As Well

Me: I See

Brandon: I Heard That You And Lutho Have A
Baby Girl

Me: Yeah

Brandon: I'm Sure My Boy's Happy,He Always
Wanted a Child But Couldn't Get The Right Bitch
To Have It With

Me: I Guess I'm The Lucky Bitch Then

Brandon: Nhaa He's The Luckiest In This Case

Me: Mhm

We Finished Eating Then Brandon Left,I Washed The Dishes While Menzi And Ray Played T.V Games.They Both Got In,Stood Few Feet Away From Me And Folded Their Arms On Their Chests

Me: What?

Ray: Okay Lutho Was Over The Moon Yesterday Tellin' Us How He's Life's Gonna Change From Worst To Best But Today It's A Whole Different Thing,What Went Down?

Me: Nothing

Menzi: You Were Supposed To Have Some Glittering Diamond On Your Finger But Dolol

Me:.....

Ray: Care To Explain?

Me: Uhhhm (Exhales) Uhhm I I Didn't Accept His Proposal

Menzi & Ray: WHAT??! WHY??

Me: It's Complicated

Ray: He Loves You, You Love Him, What's Complicated There?

Me: I Don't Wanna Study Here Next Year

Menzi: Whoa

Ray: Yho

Me: Yeah

Menzi: No Wonder Bro's Up In Arms

Me: Yeah

Menzi Got Closer And Hugged Me, He Wiped Few Tears That Had Escaped My Eyes

Menzi: I'm Sure You'll Work This Out Like You Always Do

Ray: And That Would Add Fuel To The Fire Too

Menzi Broke The Hug And We Looked At Ray
Who Was Pointing At Us

Menzi: It Was Just A Hug Bro

Ray: With Lutho's Boilin' Up Anger I'm Sure It
Wouldn't

We All Just Laughed, Ray Drove Me Home. I
Found Vusi Watching T.V With Princess Sleepin'
On His Lap

Me: Morning Lovies

Vusi: So Where's Diamond?

I Just Looked At Him, His Eyes Ran To My Left

Hand

Vusi: Don't Tell Me You Turned Down His Proposal

Me:

Vusi: Ouch!

Me: How Long Has She Been Asleep?

Vusi: Is Errthing Okay?

Me: Jeah I'm Fine

Vusi: You Sure?

Me: Jeah Where Are The Twins?

Vusi: They Went To Sis Amish's House

Me: And Sis Lulama?

Vusi: She's Cleaning Princess's Room

I Sat Down Next To Him And Placed My Head On His Shoulder

Vusi: Did You Fight?

Me: Yeah

Vusi: Why Did You Turn Down His Proposal?

Me: Because Vusi We Won't Work,I'm Going Outta Town In Few Months

Vusi: Ohh That

Me: Yeah That

Vusi: But He Could Move His Business To Where Ever You Going

Me: His Friends Are Here So Is His Family

Vusi: I Guess You Right,That Would Be Impossible

Me: I Guess This Is The End Of Us

Vusi: Don't Say That

Me: It's True Vusi

Vusi: Enough Bout That,Oko Called Me

Me: He Did What?

Vusi: He Wanna Meet Up With Me

Me: And?

Vusi: I Wanna Hear What He Has To Say

👑 ♡ LUU'S POV ♡ 👑

Just Imagine The One Person You Wanna Live
Your Life With, The One Person You Wanna Build
Your Life With Destroying All Your Dreams
Which Kept You Going And On Top Of Errthing
Brandon Decides To Show Up On My Doorstep
Acting Like He Didn't Fuck Me From Behind.

Someone Knocked On My Door

Me: Come In

Ray Got In

Me: After Partying With The Enemy You Have
The Nerve To Come In Here And Double Ruin
My Day

Ray: Stop Being An Ass And Cheer Up a
Lil,You're a Nikka Not a Bitch

Me: So You Know?

Ray: Yeah Esihle Told Us

Me: She Knows How Much I Love Her,She
Knows I Wanna Build a Family With Her

Ray: She's Still Young,She Wanna Explore

Me: We Already Have a Kid Together Dude

Ray: Don't You Think She Knows That?

Me:.....

Ray: Give Her Some Time,Maybe She'll Change
Her Mind

Me: I Hope So,I Can't Have Another Bitch
Raising Princess Or Some Ass Nikka Called Dad
By My Daughter

Ray: Haha I Can Imagine

Spending Time With Ray Was a Bit
Relieving.After Work I Went To Checkup On
Princess,Her Grandparents Weren't 'round So It
Was Just Her,Her Mom And Her Uncle

Me: Evening

Vusi: Hey Bro

We Fist Bumped

Me: Hello Sugar

There Was A Lil Hope In Me That She Changed
Her Mind But The Minute I Saw Her Finger
Clean,That Hope Vanished

Esihle: Hey

Me: Where's Imi?

Esihle: In Her Room

I Walked Up To My Princess's Room,At Least
She Was Gonna Make Daddy Smile.I Found Her
Awake And Quiet Just Suckin' On Her Hands.I
Picked Her Up And She Smiled Not That She
Knew Who I Was

Voice: We Need To Talk

Esihle Said That While Lockin' The Door

Esihle: I Think We Need Some Time Apart

Me: You Need That Time Not Me

Esihle: I Need A Break Lutho To Think Things Through

Princess Started Crying

[05/20, 14:48] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

#S2

#INSERT77 ♡ ↓

👑 LUTHO'S POV 👑

I Held Princess Closer To My Chest And Tried To Shush Her

Esihle: Give Her To Me

Me: I Can Take Care Of My Daughter Like I Will
When You'll Be Outta Town

She Looked At Me With Sad Eyes, Princess
Finally Calmed Down

Esihle: Lutho Can You Just Try To Understand?

Me: Understand What? That You Wanna Leave
Me And Princess To Go And Start a New Life
Without Us. Don't Worry I Get That

Esihle: Lutho Please That's Not What I Wann-

Me: Wanna Do? Nhaa It's Exactly Whatchu
Wanna Do Esihle

Esihle: LUTHO I'M STILL YOUNG TO GET
MARRIED!

Me: Lower Your Voice You Gonna Scare

Princess

She Exhaled, Her Eyes Were Teary

Me: I Didn't Ask You To Marry Me Today Or Tomorrow, We Could Take Time Before Getting Married But I See You Got Other Plans

Princess Fell Asleep, I Put Her In Her Court Then Looked At Esihle Who Was Now Crying

Me: I Have To Go

Esihle: Bbe Can We Talk Bout This?

Me: Esihle You Already Made Up Your Mind, Didn't You?

Esihle:.....

Me: I'm Out

When I Walked To The Door,She Grabbed Me By My Arm.I Just Stood There Not Turning To Face Her

Esihle: So Is This The End Of Us?

Me: Is It?

Esihle: Lutho We Can't Break Up Over This Lil Stupid Thing

I Turned Abruptly To Face Her

Me: Stupid? Did You Just Say Stupid Esihle?

Esihle:.....

The Door Opened,Her Mother Got In

Mrs Morena: Next Time You Have An Argument
Find A Room And Not Do It In Front Of A
Baby.Hello Lutho

Me: Sorry Mrs Morena....How Are You Ma?

Mrs Morena: I'm Good,How Are You?

Me: I'm Good Too.I Was Just On My Way
Out,Just Came To Check Up On Princess

Mrs Morena: Good To Hear That The Mouse Is
Loved That Much

Me: C'mon Ma She's Not Really That
Small,Is She?

Mrs Morena: No Normal Child Is That Little But
Don't Worry She'll Grow Up And Be Strong Like
Her Grandma

Me: Good To Hear That,I Must Dash

Mrs Morena: I'm Happy That You Pass By Every
Time You Get To See Princess

Me: She's My Princess I Have To

I Said My Goodbye To Mrs Morena And Left Her
With Her Quiet,Sobbin' Daughter.I Met Mr
Morena In The Lounge

Me: Evening Sir

Mr Morena: Zizwe,How's The Mouse Up There?

Me: She's Okay And She Seems To Be Growin'
Up Errday

Mr Morena: She's Gonna Be Strong Like
Grandpa Soon

Me: I Hope She Won't She Kickin' Butts Like
Grandpa And Daddy

Mr Morena: She Would Be One Hella Butt Buster

Me: Let's Hope It Won't Get To That,I Have To
Get Home Before Ray And Menzi Turn My
House Into a Stripper Club

Mr Morena: Better Hurry

I Walked To My Car And Drove Home,I Found
The Boys Watching A Movie.

Menzi: You Look Like A Big Truck Ran Over You

Me: Maybe It Did

Ray: Talked With Esihle?

Me: Kinda

I Took Off My Jacket And Shoes Then Threw
Myself On An Empty Couch

Menzi: This Is Really Screwing You Up

Me: Even An Idiot Can See That

Ray: Let's Go And Grab Some Drinks

Me: I'm So Not In The Mood For That Right Now

Menzi: C'mon Dude,You Need To Cheer Up

Me: Fine,Just Few Drinks Then We Head Back Home

Ray: Deal

I Went To My Room And Changed Then We Hit The Road

♡ ESIHLE'S POV ♡

After Lutho Left,I Just Went To My Room And Cried Myself To Sleep.I Didn't Want To Lose Luu,I Couldn't Lose Him.Him And Imi Were My All,I Had To Save Our Relationship But I Just Didn't Know Where To Start.Mom Got In

Mom: What Went Down?

Me: I I I Declined His Proposal

Mom Looked At Me Then Came To Sit Next To Me On The Bed

Mom: Don't You Love Him?

Me: Mom I Do OBJ

Mom: Then What's Your Problem?

Me: I'm Just Scared, Mom I'm Still A Teen To Be Engaged To Some Guy Who Is Already Successful In Life In His 20s

Mom Chuckled And I Looked At Her

Mom: Is That Your Only Problem?

Me: Uhhhm I Wanna Study Outta Town Next Year

Mom:.....

Me: Now That's The Problem

Mom: You Make Sacrifices For Someone You Love You Know?

Me: But Dad Didn't Make Those Sacrifices

Mom: Musa Had No Choice, You Have A Choice. You And Lutho Have A Kid Together And You Know Lutho Loves You So Much

Me: Then If He Loves Me, He'll Wait For Me

Mom: You Serious? Lutho Is A Guy, He Got Needs

Me:.....

Mom: I Won't Tell You What To Do But Make Sure You Make A Decision You Won't Regret Later On

👑 LUTHO'S POV 👑

We Arrived At The Club And It Was Already Packed, We Went Over The Bar And Got Our

Drinks And Just Looked 'round.I Saw Brandon
Comin' Our Way With Four Ladies

Brandon: Evening Gentlemen,Ladies You Can
Choose Whoever

Ray: And Y'all Ladies Arrived Just In Time,I'll
Take This One

Ray Took The Chick By Her Hand,Menzi Took
Another One And There Was Only One Left Coz
Brandon Had The Fourth One To Himself

Me: I Guess This One's For Me

The Girl Was Just Quiet And Her Smile Was
Warm So I Couldn't Embarrass Her By Lettin'
Her Stand Alone.I Held Her Hand And Her Smile
Grew Wider

Me: I'm Lutho But You Can Call Me Luu

Girl: I'm Melisa But You Can Call Me Melz

Me: Nice Name Melisa, You Don't Seem Like A
Partying Type

Melz: Yeah I Don't Really Do Partying But My
Friends This Time Gave Me No Choice

Me: I See

Melz: Mind If We Take a Walk 'round The
Neighbourhood, It's Said That It's Safe

Brandon Came Our Way

Brandon: We Still Have Something To Talk Bout
Remember?

Me: Sure, I'll Be Ayt Back Melz

Thabang,Anga And Siya Got In.We Went To Sit
On A Table

Brandon: So Wassup Nikka?

Me: I'm Sure Your Hommies (Pointing At Siya
And Thabang) Already Told You Wassup,Now
My Question To You Is,Did You Join Ties With
Awiwe?

Brandon: Dude I Hope You Know Whatchu
Accusing Me Of Is Big

I Leaned Back On My Chair To Have a Better
View Of Him

Me: Ohh Is It Just An Accusation??

Q: Do You Think Brandon Joined Ties With
Awiwe?

[05/20, 14:49] Ron: THUG LIFE:
Love, Friendship And Death 2

SEASON FINALE

#S2

#INSERT78 ♡ ↓

Months Later

👑 LUTHO'S POV 👑

Like Any Other Guy I Had To Move On And Find
Another Ass To Tap Not That Esihle Was Just
An Ass To Tap, No She Was The Girl I Wanted
To Spend My Days On Earth With But Obviously

She Had Other Plans For Herself So I Had To Peacefully Let Her Go Even Though It Was Hard Being In The Same Room With Her.

I Would Go And See Princess And She Would Be There So Just Imagine How Awkward It Was Anyway We Had An Agreement That We Will Raise Our Beautiful Princess Without Complications Of Our Separate Relationships Not That I Knew She Was In One.

Remember Melz? Yeah We Started Datin' And She Was A Nice Girl To Hang Out With And Have 'round Even Though Menzi And Ray Still Wanted Esihle And I To Fix Things And Didn't Really Like Melz But They Acted Fine 'round Her.

They Would Go Out Some Time With Esihle Or Invite Her Over For Dinner And Ask Her To Sleep Over GREAT!

She Would Sleep In a Guestroom And Leave The Next Day,I Always Made Sure That Melz Ain't 'round When She Is Even Though We

Weren't Datin' Anymore But I Believed That I Owed Her That Much Respect.

My Crew Broke Into Two, Thabang And Siya Took Brandon's Side While Ray And Menzi Took Mine, Anga Was Still In Between. I Made Sure That He Knew Nothing Bout Us As Much As Brandon Hid Things From Him Too. Some Other Guys Too Took Brandon's Side But We Never Had Fights Or Public Beef Since Brandon Wanted To Seem Like The Good Guy To Anga To Win Him Over.

So This Day Esihle Was Leaving For Varsity, She Passed And Got Enough Distinctions To Get Her A Bursary So She Was Really Leaving Me And Princess But I Knew How Much Our Daughter Meant To Her Even Though I Didn't Know Where I Stood.

We Both Planned To Go Out That Day With Imi And Spend Some Time With Her Before Her

Mother Leaves So I Woke Up And Went To Take
A Shower,Leavin' Melz Fast Asleep In My Bed.I
Wore Forn Faded Jeans With A Sleeveless T-
shirt,Went To Make Breakfast.

Ray Got In With a Towel 'round His Waist

Ray: Morning Bro

He Took a Bacon And Stuffed It Inside His
Mouth

Me: I Hope You Know My Girlfriend's 'round To
Only Have A Towel On

Ray: If She'd Fall For Your Twin Brother Then
She's A Thot

I Snort Laughed And Looked At Him

Me: When The Hell Will You Get It Into Your Thin Skull That Esihle And I Will Never Be Ever Again

Ray: Coz You Don't Want To, People Fix Their Issues You Know?

Me: We Fixed Em

Ray: But Not Fully

Me: Just Go And Get Dressed Before Melz Walks In Here

Ray: Fine I'm Going

Me: Where's Menzi?

Ray: Slept At One Of His Thotties' House

Me: Yeah Ayt

Ray Took a Slice Of A Tomato And Walked To His Room. I Took My Plate With Melissa's And Walked To My Room, She Was Still Asleep

Me: Wakey Wakey

She Moaned And Opened Her Eyes

Me: Morning You

Melz: Hey^{OBJ}

Me: Breakfast Is Ready

Melz: Ncaaaw Baby^{OBJ} That's So Sweet Of You

Me: Anything For My Girl

She Kissed My Cheek And Went To The
Bathroom Then Came Back And We Started
Eating

Me: Esihle And I Are Going To Spend Some
Time With Princess Before She Leaves

Melz:.....

Me: Say Something

Melz: WHAT DO YOU WANT ME TO SAY LUTHO?
HUH? THAT OKAY BABY GO AND HAVE FUN
WITH YOUR BABY MAMA WHO HAPPENS TO
BE YOUR BROTHERS' FAVORITE PERSON IN
THE WHOLE WORLD?

O-kay So Melz Finally Saw That Menzi And Ray
Liked Esihle A LOT!

Me: Baby C'mon

Melz: Anyway It's Not Like My Opinion
Matters, You Gonna Go Out With Her Anyway

Me: We're Doing This For Princess Melissa

Melz: Even When You End Up Fuckin' All Over
Again, You'll Be Doing That For Princess Too. I've
Seen Many People Getting Back With Their
Baby Mamas And Lea-

I Cut Her Short By Smashing My Lips On Hers,She Tried To Push Me Away But I Was Stronger Than Her So She Ended Up Giving In.I Took Her Plate And Mine And Put Them Aside,I Laid Her Slowly On The Bed And Rubbed Her Boobs.She Was Only In Her Lingerie Yummy! [OBJ] [OBJ]

She Let Out Soft Moans,I Slipped My Hand In Between Her Legs And Played With Her Honey Pot.She Widely Opened Her Legs And Let My Fingers Play Inside Her.Her Moans Were Becoming Louder,I Opened My Drawer And Took Out a Condom,She She Put It On Me And Y'all Know What Went Down.After That Sexercise I Got Ready To Go And Meet With The Most Beautiful And Hot Girls In My Life And Obviously Thats Princess And Her Mom.

I Still Loved Esihle,I Still Wanted Her In My Life,She Was Still The Girl Of My Dreams But

Melissa Was a Good Girl Who Seemed To Love Me,I Didn't Wanna Break Her Heart By Running After Someone (Esihle) Who Didn't Want a Future With Me.I Found Menzi And Ray In The Lounge,I Had To Drive Melz To Her House First So We Were Walkin' Out Together

Menzi: Going Out Lovebirds?

Ray: Weren't You And Esihle Takin' Imi Out?

Me: Yeah We Still Are

Ray And Esihle Were Thick As Thiefs So Patently Esihle Told Him That We Are Going Out

Ray: Ohh Say Hi For Me To Those Two Pretty Ladies

Me: I Will

I Could See Irritation All Over Melz's Face,I Took Her By Her Hand And We Walked Out.She Was Quiet All The Way To Her Dom,She Was a Varsity Student Doing Her Second Year In Nursing.I Parked In Front Of Her Res But Kept The Doors Locked

Melz: Can You Please Open The Doors?

Me: Wassup?

Melz: Lutho I Wanna Go

Me:.....

Melz: You Still Love Her Don't You?

Me: Esihle And I Are Over Melissa

Melz: I'll Never Replace Her,Would I?

Me: Melissa I'm Witchu Now Aren't I?

Melz: But Your Heart Is Still With Her

Me: You Know What? I'm Tired Of Your Accusations Ayt Now,I'm Witchu Melissa Now

Aren't I? What More Do You Want?

Melz:.....

Me: You Know What? I'm Done Here.I Have To Go And See My Daughter

Melz: I'm Sorry

Me: Whatever

Melz: Baby I'm Sorry

Me:.....

She Pulled Me Close And We Kissed

Melz: I'm Sorry

Me: Apology Accepted

Melz: If You Meet Up Witcho Mom,Say Hi For Me

Yeah Mom Knew Melissa,She Saw Her At My

Crib When She Barged In Unexpected And You Know What Happened,She Loved Melissa Coz She Wasn't Esihle.

Me: Sure Will

She Pecked My Lips And Got Out,I Drove Away When I Already Saw Her Getting Inside The Building.I Drove To Where Esihle Said They Were.She Had Her Own Car "Miss Independent".
I Found Her And Princess Already Seated

Me: I'm Sorry I'm Late,I Had Somewhere To Go To First

Princess Giggled And Jumped From Her Seat The Minute She Saw Me,Esihle Quickly Caught Her Before She Could Fall

Esihle: Someone Seems To Be So Happy To See Daddy

Me: Daddy's Princess

I Took Imi From Her Mom And Kissed Her All Over Her Face While She Giggled And Blushed. I Looked At Her Mom Who Was Smilin' From Ear To Ear

Me: Hey

Esihle: Hi OBJ

Me: By The Glow On Your Face You Good I See

Esihle: Yeah Yeah Princess Is Makin Me This Happy

We Made Our Order And Dug In, Later On We Went For Ice Cream And Finally Walked To The

Park Where We Just Lied On The Grass And
Played With Imi.

Later On I Walked Them To Esihle's Car

♡ ESIHLE'S POV ♡

My Heart Was Torn Into Pieces,I Was Going To
Miss My Babies.Only Ray Knew How I Was
Feeling,He Knew That I Still Loved Luu But I Had
To Go,I Was Going.

Lutho: PrincessAnd I Are Gonna Miss This

I Just Stood On My Toes And Kissed Him,He
Kissed Me Back

Imi Pulled Our Heads Apart,Lutho Placed A
Warm Peck On My Forehead

Lutho: Take Care Of Yourself Kay?

I Just Nodded [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] I Buckled Imi
At The Back Then Drove Home. The Twins
Helped Me Load My Bags, Vusi Had Already
Left. I Kissed My Baby One Last Time And Left